

social welfare  
residential care

1950–1994

VOLUME III  
A SELECTION OF BOYS' AND GIRLS' HOMES



# Table of Contents

Table of Contents .....	2
Outline .....	9
Owairaka Boys' Home.....	10
Physical description.....	10
Resident profile.....	11
Length of stay .....	15
Programmes and care .....	15
Work and training .....	20
Resident-to-resident issues .....	20
Health and medication .....	21
Psychiatric hospital placement .....	22
Staffing .....	22
Schooling .....	26
Absconding .....	28
Secure care .....	29
Discipline.....	34
Physical punishment .....	35
Drugs, alcohol and tattoos .....	36
Smoking .....	36
Contact with Field Social Workers.....	37
Contact with community.....	37
Visiting committee .....	38

Contact with families .....	38
Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements .....	39
Wesleydale Boys' Home .....	40
Physical description.....	40
Resident profile.....	42
Length of stay .....	45
Programmes and care .....	47
Work and training .....	49
Resident-to-resident issues .....	50
Health and medication .....	50
Psychiatric hospital placement .....	50
Staffing .....	50
Schooling .....	55
Absconding .....	57
Secure care .....	59
Discipline.....	59
Physical punishment.....	59
Drugs, alcohol, and tattoos .....	61
Smoking .....	61
Contact with field social workers.....	61
Contact with community.....	61
Visiting committees .....	62
Contact with families .....	63
Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements .....	63
Hamilton Boys' Home.....	65
Physical description.....	65
Resident profile.....	66

Length of stay .....	69
Programmes and care .....	69
Work and training .....	73
Resident-to-resident issues .....	74
Health and medication .....	75
Psychiatric hospital placement .....	75
Staffing .....	75
Schooling .....	80
Absconding .....	83
Secure care .....	84
Discipline.....	87
Physical punishment .....	87
Drugs, alcohol, and tattoos .....	87
Smoking .....	88
Contact with field social workers.....	88
Contact with community.....	88
Visiting committees .....	89
Contact with families .....	90
Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements .....	90
Epuni Boys' Home .....	92
Physical description.....	92
Resident profile.....	94
Length of stay .....	98
Programmes and care .....	98
Work and training .....	101
Resident-to-resident issues .....	102
Health and medication .....	103

Psychiatric hospital placement .....	104
Staffing .....	105
Schooling .....	111
Absconding .....	114
Secure care .....	115
Discipline.....	118
Physical punishment .....	119
Drugs, alcohol, and tattoos .....	120
Smoking.....	120
Contact with field social workers.....	121
Contact with community.....	121
Visiting committees .....	122
Contact with families .....	123
Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements .....	123
Christchurch Boys' Home.....	125
Physical description.....	125
Resident profile.....	126
Length of stay .....	130
Programmes and care .....	130
Work and training .....	132
Resident-to-resident issues .....	133
Health and medication .....	133
Psychiatric hospital placement .....	135
Staffing .....	135
Schooling .....	141
Absconding .....	149
Secure care .....	150

Discipline.....	154
Physical punishment.....	155
Drugs, alcohol, and tattoos.....	156
Smoking.....	156
Contact with field social workers.....	156
Contact with community.....	157
Visiting committees.....	158
Contact with families.....	159
Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements.....	160
Dunedin Boys' Home.....	161
Physical description.....	161
Resident profile.....	162
Length of stay.....	166
Programmes and care.....	168
Work and training.....	171
Resident-to-resident issues.....	171
Health and medication.....	173
Psychiatric hospital placement.....	174
Staffing.....	174
Schooling.....	181
Absconding.....	183
Secure care.....	184
Discipline.....	187
Physical punishment.....	188
Drugs, alcohol, and tattoos.....	189
Smoking.....	190
Contact with field social workers.....	190

Contact with community .....	191
Visiting committees .....	192
Contact with families .....	193
Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements .....	193
Allendale Girls' Home .....	194
Physical Description .....	194
Resident profile .....	195
Length of stay .....	197
Programmes and care .....	197
Work and training .....	199
Resident-to-resident issues .....	199
Health and medication .....	199
Psychiatric hospital placement .....	201
Staffing .....	201
Schooling .....	204
Absconding .....	205
Secure care .....	206
Discipline .....	208
Physical punishment .....	208
Drugs, alcohol and tattoos .....	209
Smoking .....	209
Contact with field social workers .....	209
Contact with community .....	210
Visiting Committee .....	210
Contact with families .....	211
Preparation for discharge and after-care arrangements .....	211
Miramar Girls' Home .....	212



Physical Description .....	212
Resident profile.....	214
Length of stay .....	215
Programmes and care .....	216
Work and training .....	219
Resident-to-resident issues .....	221
Health and medication .....	221
Psychiatric hospital placement .....	223
Staffing .....	223
Schooling .....	228
Absconding .....	231
Secure care .....	233
Discipline.....	236
Physical Punishment.....	237
Drugs, alcohol and tattoos .....	237
Smoking .....	237
Contact with field social workers.....	238
Contact with community.....	239
Visiting committees .....	241
Contact with families .....	243
Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements .....	244



# Outline

This volume of the report (Volume III) contains the district institutions – those boys' and girls' homes selected for profiling. The material from this volume can be cross-checked against the national policies and practices information in Volume I. The boys' homes are presented first, in geographic order, from north to south. These are followed by the girls' homes. The order of the residences profiled in this volume, is, therefore:

1. Owairaka Boys' Home
2. Wesleydale Boys' Home
3. Hamilton Boys' Home
4. Epuni Boys' Home
5. Christchurch Boys' Home
6. Dunedin Boys' Home
7. Allendale Girls' Home
8. Miramar Girls' Home

Volume II of this report profiles national institutions. Please see volume II for profiles of:

1. Holdsworth
2. Kohitere
3. Hokio
4. Campbell Park
5. Weymouth
6. Fareham House
7. Kingslea

Volume I contains national and other contextual information including the methodology adopted for this report.

Chapter

1

# Owairaka Boys' Home

## Physical description

In 1958, Owairaka was one of two Child Welfare Division residences in Mt Albert, Auckland and one of 6 short-term institutions throughout New Zealand, functioning as a short-term assessment centre.<sup>1</sup>

In 1958, Owairaka had a capacity of 40 beds, and often had 35-40 boys in residence at any one time.<sup>2</sup> Each boy had his own room.<sup>3</sup> In 1979 Owairaka had 44 open unit beds and a further 18 secure care beds.<sup>4</sup> In 1980, there were 44 boys in the residence at the time of an Inspection.<sup>5</sup> By 1990 Owairaka was smaller, with a capacity of 29 open unit beds and 18 secure care beds.

In 1976 Owairaka had single bedrooms, a recreation room, table tennis room, games hall, hobby workshop, gymnasium, colour TV, pool tables, football fields, softball diamond and gardens.<sup>6</sup>

The school was gutted by fire in 1979 after it was set alight by returning absconders.<sup>7</sup> Refurbishments to Owairaka were carried out in 1980 and 1981 and included a new visiting area and interview facility.<sup>8</sup> By 1982 Owairaka had a purpose-built reception area, avoiding the need to admit all boys through the secure unit.

A swimming pool was added in 1982 and used during the summer months.<sup>9</sup> It was planned to cover over and heat the pool during 1985.<sup>10</sup>

In 1984, staff suggested a number of changes, including a new name. However, the name change was rejected and in 1986 the name of the institution was changed to Owairaka Centre (Youth Remand and Assessment).<sup>11</sup>

The gym was re-sited over the first half of 1985, causing disruption to the onsite programme.<sup>12</sup> In 1985, a 17-bed intermediate secure area was planned.<sup>13</sup> In 1986, the Centre Wing was out of operation.<sup>14</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The other being Allendale for younger care and protection cases and delinquent girls.

<sup>2</sup> Life in the Auckland Boys' Home' *Auckland Star*, 27/9/58, Owairaka Profile 19352.

<sup>3</sup> Life in the Auckland Boys' Home' *Auckland Star*, 27/9/58, Owairaka Profile 19352.

<sup>4</sup> Directory of residential facilities for disturbed children in New Zealand (1979) Department of Social Welfare, Wellington, National Information folder, National Overview.

<sup>5</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports, F5000002185732, para 1.

<sup>6</sup> *You and Owairaka*, 1976, Owairaka Profile F5000002388449.

<sup>7</sup> Annual Report 1979, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>8</sup> Annual Report 1981, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990, p5.

<sup>9</sup> Annual Report 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>10</sup> Annual Report 1984, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>11</sup> Annual Report 1986, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>12</sup> Annual Report 1985, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>13</sup> Circular Memorandum 1985/76, 29/4/85, Owairaka Profile, F50000023688641.

## Resident profile

Owairaka was a short-term facility for boys aged 14 - 17, often those on warrants or on remand from the court.<sup>15</sup> In addition, Owairaka housed some state wards awaiting placement. In December 1971 the lack of foster or National Institution placements for many of these boys created problems in delayed discharge and put pressure on beds at Owairaka.<sup>16</sup> As a result, it was anticipated that boys referred by the courts would need to be placed in Mount Eden Prison over the Christmas period.<sup>17</sup>

The short-term remand/classification function of Owairaka meant that admission rates were high, for example, 628 during 1978 rising to 693 in 1980.<sup>18</sup> A sharp increase in admissions was sustained from 1984-1986 when just over 1000 boys were admitted each year. Rates of readmission were also high – for example 43% (286 of 666 admissions) in 1979.<sup>19</sup>

By 1976, the growing numbers of boys returning to Owairaka with histories of previous Justice Department involvement was creating problems. This group formed about one-third of all admissions.<sup>20</sup> The situation had arisen because of the trend to admit boys to national institutions earlier and for shorter periods. This meant that re-offending was dealt with by the youth justice system and not by the adult court system.<sup>21</sup> In 1976, the secure unit held at one time, a boy on a charge of murder, another of attempted murder, a boy with a long history of dramatic Police chases and another with a history of using a knife as an offensive weapon.<sup>22</sup> The effect of these boys mixing with boys in need of care was said to be undesirable.

Concern was also expressed in 1978 about the number of older and more sophisticated residents. A number of these boys had already been to detention centres or borstals (approximately 12% of admissions) and had an unsettling effect on the institution, both on "less sophisticated Social Welfare type of cases" and through the extra demands placed on the secure unit.<sup>23</sup> Numbers of readmissions for this group were also high.

As well as this older group, some 13 year olds were admitted, either by the police or by social workers. Some of these younger boys had proven to be beyond the resources of Wesleydale. Mr Ricketts, as Principal of Owairaka, always admitted these younger boys to the open unit, refusing to admit them to secure.<sup>24</sup>

<sup>14</sup> Annual Report 1986, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>15</sup> 'Life in the Auckland Boys' Home' *Auckland Star*, 27/9/58, Owairaka Profile 19352.

<sup>16</sup> A Ricketts, Manager Owairaka to A/DCWO Auckland 20/12/71, Owairaka Profile 19349.

<sup>17</sup> Memo, AL Rounthwaite, A/DCWO, CW 6/40/- Owairaka Profile 19349.

<sup>18</sup> Annual Report 1978, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732; Annual Report 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>19</sup> Annual Report 1979, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>20</sup> Memo, SJ Stanton, Assistant Director (Social Work) to Director-General 2/11/76 Owairaka Profile F5000002388339.

<sup>21</sup> Memo, SJ Stanton, Assistant Director (Social Work) to Director General 2/11/76 Owairaka Profile F5000002388339.

<sup>22</sup> A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 19/5/76, Owairaka Secure F5000002185732.

<sup>23</sup> Annual Report 1978, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>24</sup> Annual Report 1979, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

In 1985, there was an increase of 60% in older boys (including some 17-19 year olds), with mature boys said to use "stand-over tactics" over younger boys in the secure unit.<sup>25</sup>

Boys predominately came from North Auckland and Auckland and each boy was individually assessed on admission. In 1978, 74% (463 out of 628 admissions) were boys of Maori descent.<sup>26</sup> Sixty-one percent of admissions were boys of Maori descent in 1982, and 64% in 1985.<sup>27</sup>

The quick turnover experienced at Owairaka, and the inability of the institution to refuse admissions, meant that movements had to be carefully managed to ensure beds were always available.<sup>28</sup> Some pre-planning for admissions began in 1981.<sup>29</sup>

Gang affiliated residents created problems in the early 1980s – in particular, fighting between members of rival gangs.<sup>30</sup> Conflict also resulted in attacks on staff and in boys absconding due to threats from members of other gangs.<sup>31</sup> Team games were harder to organise because of the strong gang affiliation.<sup>32</sup> Gang affiliated boys tended to use displays of aggression, thefts and burglaries as status symbols. Boys also spent a great deal of their free time at Owairaka in gang-related activity, such as drawing insignia and corresponding with gang members.<sup>33</sup>

A 1985 newspaper article stated that up to 100 boys a year committed offences so that they could return to Owairaka. The Principal was quoted as saying "some boys are in here 10 times a year for the same offences".<sup>34</sup>

### Mixed functions

As the Manager noted in 1967; "The mixed function of the Home creates major difficulties. The Home is required to absorb a large number of cases on warrant and remand as well as cases where short term training and residence is required before placement. The result is that neither aspect of the work can be undertaken with success."<sup>35</sup> The predominance of remand centre functions was noted by an inspection report in 1967.<sup>36</sup>

By the early 1970s, the primarily remand nature of Owairaka was still evident, as was the negative impact of this on programmes offered. The Principal described the use of, and admissions at Owairaka in the early 70s as "unwieldy".<sup>37</sup> By 1972, the institution had begun to attract adverse publicity about the age-mix of residents and

<sup>25</sup> Annual Report 1985, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>26</sup> Annual Report 1978, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>27</sup> Annual Report 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990; Annual Report 1985, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>28</sup> Annual Report 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>29</sup> Annual Report 1981, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>30</sup> Letter, A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka to Regional Manager, Auckland 28/3/80. Owairaka Profile F5000002388339.

<sup>31</sup> CS Howie, Senior RSW, 14/4/81, Owairaka Profile F5000002185732.

<sup>32</sup> CS Howie, Senior RSW, 14/4/81, Owairaka Profile F5000002185732.

<sup>33</sup> D Tucker, Senior RSW, Secure unit notes for committee on gangs, 14/4/81, Owairaka Profile F5000002185732.

<sup>34</sup> "Youths offend to return home" *Central Leader*, 20/8/85 Owairaka Profile F5000002388340.

<sup>35</sup> Memo, A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka to KJ Flint DCWO Auckland 20/3/67 Owairaka Profile 19349.

<sup>36</sup> Hayes, Inspection Report May/June 1967, Owairaka Profile 19532.

<sup>37</sup> A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka, "Summaries of the implications associated with the up-dating of the role and requirements of Owairaka as a remand centre", 2/2/85, Owairaka Reports F5000002386577, p3.

the use of secure, with an article appearing in the Auckland Star.<sup>38</sup> By 1974, the department was promising that a maximum security remand centre would be purpose-built in Mt Roskill. Owairaka was to manage temporarily until it was built.<sup>39</sup> In 1976 it was noted that the secure unit operated more like that of the Prison Service, due to the number of serious offenders in care.<sup>40</sup>

However, while plans progressed for the building of a new maximum security remand centre, attitudes in the community and in the department changed and there was a new focus on keeping children in the community, and so plans for Mt Roskill were shelved. The short-term remand focus of Owairaka remained and what began as temporary cover became a long-term proposition. The institution continued to operate under pressure, always anticipating a drop in numbers when in fact admissions continued to rise.<sup>41</sup> This occurred despite a firm policy of resisting admissions by staff and the focus on placements in the community.

The short-term nature of the institution affected the type of programme offered and created a dual, sometimes conflicting role for residential social workers, as social workers and as custodians.<sup>42</sup> As most admissions came from the courts, Owairaka had little control over the rate or timing of admissions. Each admission or discharge took staff away from other duties.<sup>43</sup>

Admissions rose sharply in 1983 - a rise of 45% in admissions was experienced - from 663 in 1982 to 965 in 1983.<sup>44</sup> Admissions continued to rise in 1984, totalling 1019 that year despite the opening of the Cornwall Park Reception Centre and the extra screening of admissions that this involved.<sup>45</sup> At the same time, judges were reluctant to refer young people to adult jails, preferring to use Owairaka and this impacted on pressures on the secure unit.<sup>46</sup>

During the mid-80s there was discussion about the role of Owairaka. In 1985, the Principal noted the specialised function of Owairaka and the effect of this on what programmes could be delivered. He also noted that despite this, the Department held conventional expectations of the institution in terms of resources, programmes and goals.<sup>47</sup> The institution was expected to fulfil the role of a Boys' Home when it operated as a remand centre. Despite a range of moves to keep boys in the community and to find alternative placements, admissions to Owairaka continued to rise. Police admissions were made easier with the introduction of section 43 Children and Young Persons Act.<sup>48</sup>

The Cornwall Park Reception Centre was opened in 1982, and its role was to screen cases before admission to Owairaka; diverting appropriate cases to other

<sup>38</sup> A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka, "Summaries of the implications associated with the up-dating of the role and requirements of Owairaka as a remand centre", 2/2/85, Owairaka Reports F5000002386577, p4.

<sup>39</sup> A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka, "Summaries of the implications associated with the up-dating of the role and requirements of Owairaka as a remand centre", 2/2/85, Owairaka Reports F5000002386577, p4, 5.

<sup>40</sup> A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 19/5/76, Owairaka Secure F5000002185732.

<sup>41</sup> A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka, "Summaries of the implications associated with the up-dating of the role and requirements of Owairaka as a remand centre", 2/2/85, Owairaka Reports F5000002386577.p6.

<sup>42</sup> Annual Report 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>43</sup> Inspection Report, MR Hayes, May/June 1967, Owairaka Profile 19532.

<sup>44</sup> Annual Report 1983, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>45</sup> Quarterly Report, Jan-March 1984, Owairaka Reports F5000002386577.

<sup>46</sup> Annual Report, 1984, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340, with reference to the Wallace report.

<sup>47</sup> A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka, "Summaries of the implications associated with the up-dating of the role and requirements of Owairaka as a remand centre", 2/2/85, Owairaka Reports F5000002386577.

<sup>48</sup> A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka, "Summaries of the implications associated with the up-dating of the role and requirements of Owairaka as a remand centre" 2/2/85, Owairaka Reports F5000002386577 p7.

placements.<sup>49</sup> However, it did not lead to a drop in Owairaka admissions, which instead rose rapidly.<sup>50</sup>

By 1985, Owairaka operated almost exclusively for police referrals, especially as the courts were reluctant to admit children and young people to adult jails.<sup>51</sup> The focus on community placement meant that Owairaka staff spent a lot of time trying to make arrangements other than admission to the residence, and becoming actively involved in these alternative arrangements.<sup>52</sup> Even those boys on Secure Orders from the Courts or those posing serious risk to the community needed to be assessed for community placement. A backlash to the emphasis on community placement was noted in 1986, where many districts preferred a stay at Owairaka to placement in the community.<sup>53</sup>

Admissions rose again in 1985 to 1090, with 71% staying one week or less.<sup>54</sup> Older boys were admitted in increasing numbers; many through the impact of the Criminal Justice Act 1985.

A close relationship developed during 1985 between Owairaka and the local police station at Avondale. In particular, two young policemen, one Maori, one Pacific Island, spent time at the residence, becoming involved in discussion programmes and recreation, and breaking down often hostile view that boys had of the Police.<sup>55</sup>

Total admissions in 1986 were 1022, a decline of 68 from the previous year.<sup>56</sup> The function of Owairaka changed in the mid- to late-1980s as Kohitere and Hokio began to take less responsibility for boys from the Auckland region and more boys that would have formerly gone to these other institutions were instead admitted to Owairaka.<sup>57</sup>

In 1990, approximately one-third of admissions were care and protection admissions and therefore were inappropriate. In particular their admission to secure was highlighted as most inappropriate.<sup>58</sup> Staff did not appear to operate an admissions policy and the police did not have alternatives to Owairaka.<sup>59</sup>

The average occupancy for March 1990 ranged between 10-29 boys.<sup>60</sup>

<sup>49</sup> A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka, "Summaries of the implications associated with the up-dating of the role and requirements of Owairaka as a remand centre" 2/2/85, Owairaka Reports F5000002386577 p7.

<sup>50</sup> Quarterly Report July-September 1984, 1/10/84, Owairaka Reports, F5000002388340; A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka, "Summaries of the implications associated with the up-dating of the role and requirements of Owairaka as a remand centre" 2/2/85, Owairaka Reports F5000002386577 p8.

<sup>51</sup> A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka, "Summaries of the implications associated with the up-dating of the role and requirements of Owairaka as a remand centre", 2/2/85, Owairaka Reports F5000002386577 p 10.

See also, Circular Memorandum 1985/76, 29/4/85, Owairaka Profile, F50000023688641.

<sup>52</sup> Annual Report 1985, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>53</sup> Quarterly Report 28/4/86, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>54</sup> Annual Report 1985, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>55</sup> Annual Report 1985, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>56</sup> Annual Report 1986, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>57</sup> Audit Report, March 1988, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One; Audit Report, March 1989, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>58</sup> Audit Report, March 1990, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>59</sup> Audit Report, March 1990, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>60</sup> Audit Report, March 1990, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.



## Length of stay

Rapid turnover leading to instability within Owairaka was noted in 1959 in the context of lack of adequate numbers of staff. New admissions and older boys did not attend school, leading to large numbers of boys home all day, sometimes in the care of inexperienced staff.<sup>61</sup>

An examination of discharge patterns during 1966 revealed that most boys sent home after only a short stay at Owairaka (i.e. one quarter less than a week and three quarters less than a month) were discharged due to pressure on beds from admissions. Some of these boys were later readmitted.<sup>62</sup> The pressure on beds created by rising numbers of admissions often meant that discharges were based on expediency rather than on the needs of boys.<sup>63</sup>

In 1979, 60% (402 out of 666) of boys were in Owairaka for 2 weeks or less. The 1981 Annual Report noted that the very short period of stay adversely impacted on any ability of the institution to offer rehabilitative programmes, and also raised the question of whether admissions were appropriate in the first place.<sup>64</sup> In 1980, 63% of boys stayed for up to 2 weeks.<sup>65</sup>

In 1982, there was a shift in emphasis away from short-stay remand cases, after the issuing of the Human Rights Commission, Johnston and New Horizons reports. Admission rates dropped in the last quarter of 1982, and this was thought to be as a result of new policies.<sup>66</sup>

Half of admissions in 1983 were boys with previous Owairaka admissions. Those staying under one week also accounted for 50% of admissions. The continuing high rate of re-admissions in 1984 was thought to be due to a failure of community resources for boys placed out of Owairaka.<sup>67</sup>

In 1984, total admissions were 1019, with almost 70% staying less than a week.<sup>68</sup>

By 1985, the short-stay nature of Owairaka was cemented, with most boys staying 3-10 days before being placed elsewhere.<sup>69</sup>

## Programmes and care

Described as an unusual feature of the programme in place since 1952, boys were required to lie on their beds for an hour every afternoon after school. Many slept during this time.<sup>70</sup>

<sup>61</sup> M Lyons, DWCO to Superintendent 16/12/59, Owairaka Staff 19532.

<sup>62</sup> Memo, A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka to KJ Flint DCWO Auckland 20/3/67, Owairaka Profile 19349.

<sup>63</sup> Memo, A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka to KJ Flint DCWO Auckland 20/3/67, Owairaka Profile 19349.

<sup>64</sup> Annual Report 1981, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990, p1.

<sup>65</sup> Annual Report 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>66</sup> Annual Report 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>67</sup> Annual Report, 1984, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>68</sup> Annual Report, 1984, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>69</sup> Youths offend to return home. *Central Leader*, 20/8/85, Owairaka Profile F5000002388340..

<sup>70</sup> "Life in the Auckland Boys' Home" *Auckland Star*, 27.9.58, Owairaka Profile 19352. This practice was also employed at other institutions, including at Epuni.

Rest therapy came under challenge from Head Office in 1972 and 1973. Events at Epuni in 1972 had led to an order from Head Office that rest periods in that institution should cease. A number of letters were written to the Owairaka Principal in late 1972 in support of rest periods from people including the Principal of Mt Albert Grammar School, the Owairaka Visiting Psychologist, the Owairaka Head Teacher and the head of the Education Department at Auckland University.<sup>71</sup> The correspondence suggests that institutions were being asked to run uniform programmes. The letters noted the benefit of physical rest on a boys' emotional recovery given the often unsettled recent past of residents.

In January 1973, the Director-General ordered that rest periods were to be discontinued in all institutions.<sup>72</sup> He noted his disagreement with Mr Rickett's theories in regard to rest, stating that it was not valid to argue that because children slept during the rest period that they therefore required bed rest. Rest was only allowed for new admissions or in individual cases. Confinement to rooms was permitted for up to 45 minutes as long as children did not lie on their beds.

However, despite this instruction, the practice still occurred at Owairaka in 1980, where "rest therapy" was an hour and a half and boys were allowed to read but many slept.<sup>73</sup>

In 1958, boys spent 3-4 weeks at the boys' home before going to school in the community.<sup>74</sup> At school, they tended to eat lunch together, but were described as generally being accepted by the other boys.<sup>75</sup> As well as attending school, boys worked in the kitchen and in the grounds.<sup>76</sup>

In the 1950s, after school activities included hockey, rugby, basketball, quiz evenings and films.<sup>77</sup> Owairaka ran a camp in the school holidays.<sup>78</sup>

In 1972, after adverse publicity, programmes were curtailed. Camps were discontinued as were Owairaka sports teams playing local tournaments.<sup>79</sup>

Movies were shown on Saturday and Sunday evenings in 1976, when boys could spend their pocket money at the tuck-shop.<sup>80</sup> In 1976 Owairaka had a recreation room, table tennis room, games hall, hobby workshop, gymnasium, colour TV, pool tables, football fields, softball diamond and gardens.<sup>81</sup> Other activities included archery, weightlifting, trampoline, darts, trips to the beach, bush walking and other outings.<sup>82</sup>

<sup>71</sup> Various correspondence to A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka, December 1972, Owairaka Health 19352.

One writer describes the programme as being in place from about 1949; PL Painter, Senior Psychologist, Department of Education to A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka, 5/12/72, Owairaka Health, 19352.

<sup>72</sup> DG Reilly for Director-General to The Director, Auckland 8/1/73, Owairaka Health 19352.

<sup>73</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732, para 15.

<sup>74</sup> "Life in the Auckland Boys' Home" *Auckland Star*, 27/9/58, Owairaka Profile 19352.

<sup>75</sup> "Life in the Auckland Boys' Home" *Auckland Star*, 27/9/58, Owairaka Profile 19352.

<sup>76</sup> "Life in the Auckland Boys' Home" *Auckland Star*, 27/9/58, Owairaka Profile 19352.

<sup>77</sup> "Life in the Auckland Boys' Home" *Auckland Star*, 27/9/58, Owairaka Profile 19352.

<sup>78</sup> "Life in the Auckland Boys' Home" *Auckland Star*, 27/9/58, Owairaka Profile 19352.

<sup>79</sup> A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka, "Summaries of the implications associated with the up-dating of the role and requirements of Owairaka as a remand centre", 2/2/85, Owairaka Reports F5000002386577, p4.

<sup>80</sup> *You and Owairaka*, 1976, Owairaka Profile F5000002388449.

<sup>81</sup> *You and Owairaka*, 1976, Owairaka Profile F5000002388449.

<sup>82</sup> *You and Owairaka*, 1976, Owairaka Profile F5000002388449.

In 1978, the programme included individual and group activities. Work and recreational facilities were provided.<sup>83</sup> Conducted outings and special weekend leave privileges were also part of the Owairaka programme at this time.<sup>84</sup>

In 1979, it proved difficult to retain specialist part-timers, such as gym trainers and Māori culture specialists.<sup>85</sup>

In answer to questions raised in parliament, it was admitted that an R18 feature film (The Deerhunter) was shown to residents on 8 November 1980.<sup>86</sup>

In 1980 physical education specialists took groups on weekday mornings and from 8.30-5pm on weekends.<sup>87</sup> By 1982 this had been extended to Sunday evening as well.<sup>88</sup>

By 1981, available activities included pool, table tennis, gym work, weight lifting, indoor basketball, softball, soccer and rugby.

During the summer of 1981, the School for the Deaf offered Owairaka the use of their swimming pool, and this was a popular activity.<sup>89</sup> Owairaka got its own pool in 1982 and the pool was close enough to secure to be used as an activity in that unit.<sup>90</sup> The pool was to be heated and covered in 1985. While this had not been completed by the end of 1986, there is nothing on file to note whether this work was in fact undertaken.

A confidence course was also under construction at the end of 1982.<sup>91</sup>

Boys went on a 5 day camp at Poutu in November 1982 that was considered successful.<sup>92</sup>

On admission, boys' clothing was stored, unwashed and boys were given institution jeans and sweatshirts. It was not possible to launder personal clothing due to the large number of admissions.<sup>93</sup>

In 1980, Inspectors found the meals at Owairaka of a high standard and boys were allowed to choose how much they wanted to eat. Boys sat at tables and one senior boy was appointed monitor. Staff sat together at a separate table. The report noted that mealtimes were "unhurried, quiet and relaxed".<sup>94</sup> Boys worked in the kitchen, but the rapid turnover meant that it was difficult to get them to work constructively.<sup>95</sup>

<sup>83</sup> Annual Report 1978, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>84</sup> Annual Report 1978, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>85</sup> Annual Report 1979, Owairaka Reports, F5000002185732.

<sup>86</sup> Johnston to Regional Director 28/11/80, Owairaka Discipline/Punishment F5000002185732.

<sup>87</sup> Annual Report 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>88</sup> Annual Report 1978, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>89</sup> Annual Report 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>90</sup> Annual Report 1981, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>91</sup> Annual Report 1978, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>92</sup> Annual Report 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>93</sup> Annual Report 1978, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>94</sup> Annual Report 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>95</sup> Annual Report 1978, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>96</sup> Annual Report 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>97</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732. para 10.

<sup>98</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732. para 17.

<sup>99</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732. para 17.

The 1980 Inspection Report noted that one of the two Ford Transit vans owned by Owairaka had the general appearance of a "deteriorating rust heap", with numerous rust holes and marks.<sup>96</sup>

Owairaka had a unique pocket money system due to the short-stay of residents and this system had been approved by Head Office.<sup>97</sup> However, audits in the late 1980s began to criticise this system, especially the lack of any pocket-money system at all for boys in secure or those in the Centre Unit.<sup>98</sup>

The 1980 Inspectors found that mail opening processes and allowing uncensored mail in and out of Owairaka failed to comply with standard procedure.<sup>99</sup>

Short-stays affected programme development in 1982 but plans were underway to develop the recreational, school and vocational programmes, including the purchase of a video camera for job interview training and personal skills development.<sup>100</sup> In the event, a staff member supplied their own camera until one was later purchased.<sup>101</sup>

The 1982 Annual Report notes the impact of the Human Rights Commission, Johnston and New Horizons reports on the institution; namely a change away from short-stays to a more focussed intervention, and also tighter admission processes with remand cases to be diverted away from Owairaka. The support of Regional and Head Office staff was also appreciated.<sup>102</sup> A number of changes in direction were experienced over the next few years.<sup>103</sup>

The Planning for Children in Care Scheme was introduced in 1982.<sup>104</sup> The lack of work experience was noted in a 1983 inspection.<sup>105</sup>

The 1983 Annual Report stated that the philosophy and aim of Owairaka was to "provide a caring and semi-custodial type of environment for those boys awaiting Court appearances, or for other matters. The Staff endeavour to do this by assisting them to present themselves well at Court, enable then access to family, friends and professional assistance, and by giving them personal support."<sup>106</sup>

A Cultural Involvement Officer ran a number of on-site and off-site programmes in 1983 and 1984, including bone carving, haka and flax work.<sup>107</sup> A number of day trips and picnics were also held that year.<sup>108</sup> More attention was given to a varied programme in 1984, including sports, recreation and outings.<sup>109</sup>

A bicultural emphasis was said to have been developed by 1985, with the Cultural Involvement Officer noting that most boys had had little prior involvement with marae

<sup>96</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732. para 21.

<sup>97</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732. para 24.

<sup>98</sup> Audit Report, March 1989, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>99</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732. para 24.

<sup>100</sup> Annual Report 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>101</sup> Annual Report, 1983, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>102</sup> Annual Report 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>103</sup> Annual Report, 1984, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>104</sup> Inspection Report, 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>105</sup> Inspection Report, 1983, Owairaka Reports F5000002388449.

<sup>106</sup> Annual Report, 1983, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990. This philosophy was restated in a number of later reports.

<sup>107</sup> Annual Report, 1983, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990: Annual Report, 1984, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>108</sup> Annual Report, 1983, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>109</sup> Annual Report, 1984, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

or Māori or Pacific Island culture.<sup>110</sup> A number of marae visits took place in 1985 and the te reo Māori and haka classes were particularly popular.<sup>111</sup>

Weightlifting and jogging were part of the school programme in 1984.<sup>112</sup> A 20 seat bus was also purchased in 1984, allowing more off-site programming.<sup>113</sup> Off site activities were used extensively in 1985 while the gym was out of action while it was moved.<sup>114</sup> The off-site programme was the main direction of programme development in 1985.<sup>115</sup>

A 1987 Audit found the vocational activities fell short of the regulated requirements although the boys were well provided for in terms of leisure and recreation activities. Educational activities for those not attending school also fell short of requirements.<sup>116</sup> These issues were raised again by a March 1988 audit.<sup>117</sup>

The 1987 audit also criticised the management of pocket money and the “anachronistic” smoking rules.<sup>118</sup> The pocket money rules were also criticised in a March 1988 audit. Cigarettes and sweets were handed out and paid for by the Department.<sup>119</sup>

A 1988 Audit found the programme very basic with a lot of use of physical activity, outings and videos. Auditors were concerned that the short term remand nature of the institution was used as an excuse not to develop programmes.<sup>120</sup>

A Te Whanau Owairaka outreach programme was set up in 1988 and met with enthusiasm by those staff involved, but with jealousy by other staff because of the resources and emphasis given to the programme. An Audit found the programme to have a well-developed philosophy and set of objectives that had the potential to impact positively on other aspects of Owairaka.<sup>121</sup> The programme ceased after the introduction of the Children, Young Persons and Their Families Act 1989.<sup>122</sup>

In 1990 canteen accounts were operated for the pocket-money system for residences where sweets and cigarettes were available at cost price.<sup>123</sup>

The booklet “Your Rights While You Are In Owairaka” had been produced but was not in use in 1990.<sup>124</sup>

In 1990, the standard of personal cleanliness was found lacking by auditors, with clothes not washed daily and some boys sleeping in their clothes. A higher standard of housekeeping was also called for in terms of bedding.<sup>125</sup> Privacy had also been breached by washing all the curtains at the same time and not putting them back

<sup>110</sup> Annual Report 1985, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>111</sup> Annual Report 1985, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>112</sup> Annual Report, 1984, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>113</sup> Annual Report, 1984, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>114</sup> Annual Report 1985, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>115</sup> Quarterly Report 1/10/85, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>116</sup> Audit Report, 20.7.86, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>117</sup> Audit Report, March 1988, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>118</sup> Audit Report, 20.7.86, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>119</sup> Audit Report, March 1988, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>120</sup> Audit Report, March 1988, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>121</sup> Audit Report, March 1988, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>122</sup> Audit Report, March 1990, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>123</sup> Audit Report, March 1990, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>124</sup> Audit Report, March 1990, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>125</sup> Audit Report, March 1990, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

up.<sup>126</sup> There were no home skills programmes in 1990 and no boys helped in the kitchen. Staff set the tables.<sup>127</sup>

## Work and training

In October 1959, as part of discussions about the need for an on-site school at Owairaka, it was noted that one boy was currently at work.<sup>128</sup>

In 1980, the Principal commented that any work training or work experience programme was impractical in the high-turnover environment of Owairaka, although some work of this nature was attempted in the Activity Centre (i.e. the school).<sup>129</sup> Vocational work was similarly difficult due to turnover although attempts were made when working with boys on their duties and personal routines as well as during sports activities.<sup>130</sup>

There were plans in 1982 to purchase a video camera for job interview training and personal skills development.<sup>131</sup> In the event, a staff member supplied their own camera until one was later purchased.<sup>132</sup>

In 1980, Inspectors commented that the garden had virtually disappeared as the boys had become less involved in work training.<sup>133</sup> Pressures brought about in the 1980s as admissions rose and stays shortened made programme development difficult.<sup>134</sup>

A number of discussion groups were held for 20 minutes before breakfast in 1985, covering topics such as flatting, looking for work, self awareness and current affairs.<sup>135</sup> In general, vocational training was not possible that year due to fast turnover, with most work of this nature being done through the Activity Centre.<sup>136</sup>

## Resident-to-resident issues

Very little appears on file in regard to issues between residents, apart from issues mentioned in resident profile, above, for example the mix of older and younger boys and gang affiliation issues.

An alleged incident of bullying and indecent assault by 3 boys against another resident was investigated in [REDACTED]

<sup>126</sup> Audit Report, March 1990, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>127</sup> Audit Report, March 1990, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>128</sup> M Lyons, DCWO to District Superintendent Education, 23/10/59. Owairaka Education 19532.

<sup>129</sup> Annual Report 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>130</sup> Annual Report 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>131</sup> Annual Report 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>132</sup> Annual Report, 1983, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>133</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732, para 18.3.

<sup>134</sup> See for example, Annual Report, 1984, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>135</sup> Annual Report 1985, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>136</sup> Annual Report 1985, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

in a boarding-school manner. The Senior RSW was not sure of the complainant's story given his history and that he had subsequently twice requested to sleep in the senior wing where the perpetrators slept.<sup>137</sup>

## Health and medication

### Psychological care

In 1958, psychological assessments were carried out on most boys by a visiting Education Department psychologist who attended the institution once a week. Personality and intelligence tests were undertaken. The psychologist advised on discharge and after care.<sup>138</sup>

In 1980 Psychological Services saw boys on request, usually within a week of the request being made.<sup>139</sup> In 1981, a contracted person offered 5 hours a week of counselling services and weekly assistance was also provided by Psychological Services.<sup>140</sup>

A local GP attended Owairaka on weekday mornings to check admissions and attend to other referrals.<sup>141</sup> The same GP attended for many years through the 1980s.

The GP attending Owairaka told the Inspectors he saw no major health problems and few drug-related problems. However, the sniffing of petrol and other substances was common at this time and boys were counselled by the doctor about their dangers. At this time there was no qualified nurse on staff but two women had been nurse aides.<sup>142</sup>

A 1980 Inspection found that adequate records were kept of medical treatment and any medication administered.<sup>143</sup> At this time, the institution had little faith in the local psychiatric service and made few referrals, however, more reliance was placed on psychological services. The visiting psychologist sometimes set up ongoing counselling for boys and their families but he was mostly kept busy doing Court assessments or assessments for long-term training.<sup>144</sup>

Sister Rose attended at Owairaka for many years, providing valuable counselling and pastoral care. Sister Rose left in 1986.<sup>145</sup> During 1986 there were problems and staff changes within Psychological Services.<sup>146</sup>

<sup>137</sup> A Ricketts Principal Owairaka to Regional Director of Residential Services, 6/12/84 and statements from staff and boys, Owairaka Incidents, F5000002388340.

<sup>138</sup> "Life in the Auckland Boys' Home" *Auckland Star*, 27/9/58, Owairaka Profile 19352.

<sup>139</sup> Annual Report 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>140</sup> Annual Report 1981, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990, p4.

<sup>141</sup> Annual Report 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990. Annual Report 1986, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>142</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732. para 14.

<sup>143</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732. para 6.9.

<sup>144</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732. paras 12, 13.

<sup>145</sup> Annual Report 1986, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>146</sup> Annual Report 1986, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

## Psychiatric hospital placement

Nothing was found on file in relation to any resident of Owairaka being placed in a psychiatric hospital.

## Staffing

In 1958, Owairaka had a staff of 6 women and 4 men.<sup>147</sup> In 1959, the Manager Mr Ricketts made repeated requests for extra staff, noting that the physical demands placed on male staff required to care for 41 boys on their own were excessive, with staff "so tired that we cannot do our duty properly".<sup>148</sup>

Staff were also unable to take any days off, due to the shortages and to other staff taking overdue leave. Consequently the Manager reported that the training and supervision of the boys was seriously affected and that the boys could not be adequately controlled or catered for.<sup>149</sup>

By December 1958 the situation had become urgent, with staff unable to make routine checks at night and reference made to a boy who had instigated sex practices at Owairaka that had remained undetected for longer than they would have if staffing had been adequate.<sup>150</sup>

In 1967, an Inspection Report noted that often only one staff member was on duty to attend to boys, as a three-man timetable existed, with the duty manager attending to housemaster and managerial responsibilities and a second staff member attending to admissions and discharges.<sup>151</sup>

The Director-General of Education supported an increase in residential staff in order to provide double night cover in secure in 1970, noting that the Public Service Association had become involved after a number of attacks on staff.<sup>152</sup>

In 1978 a letter to the Minister of Social Welfare, the Auckland Committee on Racism and Discrimination listed 15 permanent staff and claimed that 8 had service backgrounds (i.e. army, navy or air force) and claimed that the institution advertised for people with such backgrounds.<sup>153</sup> A 1980 memorandum in regard to problems created by gang affiliations among residents led to the suggestion that staff selected to work in Owairaka's secure unit "should of necessity be male, mature, well built, physically fit with ability in the art of self defence".<sup>154</sup>

Staff training was increased in 1980.<sup>155</sup> All staff had a case work load. Senior Residential Social Workers and Residential Social Workers kept contact with Social

<sup>147</sup> "Life in the Auckland Boys' Home" *Auckland Star*, 27/9/58, Owairaka Profile, 19352.

<sup>148</sup> A Ricketts, Manager Owairaka to DCWO Auckland, 29/6/59, Owairaka Staffing 19352.

<sup>149</sup> A Ricketts, Manager Owairaka to DCWO Auckland, 2/11/59, Owairaka Staffing 19352.

<sup>150</sup> M Lyons, DCWO to Superintendent, 16/12/59, Owairaka Staffing 19532.

<sup>151</sup> Hayes, Inspection Report May/June 1967, Owairaka Profile 19532.

<sup>152</sup> JT Ferguson for Director-General Education, to Mr Ball, 22/12/70, Owairaka Staffing 19352.

<sup>153</sup> ORW Sutherland for ACORD to Minister of Social Welfare 17/4/78, Owairaka Incidents 32995.

<sup>154</sup> I Johnston, Assistant Director (Regional Residential Services) to the Director-General, 14/4/80, Owairaka Profile, F5000002388339.

<sup>155</sup> Annual Report 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.



Workers, volunteers and parents.<sup>156</sup> Copies of the Residential Social Worker Manuals, Public Service Manuals, State Services Act and Regulations were available to staff, however the Social Workers Manual was not available and there were no job or desk files.<sup>157</sup> Although all staff were encouraged to take the RCA course, only one staff member did so in 1980.<sup>158</sup>

In 1980 Senior RSWs met with the Principal each Monday and each Senior met with his shift once a week for meetings and staff training. The Domestic Supervisor and staff meet once a week.<sup>159</sup>

A 1980 Inspection report found no staff vacancies and double night cover in place. A suggestion was made that night checks be made on a more infrequent basis. Very few staff at this time had formal training or qualifications beyond two or three years at secondary school.<sup>160</sup> Induction Assistant Residential Social Workers attended Owairaka on training placements, in a "shadow roster" system.<sup>161</sup> These Assistant RSWs told the Inspectors they felt they could be more involved in report writing or decision-making as they worked closely with the boys.<sup>162</sup>

In 1981, a manual was produced for in-house use, giving basic rules for each area within the institution.<sup>163</sup> Staff were restructured during this time also.<sup>164</sup>

In 1981 a complaint was received in regard to female staff supervising the showering of boys.<sup>165</sup> The complaint related to 1977 or 1978 and the Principal advised that female Assistant RSWs did supervise such tasks, but that equal opportunity requirements of the State Services Commission required appointment of male and female staff on an equal basis. The policy was marked for review.<sup>166</sup>

In April 1982, the Assistant Principal was released from his roster duties and instead worked on staff meetings and staff training.<sup>167</sup> Regular staff meetings were held of shift teams and other staff groups, with a general staff meeting held once a month.<sup>168</sup>

Three RSWs obtained the RCA certificate in 1982, and a one day seminar was held at the end of the year about implementing the new policies based on recently published reports.<sup>169</sup> By 1985, a second Assistant Principal was in place and this position was also not rostered. There was some criticism of this by Head Office, noting that the appropriate roles of senior staff represented a difference in management style between Head Office and the Principal.<sup>170</sup> Later, in 1985, the

<sup>156</sup> Annual Report 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>157</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732. para 22.

<sup>158</sup> Annual Report 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>159</sup> Annual Report 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>160</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1981, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>161</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1981, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>162</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732. para 8.2.

<sup>163</sup> Annual Report 1981, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990, p4.

<sup>164</sup> Annual Report 1981, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>165</sup> J Gilchrist to Director-General 7/7/81 Owairaka Complaints F5000002388449.

<sup>166</sup> A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka, to Regional Director 3/8/81 Owairaka Complaints F5000002388449.

<sup>167</sup> Annual Report 1978, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>168</sup> Annual Report 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>169</sup> Annual Report 1978, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>169</sup> Annual Report 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>169</sup> Annual Report 1978, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>169</sup> Annual Report 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>170</sup> A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka, "Summaries of the implications associated with the up-dating of the role and requirements of Owairaka as a remand centre", 2/2/85, Owairaka Reports F5000002386577, handwritten note at p 15.

view that Owairaka considered itself a unique institution and one that should therefore not have to always comply with Departmental policy was re-iterated.<sup>171</sup>

The work of the Assistant Principal in preparing a Modular Information Manual covering areas including induction, job descriptions and relevant Manuals and Acts was praised by Inspectors in 1982.<sup>172</sup> The Inspectors noted that most supervision was done on the job and that many supervisory staff had limited training and experience in supervision.<sup>173</sup>

The 1982 Inspectors noted the positive approach of the Principal and his appreciation of the need to delegate responsibility so that other staff could extend themselves and grow in the job. The healthy atmosphere and tone of the residence at this time was also noted.<sup>174</sup>

By 1983 discussions were underway about a new role for Owairaka. The Principal saw tensions in the need to prevent absconding and increase secure beds while promoting social work and rehabilitation functions.<sup>175</sup> Owairaka had about 80% of admissions under police warrant whereas most other institutions had about 20% - this was said to give rise to unique issues for this Home. In early 1983, however, the Regional Office indicated that the re-defined role for Owairaka would be for remand classification, and staff responded to this in May 1983.<sup>176</sup>

The Human Rights Commission Report released in 1982 had an impact on the institution.<sup>177</sup> The report was critical of admission procedures, use of secure, and what it referred to as the "nodding system" where staff allegedly gave commands to boys by a series of nods so that exchanges were conducted in silence. A 1983 Inspection Report indicates awareness of these tensions.<sup>178</sup>

The 1983 Inspection Report found the new reception centre working well. There were issues in staff not being able to take their half hour breaks.<sup>179</sup> According to the Annual Report, staff training and qualifications were consolidated in 1983 when job profiles were also revised.<sup>180</sup> Staff expressed a need for access to legal advice and guidance.<sup>181</sup>

In 1984, the principal noted problems with the number of temporary staff, which he thought would be helped by the appointment of 2 permanent relievers.<sup>182</sup> In 1985, the high proportion of senior staff to other staff was noted, and was said to be a result of the specialised remand function of the institution.<sup>183</sup>

<sup>171</sup> M Doolan, Director Regional Residential Services, to Director-General 5/6/85, Owairaka Secure, F5000002386577.

<sup>172</sup> Inspection Report, 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>173</sup> Inspection Report, 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>174</sup> Inspection Report, 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>175</sup> A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka to Director of Residential Services Auckland, undated 1983, Owairaka Reports, F5000002388449.

<sup>176</sup> Annual Report, 1983, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>177</sup> Human Rights Commission, 1982, Report of the Human Rights Commission on representations by ACORD on Children and Young Person's Homes administered by the Department of Social Welfare, HRC.

<sup>178</sup> Inspection Report, 1983, Owairaka Reports F5000002388449.

<sup>179</sup> Inspection Report, 1983, Owairaka Reports F5000002388449.

<sup>180</sup> Annual Report, 1983, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>181</sup> Annual Report, 1983, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>182</sup> Annual Report, 1984, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>183</sup> A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka, "Summaries of the implications associated with the up-dating of the role and requirements of Owairaka as a remand centre", 2/2/85, Owairaka Reports F5000002386577 p14.

In 1984, staff suggested a number of changes. These included a new name "The Auckland Remand and Classification Centre" to reflect the two main roles of remand and also finding appropriate placements for boys.<sup>184</sup> The philosophy was stated as:<sup>185</sup>

"The Auckland Remand and Classification Centre provides a necessary facility for those young persons whose behaviour and attitudes are delinquent or disturbed and they lack sufficient "inner control" to be cared for in normal conditions. Their experience in this Centre should be one in which their basic needs are met by sound application of social work principles and departmental regulations within a structured setting."

However, this suggestion for a new name was rejected and in 1986 the name of the institution was changed to Owairaka Centre (Youth Remand and Assessment).<sup>186</sup>

The publication of the "Q" section of the Social Worker's Manual in 1985 was said to provide the basic instruction to staff and it was used as a practical as well as philosophical guide.<sup>187</sup>

An additional Assistant Principal position was created in 1985 to manage the secure and intermediate secure programmes. The position was filled by Mr Waetford on transfer by Wesleydale Boys' Home.<sup>188</sup>

The promulgation of the Regulations in 1986 posed few problems, other than those due to a lack of resources.<sup>189</sup> That year, a Whanau committee was established by staff.<sup>190</sup>

██████████ was the Principal of Owairaka from ██████████ to ██████████. An audit report under the ██████████ Regulations was critical of aspects of ██████████ management style. It was noted in ██████████ that at various times during his leadership Owairaka had been under intense criticism and that this had led to a "siege mentality, with accent on safety and non-risk taking".<sup>191</sup> It was also noted that "the programme and the staff team have lacked clear, cohesive, visionary leadership for a period".<sup>192</sup>

A ██████████ Audit found that despite the Regulations and a number of reports, many staff were uncertain about what they were actually permitted to do.<sup>193</sup> The reports and regulations and changes to departmental policies led to anxiety and unsettledness among staff in ██████████.<sup>194</sup> At this time there were also a number of staff vacancies, including the resignation of the recently-appointed principal and a perceived over-use of wage workers.<sup>195</sup>

In 1989, the audit team found that internal controls needed reviewing and formal monitoring systems should be set up for all aspects of the operation. Staff training

<sup>184</sup> Notes and recommendations re development at Owairaka Boys' Home, 22/11/84, Owairaka Profile, F5000002388340.

<sup>185</sup> Notes and recommendations re development at Owairaka Boys' Home, 22/11/84, F5000002388340.

<sup>186</sup> Annual Report 1986, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>187</sup> Annual Report 1985, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>188</sup> Circular Memorandum 1985/76, 29/4/85, Owairaka Profile, F50000023688641.

<sup>189</sup> Annual Report 1986, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>190</sup> Annual Report 1986, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>191</sup> ██████████

<sup>192</sup> ██████████

<sup>193</sup> ██████████

<sup>194</sup> ██████████

<sup>195</sup> ██████████

needs also needed addressing but the more positive attitude of staff since the 1988 audit was noted.<sup>196</sup>

Fewer staff meetings were held in 1990 compared to 1989. Internal memoranda appeared available to all RSWs. The Centre Unit changed its role depending on who was on duty, from a closed or semi-closed to an open unit.<sup>197</sup>

## Schooling

There was discussion in 1959 about the need for a school at Owairaka given that up to 20 of the 42 boys in residence were considered unsuitable to attend local schools. The need for further investigation and the need to guard against 'empire building' was noted.<sup>198</sup> Later that year the District Child Welfare Officer noted a number of limitations existed with local schools in terms of the suitability of their programmes and distance from Owairaka. In addition, the large number of boys considered unsuitable for local schools created problems within the institution as they had "rather too little constructive work to do".<sup>199</sup> After one week in residence, communication occurred with the Education Inspectorate in regard to any boy not at school.

An Inspection Report in May/June 1967 noted that the new school building had arrived and should be operational within weeks.<sup>200</sup> The school, called the Activity Centre, was situated down the end of the playing fields. In mid-1967 the teacher was frequently absent due to illness, and one of the residential staff took over the running of the school in his absence. The Inspector noted that this was unsatisfactory.

Schooling was provided at the Activity Centre in 1976, although it was not used by boys on very short stays.<sup>201</sup>

The school was gutted by fire in 1979 after it was set alight by returning absconders.<sup>202</sup> Prefabricated classrooms replaced the existing buildings and redecorations were done. Both teachers appeared reluctant to take in pupils and both transferred. The school was closed for most of 1979.<sup>203</sup> By the end of 1979, permanent Post-Primary level appointments had not been made and the school was to start the year with a temporary teacher.<sup>204</sup> However, an Inspection Report noted that it was closed for part of 1980.<sup>205</sup>

The new Head Teacher in 1980 noted the inappropriateness of attempting to run the Activity Centre like a conventional school. Close liaison with residential staff was evident, with boys regularly showing their work to "masters".<sup>206</sup> All boys of school age, plus any older boy who wanted to, attended the school and during 1980 only

<sup>196</sup> Audit Report, March 1989, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>197</sup> Audit Report, March 1990, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>198</sup> Extract from notes of a Superintendent's meeting, 10/7/59, Owairaka Education 19352.

<sup>199</sup> M Lyons, DCWO to District Superintendent Education, 23/10/59, Owairaka Education 19532.

<sup>200</sup> Hayes, Inspection Report May/June 1967, Owairaka Profile 19532.

<sup>201</sup> *You and Owairaka*, 1976, Owairaka Profile F5000002388449.

<sup>202</sup> Annual Report 1979, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>203</sup> Annual Report 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990; Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732, para 9.

<sup>204</sup> Annual Report 1979, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>205</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732, para 9.

<sup>206</sup> Annual Report 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

one boy was sent out of school for unmanageable behaviour.<sup>207</sup> The Principal was asked to provide follow up comment and noted that "it has always been our policy and intention that the boys of school age were to attend the school and numbers are then made up of those past the school age wishing to attend".<sup>208</sup> Problems determining who was school age (i.e. who was 15 or under) and problems with sudden influxes of new boys were noted and systems had been put in place to ensure boys attended school as soon as possible. It was also noted that a teacher position was currently vacant and that this was not unusual.<sup>209</sup>

An Inspection Report in 1980 found 12-14 boys in school at the time of their visit and noted that the Secondary School Inspector had wanted this number doubled to accommodate some of the over 15-year old boys.<sup>210</sup>

A temporary teacher was appointed in term 3 of 1981 to ensure educational programmes were available to boys in secure.<sup>211</sup> Adequate school cover in secure was still an issue at the end of 1982.<sup>212</sup> In 1983, a new part-time position focused on individual remedial work, including preparation for taking the driver's licence test.<sup>213</sup>

1982 was a settled year in the school but there were ongoing concerns about how to provide a useful programme in a short-stay institution.<sup>214</sup> As well as informal meeting between school staff and RSWs, a formal fortnightly meeting was added.<sup>215</sup>

The Head Teacher was instructed by the Senior Inspector at the Education Department not to accept children aged 10, 11, 12 or 13 into Owairaka school. The Principal was concerned that this meant 8 children currently in the residence could not attend school, given the Human Rights Commission and Johnston Reports.<sup>216</sup> Concern was also expressed at this time and again at the end of March about the lack of education in the secure unit.<sup>217</sup>

Relations between school and residence appeared good, with the Principal noting in 1984 that it would be difficult to improve on them. Extended facilities for staff breaks also improved relations between the groups of staff because they could have tea breaks together.<sup>218</sup>

In 1985, about 250 of the 600 boys admitted each year attended the Activity Centre.<sup>219</sup> Rapid turnover and short-stay meant individually-tailored programmes with subjects relevant to the boys' lives.<sup>220</sup> Given that most boys at Owairaka had a history of school problems, the philosophy of the Activity Centre was to avoid the

<sup>207</sup> Annual Report 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>208</sup> A Ricketts, Principal to Regional Director, 26/6/81, Owairaka Education F5000002381990.

<sup>209</sup> A Ricketts, Principal to Regional Director, 26/6/81, Owairaka Education F5000002381990.

<sup>210</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732 para 9.

<sup>211</sup> Annual Report 1981, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990, p3.

<sup>212</sup> Annual Report 1978, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>212</sup> Annual Report 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990; DT Read, Head Teacher to A Ricketts Principal 2/11/82, Owairaka Education F5000002389200.

<sup>213</sup> Annual Report, 1983, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>214</sup> Annual Report 1978, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>214</sup> Annual Report 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>215</sup> Annual Report 1978, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>215</sup> Annual Report 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>216</sup> A Ricketts, Principal to Regional Director, 18/3/83, Owairaka Education, F5000002389200.

<sup>217</sup> A Ricketts, Principal to Regional Director, 28/3/83, Owairaka Education, F5000002389200.

<sup>218</sup> Annual Report, 1984, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>219</sup> "Youths offend to return home" *Central Leader*, 20/8/85, Owairaka Profile F5000002388340.

<sup>220</sup> "Youths offend to return home" *Central Leader*, 20/8/85, Owairaka Profile F5000002388340.

type of teacher/pupil relationship found in secondary schools, as well as avoiding punishment/reward systems and the marking of work.<sup>221</sup> The number of boys attending on any given day was about 10, with an increase in older boys in 1985.<sup>222</sup> As stay at Owairaka shortened further, the moral of the teaching staff was affected. Staff felt that they would just be starting to make progress with a boy when he would have to leave Owairaka.<sup>223</sup>

A day school was piloted in 1986 with one ex-resident who was living at a local family home attending at Owairaka to do Correspondence School lessons.<sup>224</sup>

A 1989 audit found the school programme needed to be better integrated with the programme in the residence. At that time between 6-15 boys attended, with attendance of over 15 year olds irregular.<sup>225</sup> The school programme consisted of SRA reading laboratories and one-off lessons on social awareness life skills and health issues. The Audit team thought that maths and further reading programmes should be developed.<sup>226</sup> Activities such as wood carving, weightlifting and computer time were used as rewards.<sup>227</sup>

A 1990 audit found a well-equipped school with enthusiastic teachers and moves to run programmes such as music and carving in after school hours.<sup>228</sup>

## Absconding

Frequent abscondings appear to be an enduring feature of Owairaka, although from what was available on file, there is little mention of the issue before the mid-70s. In 1977, it was noted that doubling up of boys in secure rooms allowed them to discuss plans to abscond.<sup>229</sup>

There were 225 abscondings in 1979 and 172 in 1980.<sup>230</sup> Most absconders in 1980 were returned by the Police.<sup>231</sup> Absconders were re-admitted to the secure unit.

There were 300 abscondings during 1981, with a core of 73 repeat absconders running away up to 8 times each.<sup>232</sup> During 1982, there were 282 abscondings.<sup>233</sup> Although there was a steep rise in admissions in 1983, the absconding rate per admissions went down, although a total of 366 abscondings were recorded.<sup>234</sup>

<sup>221</sup> Annual Report 1981, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990, p3.

<sup>222</sup> Annual Report 1985, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>223</sup> Annual Report 1985, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>224</sup> Annual Report 1986, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>225</sup> Audit Report, March 1989, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>226</sup> Audit Report, March 1989, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>227</sup> Audit Report, March 1989, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>228</sup> Audit Report, March 1990, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>229</sup> SJ Stanton, Acting Director Owairaka to Director-General, 12/5/77, Owairaka Secure, F5000002388339.

<sup>230</sup> Annual Report 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>231</sup> Annual Report 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>232</sup> Annual Report 1981, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990, p2

<sup>233</sup> Annual Report 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>234</sup> Annual Report, 1983, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

In 1984 it was noted that the absconding rate impacted unfavourably on the total Owairaka programme.<sup>235</sup> In 1985, absconding was described as being a continuing major concern.<sup>236</sup>

Of 1022 admissions in 1986, there were 449 abscondings.<sup>237</sup>

## Secure care

In 1958, the institution had one secure room, which was a normal bedroom, but with a steel door and windows. The room was lockable and was locked at night.<sup>238</sup>

Approval was sought for modifications to the secure unit in 1969.<sup>239</sup> In 1970 it was noted that the secure unit theoretically had room for 6 boys, but that it was frequently overcrowded.<sup>240</sup>

Apart from an average stay of 3 days in secure in 1980, mentioned below, there is almost no data on file about how long boys stayed in the secure unit.

A request for additional staff to provide double night cover in secure was supported by the Director-General of Education in 1970. The correspondence noted that secure was "always overcrowded" and the institution affected by high rates of admission beyond the control of staff.<sup>241</sup> The Principal was often called to secure in the night to deal with disturbances.<sup>242</sup>

The modifications to secure took place sometime between 1970 and 1977. After the modifications there were 9 rooms, each with 2 built-in bunks.<sup>243</sup> The modifications were achieved by deleting the existing dining room and work room (this later led to complaints about boys eating in their rooms – a dining room was added in 1982). The modifications were done as a short-term measure while the Mt Roskill remand centre was being built (this facility never eventuated).<sup>244</sup>

The lack of night staff in secure was said to create potential liability for the department in 1976.<sup>245</sup> During 1975 and 1976 there were a number of concerns about a lack of staff cover and the increasingly older, more sophisticated and violent secure residents. Three or four boys a month were proving particularly disturbing and a number of attacks on staff were recorded. The Principal wrote outlining his concerns about restraining violent behaviour given the adoption of a policy for staff

<sup>235</sup> BM Manchester for Director-General to Regional Director Auckland, 17/8/84, Owairaka Secure F5000002388449.

<sup>236</sup> Circular Memorandum 1985/76, 29/4/85, Owairaka Profile, F50000023688641.

<sup>237</sup> Annual Report 1986, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>238</sup> 'Life in the Auckland Boys' Home' *Auckland Star*, 27/9/58, Owairaka Profile, 19352.

<sup>239</sup> KJ Flint, DWCO to Superintendent 28/2/69, Owairaka Secure F5000002388320.

<sup>240</sup> J Ferguson for Director-General Education to Mr Ball, 22/12/70, Owairaka Staffing, 19352.

<sup>241</sup> J Ferguson for Director-General Education to Mr Ball, 22/12/70, Owairaka Staffing, 19352.

<sup>242</sup> A Ricketts, Principal, Owairaka to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 25/8/77 Owairaka Secure F5000002388339.

<sup>243</sup> Memo, SJ Stanton, Assistant Director (Social Work) to Director-General 7/12/77, Owairaka Secure F5000002388339.

<sup>244</sup> A Ricketts, Principal to Director, Residential Services, undated 1983, Owairaka Reports, F5000002388449.

<sup>245</sup> Memo, SJ Stanton, Assistant Director (Social Work) to Director-General 2/11/76, Owairaka Profile F5000002388339.

not to use any kind of physical force except in self-defence.<sup>246</sup> Little help was found in the Courts, with judges refusing to remand to adult jails or from Police, when called to assist with violent behaviour in secure.<sup>247</sup>

An incident report in 1975 responds to a group absconding out of the bathroom window in the secure unit, using a fitting stolen from the bathroom and carried back to a bedroom in a towel. The report notes problems with youths from the community climbing onto the roof of the secure unit at night and talking to residents. Plans by outsiders and former residents to attack night staff for keys and release boys from secure were detected. The intercom system was used at random intervals during the night as well as hourly visits as there was no dedicated night staff in secure.<sup>248</sup> A further request for night cover in secure was made in 1976, noting 3 recent dangerous incidents. Boys were frequently caught trying to loosen fixtures to attempt escape.<sup>249</sup> In one incident 3 young men absconded, returned with a shot gun and were found by Police lying in wait for the night staff to come on duty. In the ensuing chase, the gun was fired twice, once at the Police car.<sup>250</sup>

The appointment of 3 Assistant Housemasters in secure at night sometime between June and August 1977 was reported to be most effective, with the unit more settled.<sup>251</sup>

Detailed instructions for the operation of the secure unit were issued by the Principal in February 1977.<sup>252</sup> Staff were requested to give directions to inmates in a manner that commanded respect, with no unnecessary shouting of orders. Staff were also to model good behaviour at all times. Boys had to stand whenever a door was opened (except when they were in bed at night) and address staff members as "Sir". Admission procedures, including showering, delousing and clothing searches were set out. Rooms were searched every day at 4pm. The booklet "You and Owairaka" was to be issued to each boy and retrieved after he had read it. Boys on duty were referred to in these instructions as "chore boys" and had to do dishes and cleaning, including daily sweeping of the exercise yard. Each boy had to clean his room, including the toilet, daily. Showers were twice daily after the morning and evening physical training (PT). PT was held for 15 minutes in the morning, 25 minutes in the afternoon with a third session (running only) at 6.30pm. Any boy unduly distressed or tired was to be excused from PT and returned to his room. Parents were allowed to visit daily – smoking was not permitted and food could not be accepted by visitors. Good behaviour was rewarded by participation in activities in the Recreation Room.<sup>253</sup> These instructions appeared to still be in place, unaltered, in 1982.<sup>254</sup>

In 1977, the Principal advised the Director-General that it would be impractical to comply with the policy to notify the Director-General every time that more than one boy occupied a secure room, due to the frequency with which doubling up took place.<sup>255</sup>

<sup>246</sup> A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka to Director, Auckland, 8/9/76, Owairaka Secure F5000002388339.

<sup>247</sup> A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka to Director, Auckland, 8/9/76, Owairaka Secure F5000002388339.

<sup>248</sup> A Ricketts, Principal to Director-General 11/12/75, Owairaka Secure 19352.

<sup>249</sup> A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 19/5/76, Owairaka Secure F5000002185732.

<sup>250</sup> A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 11/5/77 Owairaka Secure F5000002388339.

<sup>251</sup> A Ricketts, Principal, Owairaka to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 25/8/77, Owairaka Secure F5000002388339.

<sup>252</sup> Owairaka Boys' Home Secure Unit Instructions, February 1977, Owairaka Secure, 32995.

<sup>253</sup> Owairaka Boys' Home Secure Unit Instructions, February 1977, Owairaka Secure, 32995.

<sup>254</sup> Excerpt from Owairaka Boys' Home Secure Unit Instructions, 1982, Owairaka Secure F500002388339.

<sup>255</sup> A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka to Director-General, 7/12/77, Owairaka Secure F5000002388339.



In 1979, the secure care facility was described as "inadequate for the work expected of it".<sup>256</sup> There was concern that boys were required to eat in their rooms (the rooms also contained a toilet) but it was considered too dangerous to allow boys to have meals outside of their rooms, especially given the overcrowded conditions.<sup>257</sup>

Boys were admitted through secure, although some did not formally enter the unit, rather they were initially processed in the reception area that formed part of secure.<sup>258</sup> The practice was a result of the physical layout rather than from a policy to admit through secure. This layout was criticised in 1980. A shower curtain was erected just outside the duty room to offer some privacy when boys were required to strip off, but they then had to be escorted from there to the shower.<sup>259</sup>

In 1980, about one-third of admissions spent a night in secure.<sup>260</sup> Forty percent of these remained in secure immediately after admission for a variety of reasons including previous absconding, unsettled behaviour or because they were in transit to other institutions or had been admitted during the night.<sup>261</sup> All admissions and discharges were approved by either the Principal or Assistant Principal and reviews were conducted twice daily.<sup>262</sup> The Principal and Assistant Principal made regular visits and provided close oversight of the secure unit.<sup>263</sup>

The 1980 Inspection found that a comprehensive yet semi-formal programme operated in secure and boys spent a reasonable amount of time out of their cubicles.<sup>264</sup>

In 1981, an incident report on a staff member being punched by a boy in secure resulting in the need to remove his spleen, considered that the staff member may have avoided the incident by more skilful intervention. The former "military discipline" that existed at Owairaka was noted. Another staff member reported that he had had no further trouble from the boy who punched the staff member after he had "manhandled" the boy without damage to anyone.<sup>265</sup>

In 1981, 273 boys out of a total of 685 admissions were admitted to secure at some point in their stay.<sup>266</sup> In 1981, a part-time teacher ensured an educational programme was offered in secure and remained with the boys to supervise their work.<sup>267</sup> However, the programme was suspended when staff could not be retained.<sup>268</sup>

By 1980, a dedicated team of staff worked in secure, tending only to work in that part of the institution. While this allowed for specialisation, an Inspection Report noted the need for staff to be sometimes rostered in the open unit, especially so as to not become too custodial in their outlook.<sup>269</sup> That report also noted the need for irregular rather than regular night checks throughout the institution to improve effectiveness.

<sup>256</sup> Annual Report 1978, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>257</sup> A Ricketts, Principal Owairaka to Regional Manager, 10/4/79, Owairaka Secure, F5000002388339.

<sup>258</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>259</sup> Extract from Mr Grainger's notes, Owairaka Admissions, F5000002388339.

<sup>260</sup> Inspection Report, 1980, Owairaka Reports, F5000002185732, para 4.1.

<sup>261</sup> Annual Report 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>262</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>263</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>264</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>265</sup> SJ Stanton for Regional Director to Director-General 8/9/81 Owairaka Secure F5000002388449.

<sup>266</sup> Annual Report 1981, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990, p2.

<sup>267</sup> Annual Report 1981, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>268</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732. para 6.7.

<sup>269</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

At this time, supervision in secure was adequate, with the Principal and Assistance Principal reviewing all cases for possible discharge from secure twice daily.<sup>270</sup> The Inspection Report noted that boys in secure were only very rarely involved in day work and that only basic cleaning duties and routines were carried out, in line with Owairaka's general policy not to run extensive day work training or jobs for boys.<sup>271</sup>

A major upgrade of secure took place in 1982, with a dining room and covered courtyard added, as well as a new reception area. The reception area contained interview rooms, visiting rooms, showers and garden area, and was used for admissions instead of secure.<sup>272</sup> Head Office instructions concerning time spent in secure and the level of approvals required were incorporated into secure procedures.<sup>273</sup>

An Inspection Visit in September 1982 found the noise of the renovations deafening but inspectors were generally satisfied with the secure unit. In response to criticism about boys eating in their rooms, dining was provided in an outdoor courtyard, weather permitting. The recreation area was extensively used. Returned absconders made up about 50% of secure admissions and the average stay was about 3 days. Staff shortages were sometimes experienced.<sup>274</sup>

The average length of stay in secure declined from 4 days in 1979 to 3 days in 1983.<sup>275</sup>

By 1983, 50% of boys were admitted directly to secure, many being returned absconders.<sup>276</sup> During 1983, there were 5 incidents of residents assaulting staff, with staff off work for a number of weeks as a result of their injuries.<sup>277</sup> Although secure could accommodate 18 boys, numbers were often limited to 9 in order to be able to provide adequate supervision.<sup>278</sup> Concern was raised about the mixing of older and younger children in secure.<sup>279</sup> A Senior RSW wrote to the Principal asking for written criteria for admission to secure because of discrepancies in admissions and in how long boys remained in the unit.<sup>280</sup> The same SRSW wrote to the Principal again in mid-1977 concerned that the secure unit was becoming more and more like a prison, and that it disadvantaged some boys held there. He noted that boys were sometimes let out of their rooms even though this compromised staff safety, because boys viewed being locked up as punishment. Further, a number of boys were young and emotionally disturbed and were in Owairaka because of difficulty in placing them, rather than because of any offending on their part.<sup>281</sup> Correspondence from the Principal outlines a number of concerns including overcrowding and mixing of inmates, and also seeks clear guidelines from Head Office, given the role confusion between social work and custodial duties.<sup>282</sup>

<sup>270</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, J Blair, A Rongo Raea, 1980, Owairaka Reports, F5000002185732, para 6.2.

<sup>271</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732, para 6.8.

<sup>272</sup> Annual Report 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>273</sup> Annual Report 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>274</sup> Inspection Report, 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>275</sup> Secure Statistics 1979-1983, Boys Regional Institutions, Owairaka Secure F5000002186500.

<sup>276</sup> Annual Report, 1983, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>277</sup> Annual Report, 1983, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>278</sup> Annual Report, 1983, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>279</sup> Annual Report, 1983, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>280</sup> L Thompson SBSW to Principal Owairaka, 25/3/83 Owairaka Secure F5000002388339.

<sup>281</sup> L Thompson, SRSW to A Ricketts Principal Owairaka, 14/7/83 Owairaka Secure, F5000002388339.

<sup>282</sup> A Ricketts, Principal to Director of Residential Services, Auckland, May 1983, Owairaka Secure F5000002388449; Annual Report 1983 Owairaka Reports F5000002388449.

A new reception area built in 1983 improved matters and allowed for admission into the reception unit rather than directly into secure.<sup>283</sup> This addressed an area of concern from the Human Rights Commission Report.

The trends and concerns of the early 1980s were still apparent in 1984.<sup>284</sup> Toilet covers were removed from secure in 1984 after a number of incidents where they were used to break windows.<sup>285</sup>

High numbers of boys in secure was of concern in 1984 and were in part due to remands into secure by Judges.<sup>286</sup> Disturbances caused by mixed age groups and overcrowding, including attacks on staff, led to a limit of 9 boys in secure.<sup>287</sup> Incidences of extreme pressure placed on Owairaka secure due to intakes from Wesleydale were noted in August 1984, when it was also accepted that boys needed to be confined to their rooms at times to allow the unit's safe operation.<sup>288</sup>

In 1985, about 50% of admissions were held in secure, most of them for less than 24 hours, but a small number for longer periods (one boy being in secure for 108 days that year).<sup>289</sup> Overcrowding was a problem in 1985, as was stand-over tactics by older boys and a lack of ventilation in the summer months.<sup>290</sup> Courts were ordering boys to secure care at this time, and there was a lack of clarity at times between the roles of the Probation Office and the Department.<sup>291</sup> Boys admitted under Secure Orders for sexual offences tended to stay in secure for long periods, adding to overcrowding issues.<sup>292</sup> An incident of one of these boys being intimidated appears in 1986.<sup>293</sup> There was again concern about a number of young admissions.<sup>294</sup>

A full report on numbers and trends under secure care court orders was supplied to Head Office in April 1985. Once the decision was made not to admit boys to Mt Eden prison, admissions to Owairaka secure rose by 84%, with an increase in secure custody orders of 150%.<sup>295</sup> Numbers of 16 and 17 year-old admissions also rose as did cases attending either the District or High Court. There was also thought to be a correlation between overcrowding in the unit and the number of disturbances and attacks on staff.<sup>296</sup> A medium-secure unit of 17 beds was planned.<sup>297</sup>

The rise in remands from the Courts and the effect of older, more sophisticated young offenders on the institution included more incidents of intimidation by visitors, the smuggling in of marijuana, an increase of assaults on staff and a more belligerent attitude of boys towards staff.<sup>298</sup> The sharp increase in admissions

<sup>283</sup> Inspection Report 20/8/83 Owairaka Reports F5000002388449.

<sup>284</sup> Annual Report, 1984, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>285</sup> Annual Report, 1984, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>286</sup> Annual Report, 1984, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>287</sup> Annual Report, 1984, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>288</sup> BM Manchester for Director-General to Regional Director Auckland, 17/8/84, Owairaka Secure F5000002388449.

<sup>289</sup> Annual Report 1985, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>290</sup> Quarterly Report 1/10/85, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>291</sup> Annual Report 1985, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>292</sup> Quarterly Report 1/10/85, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>293</sup> Quarterly Report 23/4/86, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>294</sup> Quarterly Report 4/7/85, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>295</sup> Comparison of figures for last quarter 1984 and first quarter 1985, Response to Head Office Memorandum of 29/3/85: Owairaka Secure Unit, to Regional Director 12/4/85, Owairaka Secure F5000002386577.

<sup>296</sup> Response to Head Office Memorandum of 29/3/85: Owairaka Secure Unit, to Regional Director 12/4/85, Owairaka Secure F5000002386577.

<sup>297</sup> Circular Memorandum 1985/76, 29/4/85, Owairaka Profile, F50000023688641.

<sup>298</sup> G Comber, Director Regional Residential Services to Director-General, 13/5/85 Owairaka Secure F5000002386577.

following the decision not to admit youths to Mt Eden led to concerns that the development plans for Owairaka may have become inadequate.<sup>299</sup> The Director of Regional Residential Services stated "clearly the unit has operated under severe pressure and been forced to take too many risks".<sup>300</sup> The subsequent Director of Regional Residential Services acknowledged that the statistics provided appeared to substantiate the claims of the Principal for additional secure beds.<sup>301</sup> He also noted the embarrassment and shame experienced by boys sharing secure rooms having to toilet in front of their roommate.<sup>302</sup>

The secure unit was less crowded in 1986. Clarification of the legal position meant that the Principal was back in charge of secure admissions, and not judges by way of Secure Orders, and so bed numbers were better able to be managed.<sup>303</sup>

A 1988 Audit found personal privacy breached by rooms in secure that had two beds and a toilet and no screens.<sup>304</sup> Double bunking, or putting two boys in a secure room, was a concern of an audit a year later, when concerns were also raised about the low quality of the secure programme.<sup>305</sup> This theme was picked up in the 1989 Audit which found the programme focussed mainly on physical recreation and up to 10 videos a week, with a lack of any vocational training or programmes on issues such as relationships, social skills or effective communication.<sup>306</sup>

The position in regard to searches was clarified in March 1986 by Head Office. Strip searches involving a visual scan but no physical touching were permitted only in the case of admissions to secure. Body searches could be conducted by the Boys' Home doctor.<sup>307</sup>

Boys under 15 in secure attended the school programme in 1990.<sup>308</sup>

## Discipline

In 1958, a system of privileges operated.<sup>309</sup> Group punishments were common, where a group of boys would lose privileges because of the bad behaviour of one boy. This was described as being usually effective in stopping the behaviour.<sup>310</sup>

Methods of controlling behaviour at Owairaka were affected by the short-stay, high turnover nature of the institution, making methods like behaviour modification less suitable. In 1980, Inspectors found that although secure was occasionally used to control behaviour, it was not used as a threat. The Inspectors also found that the

<sup>299</sup> G Comber, Director Regional Residential Services to Director-General, 13/5/85 Owairaka Secure F5000002386577.

<sup>300</sup> G Comber, Director Regional Residential Services to Director-General, 13/5/85 Owairaka Secure F5000002386577.

<sup>301</sup> M Doolan, Director Regional Residential Services to Director-General, 5/6/85 Owairaka Secure F5000002386577.

<sup>302</sup> M Doolan, Director Regional Residential Services to Director-General, 5/6/85 Owairaka Secure F5000002386577.

<sup>303</sup> Annual Report 1986, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>304</sup> Audit report, March 1988, Owairaka reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>305</sup> Audit Report, March 1989, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>306</sup> Audit Report, March 1989, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>307</sup> Director-General to Regional Director 13/3/86, Owairaka Admissions F5000002388340.

<sup>308</sup> Audit Report, March 1990, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>309</sup> 'Life in the Auckland Boys' Home' *Auckland Star*, 27/9/58, Owairaka Profile 19352.

<sup>310</sup> 'Life in the Auckland Boys' Home' *Auckland Star*, 27/9/58, Owairaka Profile 19352.

boys were largely left to control their own behaviour within very broad boundaries, that relationships between the boys and staff were good, and that boys showed respect for staff.<sup>311</sup> Home leave was not removed unless a very serious incident occurred.<sup>312</sup> In conclusion the Inspection found an efficiently run institution where staff maintained “quiet control”, although it was noted staff pressures existed in the open wing.<sup>313</sup>

## Physical punishment

“In the odd case we use a whack on the bottom”, the Manager was quoted by the media as saying in 1958.<sup>314</sup>

Problems in 1975 with noise at night in the secure unit were dealt with by corporal punishment.<sup>315</sup>

An attendant in secure admitted to twice making a boy touch his toes while he hit the boys’ buttocks with a sandshoe. The attendant was severely reprimanded for this action. The boy subsequently made a complaint to the Auckland Committee On Racism and Discrimination (ACORD).<sup>316</sup>

Another boy alleged use of physical training as punishment at Owairaka in 1978. He claimed being forced to run around an asphalt triangle until he got blisters, being made to run and do push-ups until he couldn’t do any more and being kicked and punched by staff.<sup>317</sup>

Several newspaper articles appeared about the confinement of a 13 year old (thought to be 14) to secure in 1978. He alleged he was made to do physical training barefoot, was only issued with a t-shirt and shorts (and no underwear) and witnessed a boy get beaten for refused to do physical training. He also alleged being locked up for 23 hours a day. In response the Institution said that the boy had given his age as 14, that the boy would have been excused from physical training if he had asked, and that although underpants were issued on request, most boys preferred not to wear them on account of the heat.<sup>318</sup>

Another 1978 article involved a former inmate claiming that “Owairaka was the worst of any institutions I saw”. The boy alleged that he was made to run barefoot on a rough field in all weather. He also claimed that physical training was used as a group punishment and that boys were sometimes exercised until they vomited – in which case they had to clean up their vomit and continue exercising.<sup>319</sup>

The NZ Herald ran an article in April 1978 where a former staff member alleged events in secure including a boy being pulled from his bed by the hair; a boy dumped on the concrete floor for refusing to exercise; boys made to run for 2 hours for talking; and boys kicked for not doing press-ups properly. Another former staff

<sup>311</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys’ Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732. para 7.

<sup>312</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys’ Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732. para 7.

<sup>313</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys’ Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732. para 25.

<sup>314</sup> “Life in the Auckland Boys’ Home” *Auckland Star*, 27/9/58 Owairaka Profile 19352.

<sup>315</sup> A Ricketts, Principal to Director-General 11/12/75, Owairaka Secure 19352.

<sup>316</sup> KJ Flint, Director Owairaka to Director-General 21/4/78, Owairaka Incidents 32995.

<sup>317</sup> “Boy recalls ordeal on remand at Owairaka” *Evening Post* 26/4/78, Owairaka Incidents 32995.

<sup>318</sup> “Boy Detainee Said He Was 14” *NZ Herald* 11/4/78 Owairaka Incidents 32995.

<sup>319</sup> “Bad memories of 13 years as a State ward” *Hawkes’ Bay Herald-Tribune* 27/4/78, Owairaka Incidents 32955.

member quoted in the article said that he had never seen an incident of staff assaulting residents.<sup>320</sup>

The ACORD inquiry followed, and recorded allegations from a number of former residents about excessive PT and staff violence during the 1950s, 60s and 70s.<sup>321</sup> ACORD complained to the Human Rights Commission who reported in 1982.<sup>322</sup>

Although not alleging physical force, a 1980 Inspection Report noted a pleasing change to the physical education programme in the secure unit, because recreation had been previously run on "a very formal and perhaps even a rigorous basis".<sup>323</sup>

A 1980 Inspection found that the punishment register was closed when younger boys moved out on the opening of Wesleydale. The strap was transferred to Wesleydale and strapping was not thought appropriate for the older Owairaka boys.<sup>324</sup>

## Drugs, alcohol and tattoos

A camp for 8 boys who admitted a history of solvent abuse was held in 1984.<sup>325</sup> The visiting doctor at that time also had a particular interest in treating cases of solvent abuse.<sup>326</sup>

Glue sniffing and alcohol abuse were growing concerns in 1985, with boys returning hung-over from home leave.<sup>327</sup>

## Smoking

In 1976, smoking under supervision was permitted several times a day for boys over 15. A booklet distributed to all boys on admission pointed out that smoking could be injurious to one's health and that it was a crime for anyone under 15 to smoke.<sup>328</sup>

In 1980, Inspectors found that the policy was that no boys were allowed to smoke in secure, and staff smoked in a small room off the duty room, out of sight of the boys.<sup>329</sup> In the open institution, boys over 15 were allowed to smoke at set times and cigarettes were issued by staff.<sup>330</sup>

In 1990, cigarettes were available at cost price from the canteen.<sup>331</sup>

<sup>320</sup> "Violence at home true, say ex-staff" *NZ Herald*, 13/4/78, Owairaka Incidents 32995.

<sup>321</sup> ACORD, 1978, Social Welfare Children's Homes: report on an inquiry held on June 11 1978, ACORD, Auckland.

<sup>322</sup> Human Rights Commission, 1982, Report of the Human Rights Commission on representations by ACORD on Children and Young Person's Homes administered by the Department of Social Welfare, HRC.

<sup>323</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732, para 6.5

<sup>324</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732, para 23.

<sup>325</sup> Annual Report, 1984, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>326</sup> Annual Report, 1984, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>327</sup> Annual Report 1985, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>328</sup> *You and Owairaka*, 1976, Owairaka Profile F5000002388449.

<sup>329</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732. para 6.8

<sup>330</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732. para 16.

<sup>331</sup> Audit Report, March 1990, Owairaka Reports, ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

## Contact with Field Social Workers

During 1979, closer links with Districts were said to result in more selective admissions. Residential Social Workers were also gradually moving into a more integrated role with community social workers and the community.<sup>332</sup>

A 1980 Inspection Report found a lack of case material in over half of all admission files and problems with delays in getting information.<sup>333</sup> A 1982 Inspection found relations generally good, with regular liaison and only a few districts requiring constant reminders.<sup>334</sup>

The success of the home leave programme was said to be due, in part, to cooperation with field staff.<sup>335</sup>

District and field staff became less involved in the mid-80s as the role of various justice agencies increased in accord with the growing remand function of the institution.<sup>336</sup>

A 1987 Audit found Owairaka very poorly served by field colleagues, especially in the lack of information provided about admissions.<sup>337</sup> Information flow was still concerning the 1989 Audit team, with information also needing to go out to Field Social Workers about Court appearances.<sup>338</sup> However, in April 1989, Field Social Workers commented favourably about the co-operative attitude of Owairaka staff to staff in the field.<sup>339</sup>

In 1990, feedback from Field Social Workers and Youth Justice Co-ordinators was minimal and Family Group Conferences had not had any impact on residential programmes.<sup>340</sup>

## Contact with community

In the late 1970s groups from the community used the Owairaka gymnasium for indoor basketball but this had ceased by 1980.<sup>341</sup>

Community groups visiting Owairaka in the early 1980s included the Rotaract Club, the St Vincent de Paul Society and the Youth Guidance Service.

The Rotaract club provided for the recreation room to be fully carpeted in 1979.<sup>342</sup>

<sup>332</sup> Annual Report 1979, Owairaka Reports, F5000002185732

<sup>333</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732, para 24.

<sup>334</sup> Inspection Report, 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>335</sup> Annual Report, 1984, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>336</sup> Annual Report 1985, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>337</sup> Audit Report, 20/7/86, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>338</sup> Audit Report, March 1989, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One

<sup>339</sup> Assistant Director (Social Services) to Assistant Director-General, Northern Region, 14/4/89, Owairaka Profile F5000002185665.

<sup>340</sup> Audit Report, March 1990, Owairaka Reports ADM 21-6-208 Part One.

<sup>341</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732, para 18.2.

<sup>342</sup> Annual Report 1979, Owairaka Reports, F5000002185732

## Visiting committee

The booklet "You and Owairaka", first issued in 1976, mentioned the availability of the Visiting Committee. The names, addresses and phone numbers of the Committee were posted on notices throughout the residence.<sup>343</sup>

In 1980 only one committee member visited quarterly. An Inspection report found relationships good between the institution and the committee and that there was a lot of praise for the work being done at Owairaka.<sup>344</sup>

A new visiting committee visited occasionally during 1981.<sup>345</sup> Staff viewed the committee as "a useful safeguard against uninformed comment".<sup>346</sup> Information about the committee was displayed throughout Owairaka.<sup>347</sup> Visits by the committee were also occasional in 1982 with Inspectors noting a lack of interest by the committee in the institution.<sup>348</sup> In 1983 a newly appointed committee made 5 visits between May-December.<sup>349</sup> The visiting committee was active in 1984.<sup>350</sup>

In 1985, only the chairperson visited regularly and it was noted that more use could have been made of the Māori members on the committee if these members had been more available to visit.<sup>351</sup> In the 1986 Annual Report, the chairperson was described as a strong influence on the affairs of the institution.<sup>352</sup> This report was delivered late, and no report was received in 1987.<sup>353</sup>

## Contact with families

Contact with families was encouraged in 1958, with boys being allowed to go home approximately every 3 weeks.<sup>354</sup> By 1976, daily visits from parents (and other people by special arrangement) were permitted and weekend leave was considered.<sup>355</sup>

In 1979, more use was made of parent contact and in allowing frequent home visits which also gave an opportunity for assessment of the home situation.<sup>356</sup>

<sup>343</sup> You and Owairaka, Owairaka Profile, F5000002388449.

<sup>344</sup> Inspection Report, Owairaka Boys' Home, circa 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732, para 11

<sup>345</sup> Annual Report 1981, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>346</sup> Annual Report 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>347</sup> Annual Report 1981, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990, p6.

<sup>348</sup> Annual Report 1978, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>348</sup> Annual Report 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990; Inspection Report, 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>349</sup> Annual Report, 1983, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>350</sup> Annual Report, 1984, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>351</sup> Annual Report 1985, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>352</sup> Annual Report 1986, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>353</sup> Visiting Committee, Annual Reports, 1986, Owairaka Reports, F5000006661405; Visiting Committee, Annual Reports, 1987, Owairaka Reports, F5000006661404.

<sup>354</sup> "Life in the Auckland Boys' Home" *Auckland Star*, 27/9/58, Owairaka Profile 19532.

<sup>355</sup> *You and Owairaka*, 1976, Owairaka Profile F5000002388449.

<sup>356</sup> Annual Report 1979, Owairaka Reports, F5000002185732



The home leave programme ran successfully in 1980 and 1981.<sup>357</sup> Frequent leave aimed to keep the family unit in contact and appeared to reduce absconding.<sup>358</sup> In 1980, the new visiting area allowed more flexibility in the times families could visit.<sup>359</sup> Home leave was still popular and successful in 1982 and in 1983.<sup>360</sup>

Restrictions placed on home leave in October 1984, that is, it was not permitted for those boys appearing in the District Court on serious charges, created unsettled behaviour among boys who were not allowed to go home.<sup>361</sup> The Social Workers Manual clarified in 1985 that home leave was to be offered wherever a legal impediment did not exist, and that remand from court or containment in secure might prevent the arrangement of home leave.<sup>362</sup> It was also noted that many Field Social Workers used home leave to bring the family unit together.<sup>363</sup>

## Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements

Pre- discharge planning was difficult given the rapid turnover at Owairaka, but in 1980 the social worker developed a plan and placement in conjunction with the resident and family.<sup>364</sup>

Further attention was given to pre-discharge planning in 1982 with a shift to a rehabilitative focus and this required a more detailed knowledge of cases.<sup>365</sup> Difficulties in developing planning further due to increased admissions were acknowledged in 1983.<sup>366</sup> Similar factors were evident in 1985; the Liaison and Placement Officer was responsible for pre-discharge planning, but short-stay at Owairaka limited its effectiveness.<sup>367</sup>

<sup>357</sup> Annual Report 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990; Annual Report 1981, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990, p5.

<sup>358</sup> Annual Report 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>359</sup> Annual Report 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>360</sup> Annual Report 1978, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>360</sup> Annual Report 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990; Annual Report, 1983, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>361</sup> Annual Report, 1984, Owairaka Reports F5000002388340.

<sup>362</sup> Annual Report 1985, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>363</sup> Annual Report 1985, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>364</sup> Annual Report 1980, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>365</sup> Annual Report 1978, Owairaka Reports F5000002185732.

<sup>365</sup> Annual Report 1982, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>366</sup> Annual Report, 1983, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

<sup>367</sup> Annual Report 1985, Owairaka Reports F5000002381990.

## Chapter 2

# Wesleydale Boys' Home

### Physical description

Wesleydale Boys' Home was situated at 20 Radnor Road in Mt Roskill, Auckland. It was originally built in 1955 for the Methodist Children's Home and Orphanage with capacity for 63 children. In 1975, the Department of Social Welfare signed a five-year lease with the Auckland Methodist Central Mission.<sup>368</sup> The establishment of Wesleydale was approved on 16 February 1976 for a maximum of 24 boys using only one of the two wings (or dormitory blocks) originally commissioned for the Methodist Children's Home.<sup>369</sup> Wesleydale Boys' Home, an open institution which contained no secure facilities, was officially opened on 9 February 1976.<sup>370</sup> It was designed to take some of the pressure off Owairaka by providing a separate facility for younger boys.<sup>371</sup>

There was no gymnasium at Wesleydale.<sup>372</sup> There were initially no classrooms, so two of the Home's recreation rooms were used for schooling.<sup>373</sup> In early July 1976 three classrooms were completed at Wesleydale.<sup>374</sup>

Recommendation was made by a Senior Social Worker in May 1976 to utilise the second wing at Wesleydale due to the rising number of admissions.<sup>375</sup> It was commented on again by T Ball (position not recorded) in mid 1977 that there was need for additional accommodation at Wesleydale because of the higher number of boys in residence than had been expected. The opening of the unused wing in Wesleydale was mentioned and it was noted that "at the time this home was established it was felt that sooner or later the demands on us would necessitate this wing being opened up."<sup>376</sup> It was felt that this consideration was urgent and that upstairs staffing accommodation be looked into as well as that was rarely in use.<sup>377</sup> The creation of a secure unit was also considered due to Owairaka being "fully committed" and the possibility of increased capacity.<sup>378</sup>

<sup>368</sup> Minutes of Special Director-General's Meeting 26/03/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>369</sup> Minutes of Special Director-General's Meeting 26/03/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>370</sup> Annual Report 1978, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>371</sup> Memo, T Flynn, Housemaster & T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director Auckland, 21/11/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>372</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>373</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>374</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>375</sup> Memo, LTJ Pycroft, Senior Social Worker to Assistant Director (Social Work) Auckland, 21/05/76, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>376</sup> Report, T Ball, 03/06/77, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>377</sup> Report, T Ball, 03/06/77, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>378</sup> Report, T Ball, 03/06/77, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

In November 1977, due to the increasing number of admissions to Wesleydale, it was evident that a full size gymnasium, along with a minibus would be needed to assist with a comprehensive programme for the residents.<sup>379</sup> This was fulfilled in 1978 when a small gymnasium was erected and a minibus was also acquired for the institution.<sup>380</sup>

Overcrowding in the first two years meant that the recreation room was being used as a bedroom. This limited the use of recreation programmes.<sup>381</sup> These cramped conditions also made it difficult for the boys to move around and be supervised by staff which led to frayed tempers, formulation of absconding plans and increased tension on staff.<sup>382</sup> The Principal recommended that the east wing that was not in use be utilised to bring the maximum capacity up to 40 and that staffing should be increased accordingly.<sup>383</sup>

The medical adviser for Wesleydale also held concern over the use of the recreation room as a dormitory and recommended that alternative sleeping arrangements be made. The reasons for this concern were given as the lack of privacy, possible overcrowding of the washing and lavatory facilities, the unsuitability of certain boys for communal sleeping arrangements, along with the diminished use of the recreation room.<sup>384</sup>

At the end of 1979 painting of the administration block and the boys' sleeping quarters had begun.<sup>385</sup> This was finished in 1980 and pin-up boards were added to the boys' bedrooms.<sup>386</sup> Future improvements that were wanted were carpeting of certain areas, fixing the tennis court, interior and exterior painting, installation of a new hot water and heating system and the addition of a school woodwork room and a swimming pool.<sup>387</sup>

In 1980 the lease for Wesleydale was renewed for a further six years.<sup>388</sup>

By the end of 1981 some of the interior painting was completed and the new hot water system had been installed. The improvements sought in 1980 were still wanted along with a hot water supply to the school toilet block, an upgrade in the laundry area and the senior wing boys shower block.<sup>389</sup>

In 1982 carpet was laid in the areas requested, the hot water supply to the school toilet block was completed and the upgrading of the senior boys shower block was finished.<sup>390</sup> The work to be started in 1983 was the painting of the exterior buildings, fixing the tennis court and the laying of the swimming pool.<sup>391</sup>

The swimming pool was completed in 1983 along with the improvements to the tennis court.<sup>392</sup> More carpeting, painting of exterior buildings, upgrade in central

<sup>379</sup> Memo, T Flynn, Housemaster & T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director Auckland, 21/11/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>380</sup> Annual Report 1978, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>381</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>382</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director Auckland, 1979, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>383</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director Auckland, 1979, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>384</sup> Letter, Dr ET Gilbert, Medical Advisor Wesleydale to T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale, 5/12/78, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>385</sup> Annual Report 1979, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>386</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>387</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>388</sup> Minutes of Special Director-General's Meeting 26/03/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>389</sup> Annual Report 1981, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>390</sup> Annual Report 1982, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>391</sup> Annual Report 1982, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>392</sup> Annual Report 1983, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

heating, larger gymnasium and other smaller work was still in the pipeline for 1984.<sup>393</sup>

In 1984 the Methodists indicated that they wished to sell the Wesleydale property due to motorway and railway development planned for the end of the 1980s.<sup>394</sup> In a meeting to discuss the reorganisation of residential services in Auckland it was agreed that Wesleydale should be phased out by developing alternative care programmes within the community for this younger age group by using Weymouth instead.<sup>395</sup> It was announced that the lease would not be renewed in September 1986 and because of this no major additions or alterations were envisaged for the next two years.<sup>396</sup>

The closure of the Home and the transfer of a short term care and assessment unit for boys of the Wesleydale age group to Weymouth was set for 23 August 1985.<sup>397</sup> There is no specific mention on file of when Wesleydale actually closed.

## Resident profile

Prior to the opening of Wesleydale Boys' Home in 1976, it was established by the department that the Home was to take all boys that were classed as children under the Children and Young Persons Act 1974, i.e. 10-13 year olds.<sup>398</sup> The Home was to provide for those on warrant and remand from the court, as well as medium-term treatment cases.<sup>399</sup> Although the intended age range was 10 – 13 years, there was to be some flexibility. "For example a difficult 8 year old or a 15 year old care and protection case could be better placed at Wesleydale. Similarly a difficult 12 year old might be better at Owairaka Boys Home."<sup>400</sup>

As for all Auckland district institutions, admissions extended across the North Island at Mercer in the south and from all points north to Kaitiaki.<sup>401</sup>

The admissions total was expected to be between 160-200 boys per annum.<sup>402</sup> The maximum number of boys at any given time was set at 24 boys.<sup>403</sup> This was still the maximum in March 1977, although there was bedding for 40.<sup>404</sup>

During the first twelve months that Wesleydale was open, exactly 200 boys passed through the Home.<sup>405</sup> Of these admissions, just over 50% were admissions from the

<sup>393</sup> Annual Report 1983, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>394</sup> Minutes of Special Director-General's Meeting 26/03/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>395</sup> Minutes of Special Director-General's Meeting 26/03/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>396</sup> Quarterly Management Report, 2/07/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>397</sup> Memo, GT Comber, Director Regional Residential Services to Director-General, 5/08/85, Wesleydale Profile 33555; Circular Memorandum 1985/76, 29/04/86, Wesleydale Profile F5000002368864.

<sup>398</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>399</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>400</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>401</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>402</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>403</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>404</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

Police Department.<sup>406</sup> The average number of boys in the home during the year was 28.<sup>407</sup> During this first year Wesleydale was never below its official maximum capacity of 24 boys and this overcrowding presented difficulties with bedding, as the recreation room had to be used.

Thirteen year old boys were admitted to Owairaka in mid-1976 if Wesleydale was at full capacity in order to keep the numbers down to 24 boys.<sup>408</sup>

In mid-1976 Mr Reilly (position not recorded) was concerned over the lack of control over admissions and the high number of remands in custody following a court appearance and requested that an investigation be done and contact with the police made in relation to this.<sup>409</sup> There was no mention on the files of this being followed up.

From 1977 to 1982 there were increasing numbers of admissions. In 1977 there were 214 admissions to the Home compared with 313 in 1982.<sup>410</sup> Admissions decreased in 1983 to 289, but this figure would have exceeded that of 1982 as there was a period in March where boys who would normally be admitted to Wesleydale were instead admitted to Owairaka. This was organised by the Regional Director in order to try and keep Wesleydale's numbers at 24. It was a fleeting measure as Owairaka then came under pressure from these admissions.<sup>411</sup> In 1984 the number of admissions to Wesleydale for the year dropped slightly again to 277 boys.<sup>412</sup>

The pressure of high numbers of admissions made it difficult for staff to cope when the staffing was established to care for only 24 boys.<sup>413</sup> In 1979 Wesleydale's role was described as "remand classification with a fast turnover of residents."<sup>414</sup> This fast turnover coupled with the readmission rate was a cause of concern. It placed a strain on resources, particularly staffing.<sup>415</sup> This high turnover was still considered to be a problem in 1983.<sup>416</sup>

Readmission rates also increased each year from when they began being recorded in 1979. The readmission rates ranged from 93 to 153 readmissions per annum from 1979 to 1983.<sup>417</sup> In 1982 nearly 50% of admissions were readmissions to the Home.<sup>418</sup> One boy was readmitted to Wesleydale nine times in 1983.<sup>419</sup>

The predominant ethnic background of boys in the institution was Maori which accounted for 56-65% of admissions. The percentage of Pacific Island and

---

<sup>405</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>406</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>407</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>408</sup> Memo, SJ Stanton, Assistant Director (Social Work) to Director General, 21/05/76, Wesleydale Admissions F5000002388339.

<sup>409</sup> Memo, DG Reilly to Mr Scott, 14/06/76, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>410</sup> Minutes of Special Director-General's Meeting 26/03/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>411</sup> Annual Report 1983, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>412</sup> Memo, unknown author to Director General, 4/11/85, Wesleydale Admissions F5000002186501.

<sup>413</sup> Annual Report 1978, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>414</sup> Annual Report 1979, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>415</sup> Annual Report 1979, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>416</sup> Staff in Confidence Memo, from GT Comber, Director (Regional Residential Services) to Regional Director 24/08/83, Wesleydale Profile 33555.

<sup>417</sup> Minutes of Special Director-General's Meeting 26/03/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>418</sup> Annual Report 1982, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>419</sup> Minutes of Special Director-General's Meeting 26/03/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

European residents was similar to each other, making up just less than half of the institution's population for the years recorded.<sup>420</sup>

Though the age range in 1979 was 10-14 years, several boys under 10 were admitted due to difficult behaviour either in the Reception Centre or the community.<sup>421</sup> Other boys who had been in Wesleydale when reaching 14 years were allowed to stay until their placement date.<sup>422</sup> This was a consistent theme until 1984 with the age on admission ranging from 7 to 15 years but with the majority of boys being aged either 12 or 13 years.<sup>423</sup>

The aims of Wesleydale in 1980 were recognised as being "to provide the best short-term care and assessment for those in residence with the facilities and staffing available".<sup>424</sup> This short-term remand and assessment role of Wesleydale continued through the 1980s. It was acknowledged in 1982 by the Principal that the Human Rights Report followed by the Johnston Report caused some additional strain to the already overcrowded institution and, "... that there will be some changes in admission intake and the role and function of the Home."<sup>425</sup>

In 1983/1984 the Principal, Mr Waetford, considered that the role of Wesleydale was a difficult one considering the brief stay of many of the residents, the overcrowding of the institution and the mixed status of residents (care and protection along with youth justice).<sup>426</sup> Also related to this were "the difficulties in caring for these children who in many cases are completely beyond the control of community resources and of the facilities at Wesleydale."<sup>427</sup> It was also mentioned that the management of the boys within the home was becoming more difficult resulting in more transfers to Owairaka and more abscondings.<sup>428</sup> Because of this Mr Waetford hoped that 1984 would bring about the determination of the true role of Wesleydale and said that "it is our intention to continue to provide the service of remand and assessment as in previous years."<sup>429</sup>

Mr Waetford noted in 1980 that there were "a number of difficult and disturbed youngsters who had some association with gangs and were not afraid to use violence."<sup>430</sup> In 1983 this difficulty was again recognised in relation to the containment of the most difficult boys awaiting placement in National Institutions.<sup>431</sup> This theme was further presented in 1984 which was considered to be the most difficult year in terms of the challenging nature of the children admitted.<sup>432</sup> A review of Wesleydale over a seven month period in 1984 found that there was an increasing trend towards more aggressive behaviour with comments by social workers and others that they were often being threatened with a weapon, and that most of the admitted boys had problems with school and resorted to truancy.<sup>433</sup> This difficult and violent behaviour was thought to be often connected to their association with solvent

<sup>420</sup> Minutes of Special Director-General's Meeting 26/03/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555; Annual Report 1984, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>421</sup> Annual Report 1979, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>422</sup> Annual Report 1979, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>423</sup> Minutes of Special Director-General's Meeting 26/03/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555; Annual Report 1984, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>424</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>425</sup> Annual Report 1982, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>426</sup> Annual Report 1983, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>427</sup> Quarterly Management Report 2/07/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>428</sup> Minutes of Special Director-General's Meeting 26/03/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>429</sup> Annual Report 1983, Wesleydale Reports 33556; Annual Report 1982, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>430</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>431</sup> Staff in Confidence Memo, from GT Comber, Director (Regional Residential Services) to Regional Director 24/08/83, Wesleydale Profile 33555.

<sup>432</sup> Annual Report 1984, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>433</sup> Minutes of Special Director-General's Meeting 26/03/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

abuse.<sup>434</sup> The head teacher also commented on the increasing difficulty of the children due to misuse of solvents and drugs, truancy from schools, and the high numbers of Polynesian children who were becoming emotionally disturbed.<sup>435</sup>

In 1985 it was noticed that the numbers of admissions had decreased significantly. The reasons for this were unknown, but it was thought that some contributing factors were that the more difficult boys were being admitted to Owairaka,, that there was a lack of confidence (especially from the Police) in the support Wesleydale presented, the placements made by the Community Care Unit and the use of alternative placements by districts.<sup>436</sup>

## Length of stay

Wesleydale Boys' Home had two functions – to cater for medium term treatment cases (approximately two months) and short-term warrant and remand cases (often a few days).<sup>437</sup> During the first year Wesleydale was operating, the average length of stay was 5.5 weeks showing it was catering predominantly for short term cases.<sup>438</sup>

The maximum capacity of 24 was exceeded nearly every day for the first three years that Wesleydale was open.<sup>439</sup> At one stage in 1978 the number of boys in residence at Wesleydale was 36, which was 12 over the official maximum capacity.<sup>440</sup>

There was no control over police admissions to Wesleydale<sup>441</sup> and these accounted for a large number of admissions. In 1982 police admissions accounted for 56 percent of all admissions to Wesleydale.<sup>442</sup>

From 1979 – 1984 it manifested that length of stay was decreasing – that a growing number of residents were staying in Wesleydale for less than one week.<sup>443</sup> In 1981 the decreasing length of stay was said to be consistent with that of other Auckland institutions.<sup>444</sup> "All institutions are doing their best to monitor this situation by questioning any admission that they consider doubtful right at the admission time."<sup>445</sup> The Police were also trying to limit short-term admissions to the Auckland institutions.<sup>446</sup>

<sup>434</sup> Quarterly Management Report 18/10/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>435</sup> Annual Report 1984, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>436</sup> Memo, GT Comber, Director Regional Residential Services to Director-General, 25/06/85, Wesleydale Profile 33555.

<sup>437</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>438</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>439</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Regional Manager, Auckland 26/02/79, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>440</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Regional Manager, Auckland 26/02/79, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>441</sup> Annual Report 1981, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>442</sup> Annual Report 1982, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>443</sup> Minutes of Special Director-General's Meeting 26/03/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>444</sup> Note for file by unknown author, 29/07/81, Wesleydale Discipline 33556.

<sup>445</sup> Note for file by unknown author, 29/07/81, Wesleydale Discipline 33556.

<sup>446</sup> Note for file by unknown author, 29/07/81, Wesleydale Discipline 33556.

In 1979 26% of boys were in Wesleydale for less than 7 days compared with 40% in 1984.<sup>447</sup> About one third of residents per annum stayed between 8 days and one month over this five year period.<sup>448</sup> The length of stay remained similar again for boys in residence between one and two months with the average being 16% per annum.<sup>449</sup> The average over these five years for boys staying longer than two months was 18% per annum.<sup>450</sup> The decreasing length of stay was further shown by the averaged length of stay being 42.6 days in 1976 compared with 23.9 days in 1984.<sup>451</sup> It was noted that there was "conflicting opinion as to the desirability or otherwise of boys this age spending a short time in a Boys Home."<sup>452</sup>

There was an increasing length of stay for some residents at Wesleydale. For example, there were a number of boys in residence for over twelve months which was attributed to the lack of community or institutional placements available.<sup>453</sup> The effect of this was that behaviour patterns for these boys deteriorated.<sup>454</sup> A suggestion was made by senior Wesleydale staff that a Family Home near Wesleydale should be considered.<sup>455</sup>

In 1978 the increasing length of stay was examined, focussing on residents staying longer than five months in Wesleydale. It was observed that this was partly due to the lengthy delay in admissions to Hokio and Campbell Park; other reasons were not given.<sup>456</sup> It was considered that there was little that could be done in relation to Hokio consistently being at full capacity.<sup>457</sup>

Discharged residents went to a variety of placements. In 1980, 56% of residents returned home upon discharge from Wesleydale, 20% were placed in other district or national institutions and the remaining discharges went to voluntary institutions or family/foster placements.<sup>458</sup> The placements at home decreased throughout the remaining years when in 1984 only 33% of residents were returned home.<sup>459</sup> The placements in district and national institutions continued to remain similar to that of 1980 but more residents were placed in foster/family homes or in voluntary institutions.<sup>460</sup>

<sup>447</sup> Minutes of Special Director-General's Meeting 26/03/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>448</sup> Minutes of Special Director-General's Meeting 26/03/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>449</sup> Minutes of Special Director-General's Meeting 26/03/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>450</sup> Minutes of Special Director-General's Meeting 26/03/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>451</sup> Minutes of Special Director-General's Meeting 26/03/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555; Annual Report 1984, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>452</sup> Minutes of Special Director-General's Meeting 26/03/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>453</sup> Memo, T Flynn, Housemaster & T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director Auckland, 21/11/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>454</sup> Memo, T Flynn, Housemaster & T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director Auckland, 21/11/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>455</sup> Memo, T Flynn, Housemaster & T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director Auckland, 21/11/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>456</sup> Report, T Ball, 04/05/78, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>457</sup> Report, T Ball, 04/05/78, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>458</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>459</sup> Annual Report 1981, Wesleydale Reports 33556; Annual Report 1982, Wesleydale Reports 33556;

Annual Report 1983, Wesleydale Reports 33556; Annual Report 1984, Wesleydale Reports 33556;

<sup>460</sup> Annual Report 1981, Wesleydale Reports 33556; Annual Report 1982, Wesleydale Reports 33556;

Annual Report 1983, Wesleydale Reports 33556; Annual Report 1984, Wesleydale Reports 33556;



## Programmes and care

A programme for Wesleydale had been developed by 1977 to cater for the social, educational and recreational needs of the boys.<sup>461</sup> As there were initially no classrooms, two of the Wesleydale recreation rooms were used for schooling.<sup>462</sup> In 1977 an Arts and Crafts Instructor began working six hours per week and many of the boys' parents complimented their sons' completed Maori carvings.<sup>463</sup>

Mr Ball (position not recorded) visited the Home in 1977 and was impressed with the staff and the warm atmosphere of Wesleydale which he considered to have "limited facilities in many ways compared to many other of our institutions".<sup>464</sup>

In 1978 two fee for service instructors were employed for woodwork and for physical education and employment of a third instructor to commence arts and crafts was in progress.<sup>465</sup> These were included in the programme, along with individual and group activities, that were to cater for the social, educational and recreational needs of the boys.<sup>466</sup> The programme also included outings and sporting activities with organised sport being an important part of the programme that had begun during the first year Wesleydale was open.<sup>467</sup> Weekend/home leave was also part of the programme and was given to those boys who qualified (after having been there three to four weeks) when approved by Wesleydale and their field social worker.<sup>468</sup> Most long-term boys were allowed leave during the school holidays.<sup>469</sup> A holiday programme was also implemented for the school holidays and the Kohitere bus was available for trips out.<sup>470</sup>

In 1979, the school focused on academic work in the mornings and cultural work in the afternoons which included activities such as music, carving, art and Maoritanga.<sup>471</sup> A points system was in operation which aimed at stressing the positive and a reward was given when a pre-determined target was reached.<sup>472</sup>

While most children attended school on site at Wesleydale, new admissions spent a day or two becoming familiar with the Home and routines before they attended school.<sup>473</sup> Both returned absconders and new admissions assisted in chores around the home before either starting or returning to school.<sup>474</sup>

<sup>461</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>462</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>463</sup> Memo, T Flynn, Housemaster & T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director Auckland, 21/11/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>464</sup> Report, T Ball, 03/06/77, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>465</sup> Annual Report 1978, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>466</sup> Annual Report 1979, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>467</sup> Annual Report 1979, Wesleydale Reports 33557; Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556; Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>468</sup> Annual Report 1979, Wesleydale Reports 33557; Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556; Annual Report 1982, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>469</sup> Annual Report 1979, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>470</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal, Wesleydale to Regional Manager, Auckland, 06/06/79, Wesleydale Education 33557.

<sup>471</sup> Annual Report 1979, Wesleydale Reports 33557. Please note that the details of the points system can be found in the School Report of 1980.

<sup>472</sup> Annual Report 1979, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>473</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>474</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

Due to Regionalisation in 1979, residential social workers became more involved in the case work plan for children in care.<sup>475</sup>

Rural placements became part of the programme in 1980 for some of the residents during the holidays and continued until 1984.<sup>476</sup> These placements were organised for city children to have rural experience during the August and Christmas holidays.<sup>477</sup> In 1981 weekend beach and bush trips along with educational outings were organised.<sup>478</sup>

It was noted in 1980 by the Principal that the boys – especially the younger ones – related better to the women staff “so whilst working alongside the women [in domestic tasks] they chatted more freely and a lot is learnt of their inner feelings.”<sup>479</sup>

A report from an ex-staff member of the school in 1979 was critical about the operation of the Home and stated that it only operated in a limited capacity towards the functions of the institution as provided in the Residential Social Workers Manual such as preparing residents for return to the community.<sup>480</sup> The school programme was said to be positive and operating on a rewards system and was not complimented by the Home environment where punishment was used as the predominant method of control. This was illustrated by control techniques focusing on the negative, for example “if you don’t do this then you’ll miss out on whatever”.<sup>481</sup> Threats and confrontations were said to occur as well as the threat of violence from “man to child”, aggressive restraint tactics and corporal punishment.<sup>482</sup> The routines of the Home were considered to be paramilitary and noise was not tolerated. The use of the one and a half hour rest period each day was also questioned.<sup>483</sup> “The smooth running of Wesleydale appears to relate to the precision of routines and staff and not the welfare and happiness of the boys.”<sup>484</sup> The response to these concerns was that no further action was required. [REDACTED] Regional Manager, Social Work and Residential Services stated that, [REDACTED] has not been objective in his report. It is clear that he has adopted a stance and then written the report to justify his views.<sup>485</sup>

In 1981 it was felt that the programme operating at Wesleydale needed to be “revamped” from the traditional programme to something modern so the boys would become more involved and content with the programme.<sup>486</sup>

In 1981 it was recognised that the overcrowding affected the standard of care and that a closer watch was needed to ensure this was not happening. It was accepted that there was no control over police admissions and that when overcrowding became a problem, cases were moved in an attempt to reduce numbers to allow staff to work effectively for the care of children.<sup>487</sup>

<sup>475</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>476</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556; Annual Report 1981, Wesleydale Reports 33556; Annual Report 1982, Wesleydale Reports 33556; Annual Report 1983, Wesleydale Reports 33556; Annual Report 1984, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>477</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>478</sup> Annual Report 1981, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>479</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>480</sup> Report [REDACTED] ex teacher, Wesleydale, undated circa 1980, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>481</sup> Report [REDACTED] ex teacher Wesleydale, undated circa 1980, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>482</sup> Report [REDACTED] ex teacher Wesleydale, undated circa 1980, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>483</sup> Report [REDACTED] ex teacher Wesleydale, undated circa 1980, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>484</sup> Report [REDACTED] ex teacher Wesleydale, undated circa 1980, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>485</sup> Memo, [REDACTED], Regional Manager Social Work & Residential Services to Director General, [REDACTED] Wesleydale Profile [REDACTED].

<sup>486</sup> Note for file by unknown author, 29/07/81, Wesleydale Discipline 33556.

<sup>487</sup> Annual Report 1981, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

Due to the high admission and discharge rates, only tramps and camps were organised as part of the programme in 1982 as well as the rural placement.<sup>488</sup> There was a full recreational programme operating for indoor and outdoor sports.<sup>489</sup> Camps were run at Weymouth and Poutu and were said to be beneficial as part of the overall programme.<sup>490</sup>

In 1983 the Director-General commented that "Longer term I believe that the programmes for Wesleydale should be under scrutiny and review to see whether alternatives are not possible for many of the boys who are in Wesleydale."<sup>491</sup>

A joint Home/School programme was implemented in 1984 after trials in 1983 on the basis of some of the recommendations made by the Doolan-Rolfe Report. The increase in the residential staff allowed the Home to assist in the school programme on some afternoons.<sup>492</sup>

An instructor in Personal Development Skills became involved in the programme in 1984.<sup>493</sup>

The full recreational programme was still operating in 1984 involving all indoor and outdoor sports including swimming in the summer with the addition of the swimming pool.<sup>494</sup>

A new programme was established in July 1984 that had staff working in teams and then working with smaller numbers of boys to enable more individual attention.<sup>495</sup> This made for "better casework and closer involvement for residential staff at all levels".<sup>496</sup> This also meant that a wider range of activities and hobbies were available.<sup>497</sup>

## Work and training

New admissions to the Home as well as returned absconders assisted with the domestic staff in chores around the Home.<sup>498</sup> Due to the gardener position being disestablished in 1981, both staff and boys helped tend to the garden.<sup>499</sup>

In the Home the boys helped out with domestic work and other daily operating activities.<sup>500</sup>

There was less focus in the annual reports on work and training because of the younger age group.

<sup>488</sup> Annual Report 1982, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>489</sup> Annual Report 1982, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>490</sup> Annual Report 1982, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>491</sup> Memo, JW Grant, Director-General to Mr Manchester, 13/06/83, Wesleydale Staffing 33555.

<sup>492</sup> Annual Report 1983, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>493</sup> Annual Report 1983, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>494</sup> Annual Report 1983, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>495</sup> Quarterly Management Report 18/10/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>496</sup> Annual Report 1984, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>497</sup> Annual Report 1984, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>498</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>499</sup> Annual Report 1981, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>500</sup> Annual Report 1982, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

## Resident-to-resident issues

It was commented by a former staff member that the incidents of violence from staff to boys, i.e. the strappings, "... illustrate the effects of violence been (sic) met with violence, as the boys revert to physical dominance and aggression over one another (fists)."<sup>501</sup>

Boy who absconded were said to have been made to put on boxing gloves against "selected" opponents.<sup>502</sup>

## Health and medication

It was noted in 1977 that there was no regular psychological testing at Wesleydale.<sup>503</sup>

In 1980 a psychologist, from Mt Albert Psychological Services, was assigned one day a week for psychological assessments and was also available for case conferences when needed. The psychiatric service was considered to be not as prompt as the psychological service<sup>504</sup> but referrals to the psychiatric service were made by the Medical Adviser when necessary.<sup>505</sup>

The Medical Adviser visited Wesleydale almost daily and was available for urgent calls.<sup>506</sup>

Sister Rose was employed in 1981 as a counsellor to give personal assistance to individual residents. "She is readily accepted by all boys and the warmth that she exudes presents a calm throughout the Home."<sup>507</sup>

## Psychiatric hospital placement

There was no mention of psychiatric hospital placements within the Wesleydale files.

## Staffing

### Staff Organisation

Staffing levels at the opening of Wesleydale in 1976 were 22 with three of these positions as vacancies which were later transferred to other regional uses.<sup>508</sup> These

<sup>501</sup> Report, Gary J Anstis, ex teacher Wesleydale, undated circa 1980, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>502</sup> Report, Gary J Anstis, ex teacher Wesleydale, undated circa 1980, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>503</sup> Report, T Ball, 03/06/77, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>504</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>505</sup> Annual Report 1984, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>506</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>507</sup> Annual Report 1981, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

included the position of a relieving housemaster and two matron's assistants.<sup>509</sup> It was considered in 1977 that with the rising numbers of residents this reassignment of positions should be reviewed.<sup>510</sup>

The pressure of increasing admissions and the number of boys in residence consistently being over the maximum capacity put pressures on staff and in 1978 the main concern was the need for extra staff to help cope with this situation.<sup>511</sup>

The lack of a secure unit to deal with persistent absconders meant that one staff member was taken off the duty team to closely supervise these residents when necessary.<sup>512</sup> Due to the often overcrowded institution, this placed strain on the other two staff left to deal with the remaining residents (possibly numbering up to 30) as well as admitting and discharging boys and other duties.<sup>513</sup> Recommendation was made by the Principal in 1979 to utilise the east wing to bring bedding up to 40 and increase the staffing levels by establishing positions for two senior residential social workers, one assistant residential social worker and two matron's assistants.<sup>514</sup>

The need for better staffing at a senior level was again recognised at the end of 1979.<sup>515</sup> The Principal made submissions for extra staff and considered this to be of extreme importance as the Assistant Principal position was vacant and there were no senior staff below this level.<sup>516</sup>

In 1980 there was a total of 19 staff at Wesleydale.<sup>517</sup> The three residential social workers had their caseloads divided into three catchment areas to share with their assistant residential social worker.<sup>518</sup>

Staff totalled 19 in 1981.<sup>519</sup> The Instructor Gardener's position was disestablished and was replaced by a Senior Residential Social Worker.

In 1982 authority was given for the employment of a clerk which brought staffing levels up to 20.<sup>520</sup> The introduction of a full-time clerk decreased some of the work previously undertaken by residential social workers enabling them to work more closely with the residents.<sup>521</sup>

Staffing levels increased to 24 in 1983 with the appointment of three additional assistant residential social workers and one senior residential social worker. This allowed for better staff cover "particularly with the senior staff roster where there were quite a number of shifts where there was no senior staff member on duty. This had been the case since 1976 and with it finally rectified, every shift now has a senior staff member."<sup>522</sup> This meant that there were three staff teams headed by a senior staff member (either a senior residential social worker or the assistant

---

<sup>508</sup> Minutes of Special Director-General's Meeting 26/03/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>509</sup> Report, T Ball, 03/06/77, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>510</sup> Report, T Ball, 03/06/77, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>511</sup> Annual Report 1978, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>512</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director, Auckland, 1979, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>513</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director, Auckland, 1979, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>514</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director, Auckland, 1979, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>515</sup> Annual Report 1979, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>516</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director, Auckland, 1979, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>517</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>518</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>519</sup> Annual Report 1981, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>520</sup> Annual Report 1982, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>521</sup> Annual Report 1982, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>522</sup> Annual Report 1983, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

principal) who were responsible for their own caseload. They worked with field social workers and a teacher in case planning.<sup>523</sup>

It was noted in a report on Wesleydale that submissions for increased staffing levels were all declined up until 1983 even though Wesleydale was operating more than half the time over the maximum capacity of 24 boys.<sup>524</sup> It was mentioned that various notes on the file comment that because there was no secure unit, the need for more staff was not thought necessary.<sup>525</sup> Staff acknowledged their lack of skills and strategies to cope effectively with the continuing problem of containing the most difficult boys who were awaiting placement in national institutions. Assistance was sought in this area without success.<sup>526</sup> The advent of the increase in staff coverage in 1983 meant that the three senior officers endeavoured to keep up with the formal supervision sessions with the assistant and residential social workers as outlined by Head Office in June 1984.<sup>527</sup>

An additional Senior Residential Social Worker was appointed in 1984 but was later cancelled and transferred to the Weymouth Boys' Remand Unit.<sup>528</sup>

Staff were assured in 1984 that although the lease for Wesleydale would not be renewed in September 1986, staffing levels would be maintained through to 1986 in order to maintain high standards of care for the children.<sup>529</sup> The staffing level in 1984 was 24 staff plus three teachers.<sup>530</sup>

### **Staff Training and Supervision**

The majority of staff employed at Wesleydale were new to residential work, so prior to Wesleydale opening, two days were spent in training sessions with these staff to cover the basic principles of residential social work.<sup>531</sup> Staff attended weekly meetings, were able to visit other institutions and some District Office staff came to the Home to speak about administrative matters.<sup>532</sup> Seven of the staff attended a Residential Care Association course in 1976.<sup>533</sup> Staff training continued through to 1983 with staff undertaking in-service courses at the Residential Staff Training Service and attending other relevant courses.<sup>534</sup> This continued training, coupled with the introduction of the Planning for Children in Care Scheme in 1981 was said to have increased the standard of care given.<sup>535</sup>

In 1980, the second year of Regionalisation, individual cases were being reviewed in a weekly staff meeting consisting of a senior staff member, residential social workers

<sup>523</sup> Annual Report 1983, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>524</sup> Minutes of Special Director-General's Meeting 26/03/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>525</sup> Minutes of Special Director-General's Meeting 26/03/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>526</sup> Staff in Confidence Memo, from GT Comber, Director (Regional Residential Services) to Regional Director 24/08/83, Wesleydale Profile 33555.

<sup>527</sup> Quarterly Management Report 2/07/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>528</sup> Annual Report 1984, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>529</sup> Quarterly Management Report 2/07/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>530</sup> Report from JW Grant, Director General to the Minister of Social Welfare 1984, Wesleydale Profile 33555.

<sup>531</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>532</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>533</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>534</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556; Annual Report 1981, Wesleydale Reports 33556; Annual Report 1982, Wesleydale Reports 33556; Annual Report 1983, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>535</sup> Annual Report 1981, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

and the Boys Home Head Teacher.<sup>536</sup> These weekly meetings held between the Home and the school staff were considered to be valuable.<sup>537</sup>

It was recognised in 1980 that pressures from high numbers of admissions did not provide for good residential social work practice and that staff training was important and as many staff as possible were urged to attend the in-service training courses and other available relevant courses.<sup>538</sup>

In 1980 full staff meetings were held weekly and residential social workers met with the Principal and Assistant Principal in a separate weekly meeting.<sup>539</sup> The Senior Residential Social Worker appointed in 1981 attended the weekly staff meetings as well as the senior staff meeting held separately.<sup>540</sup>

In 1981 emphasis was placed on improving the standard of residential care through the training of staff. Residential social work staff attended in-service course and other relevant courses to help achieve this focus.<sup>541</sup> The Principal's delegation of casework to residential staff in 1981 allowed those staff to become more involved in working with the residents and the staff became more professional in their work.<sup>542</sup>

In addition to the full staff meeting and the senior residential staff meeting, the Assistant Principal and Senior Residential Social Worker held supervision sessions with residential social workers.<sup>543</sup>

Local courses were continued in 1984, but the R.S.T.S courses could not be scheduled due to the modular training for the senior staff.<sup>544</sup>

### Staffing Concerns

The residential staff at Wesleydale in 1979 revealed their concerns about the relations between the Home and the school – specifically [REDACTED] – to reinforce the concerns held by the Principal. The concerns were focussed on the apparent efforts of [REDACTED] to undermine the authority of the staff at the Home.<sup>545</sup>

An incident occurred on a school outing to a Marae when the woman who had taken the boys on this outing began criticising the residential social work staff and in particular the Principal. The criticisms were not fully outlined but mentioned that the Principal “was not interested in the boys finding their cultural identity and the use of ‘red tape’.”<sup>546</sup>

In 1980 concern was held by an ex-staff member in relation to the turnover of staff and the effect this had on the Home and the residents.<sup>547</sup> The calibre of the staff was also questioned focussing on lack of suitability, training and qualifications.<sup>548</sup>

<sup>536</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>537</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>538</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>539</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>540</sup> Annual Report 1981, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>541</sup> Annual Report 1981, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>542</sup> Handwritten note by unknown author 03/08/81 on the Note for file by unknown author, 29/07/81, Wesleydale Discipline 33556.

<sup>543</sup> Annual Report 1982, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>544</sup> Annual Report 1984, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>545</sup> Memo, Residential Staff, Wesleydale to Regional Manager, Auckland, 02/07/79, Wesleydale Complaints 31436.

<sup>546</sup> Memo, Kathy Baker, ARSW, Wesleydale to unknown recipient, 9/07/80, Wesleydale Complaints 33557.

<sup>547</sup> Report, Gary J Anstis, ex teacher, Wesleydale, undated circa 1980, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

There was concern in relation to the Principal, [REDACTED] and his possible inability to critically analyse the programmes he implemented at Wesleydale to develop "a more mellow and sensible approach to the boys."<sup>549</sup>

In June 1983 the Director-General was concerned about Wesleydale and the staffing situation. "The Home situation is a sorry state of affairs and I believe that it reflects poorly on the management leadership of this Home."<sup>550</sup> The Director-General thought that [REDACTED] should be transferred to the position of Assistant Principal within the Auckland area.<sup>551</sup> Due to the leadership at Wesleydale being considered "flat", two senior social work staff members made regular visits to Wesleydale to help the Principal "lift his performance."<sup>552</sup>

A visit was made to Wesleydale by the Director, Residential Services in 1983 in response to the concerns in relation to staffing. The Principal and staff were thought to be intimidated by the urgent demands of some districts and were encouraged to be more assertive in relation to demands for planning and associated needs.<sup>553</sup> It was felt that there was often a lack of information and proposals for new admissions which compounded the uncertainty of the role of the staff.<sup>554</sup>

Reservations were still held in relation to the overall management strength at Wesleydale. The top management was considered to be inadequate and the basic grade strength was not properly utilised because of this.<sup>555</sup> There was concern at the possibility of the Principal being transferred as it was acknowledged that this task was becoming more difficult and there was no one adequate to fill it.<sup>556</sup> In order to combat these problems, additional staffing was to be provided to give assistance and a consultant utilised to help address the issues and improve management skills.<sup>557</sup>

There was concern in [REDACTED] over possible criticism by the High Court in relation to an ex-staff member from Wesleydale. [REDACTED] was employed by the Principal of Wesleydale as a relieving night attendant (the date of this appointment is not stipulated). Mr [REDACTED] transferred to Weymouth when Wesleydale closed. His position at Weymouth was terminated when he was arrested for sodomy on a former resident in his off-duty hours. It transpired that Mr [REDACTED] also had a previous conviction for sodomy which he did not disclose on his application form and the Principal cannot remember whether he was questioned about this when employed at Wesleydale.<sup>558</sup>

<sup>548</sup> Report, Gary J Anstis, ex teacher, Wesleydale, undated circa 1980, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>549</sup> Note for file by unknown author, [REDACTED], Wesleydale Discipline 33556.

<sup>550</sup> Memo, JW Grant, Director-General to Mr Manchester, 13/06/83, Wesleydale Staffing 33555.

<sup>551</sup> Memo, JW Grant, Director-General to Mr Manchester, 13/06/83, Wesleydale Staffing 33555.

<sup>552</sup> Memo, from unknown author to unknown recipient, 12/08/83, Wesleydale Discipline 33555.

<sup>553</sup> Staff in Confidence Memo, from GT Comber, Director (Regional Residential Services) to Regional Director 24/08/83, Wesleydale Profile 33555.

<sup>554</sup> Staff in Confidence Memo, from GT Comber, Director (Regional Residential Services) to Regional Director 24/08/83, Wesleydale Profile 33555.

<sup>555</sup> Staff in Confidence Memo, from GT Comber, Director (Regional Residential Services) to Regional Director 24/08/83, Wesleydale Profile 33555.

<sup>556</sup> Staff in Confidence Memo, from GT Comber, Director (Regional Residential Services) to Regional Director 24/08/83, Wesleydale Profile 33555.

<sup>557</sup> Staff in Confidence Memo, from GT Comber, Director (Regional Residential Services) to Regional Director 24/08/83, Wesleydale Profile 33555.

<sup>558</sup> Memo, unknown author to unknown recipient in relation to Possible Criticism by High Court – Auckland, [REDACTED], Wesleydale Complaints F5000006020995.



## Schooling

There were no classrooms when Wesleydale was opened so two of the Home's recreation rooms were used for schooling. Two teachers were employed at this time.<sup>559</sup> Schooling was provided for all residents.<sup>560</sup>

In early July 1976 three classrooms for Wesleydale were completed. Four months later approval was given for the appointment of a third teacher and in early February 1977 this appointment was filled.<sup>561</sup>

In 1978 a head teacher was appointed and his programme focused on teaching at appropriate levels and the Principal commented that a remarkable response from the children was received.<sup>562</sup>

The school programme in 1979 was "designed to improve the boys' self-concepts and improve their attitudes toward schooling and society in general. Also included are social development and co-operation with fellow students and staff."<sup>563</sup> One teacher left at the beginning of this year, and rather than replace him, it was decided to employ part-time staff (not necessarily teachers) to allow for greater diversity in the school programme with a formal academic morning in small groups<sup>564</sup> and an informal cultural afternoon.<sup>565</sup> This variety led to children who previously had an aversion to school wanting to participate in the programme.<sup>566</sup>

The Assistant Director said in 1980 that because of the age group admitted to Wesleydale and the fact that most will need to continue schooling after leaving the Home, the emphasis should be on formal schooling and that "it will be necessary to modify the teaching programme and even introduce three full time teachers."<sup>567</sup>

The school setting changed in 1980 to replicate a normal school setting of full desks with everyone in the one room.<sup>568</sup> The school programme remained the same with academic subjects in the morning followed by manual or more recreational activities in the afternoon. These recreational activities such as carving, cooking and Maoritanga were designed to provide the boys with a wide range of skills.<sup>569</sup> Two women from the community developed a Maori studies programme in 1980 which focused not only on traditional formal behaviour, but also cultural harmony.<sup>570</sup>

The school used the same methods as the Home, such as positive reinforcement for good behaviour and withdrawal of privileges for negative behaviour. A points system

<sup>559</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>560</sup> Annual Report 1979, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>561</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>562</sup> Annual Report 1978, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>563</sup> Annual Report 1979, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>564</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>565</sup> Annual Report 1979, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>566</sup> Annual Report 1979, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>567</sup> Memo, I Johnson, Assistant Director Regional Residential Services to Director-General, 21/05/80, Wesleydale Education 33557.

<sup>568</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>569</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>570</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

was also used in the school.<sup>571</sup> Social development was emphasised and most boys showed improvement when they left Wesleydale.<sup>572</sup>

In 1980 it was affirmed that most boys were in school but noted that those who were new admissions or who had been returned from absconding were not at school.<sup>573</sup>

It was mentioned in 1980 that there was conflict between the staff in the institution and in the school. The residential social work staff had petitioned for the head teacher to be removed.<sup>574</sup> The head teacher was on a course for 1980 and the situation vastly improved.<sup>575</sup> It was said that the relationship between the school and the Home was good apart from this teacher.<sup>576</sup>

Concern about the relationship between the Home and school staff continued into 1981 as they were not considered to be "as open and harmonious as could be desired."<sup>577</sup> The school appeared to feel isolated due to lack of consultation and opportunity to contribute to specific cases.<sup>578</sup>

The Principal stated at the end of 1981 that the school was running more efficiently than previously and that the problems of the previous years had been due to the succession of relieving teachers – some who were unable to cope with the demands of the boys.<sup>579</sup> School and Home cooperation had increased with some of the school programmes continuing on at the Home after school hours. The programme was believed to be sensible as was use of staff.<sup>580</sup> Relationships between teachers and pupils were considered to be good with the boys following instructions readily and showing neither signs of resistance nor a poor attitude towards the teachers.<sup>581</sup>

In 1981 the head teacher described the school programme as more than remedial – aimed at providing individual children with a programme of work to improve many facets of their life such as their attitude to schooling, self-concept and attainment levels.<sup>582</sup>

The school reports for 1982 and 1983 were said to be attached to the annual report, but were missing from the files. The school report for 1984 stated that the average weekly attendance was 18 pupils for term one, 23 in term two and 9-16 in term three.<sup>583</sup> The head teacher commented that "it was a very puzzling year for us, the high numbers of the difficult children of term II indicated high numbers in the future so term III was a surprise especially with the increase in numbers of street kids and school truants."<sup>584</sup>

<sup>571</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556. Please note that details of the points system can be found in the School Report of 1980.

<sup>572</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>573</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>574</sup> Memo, I Johnson, Assistant Director Regional Residential Services to Director-General, 21/05/80, Wesleydale Education 33557.

<sup>575</sup> Memo, I Johnson, Assistant Director Regional Residential Services to Director-General, 21/05/80, Wesleydale Education 33557.

<sup>576</sup> Excerpt from document (possibly by NG Stevens) titled Visits to Institutions, 4-7/08/80, Wesleydale Education 33557.

<sup>577</sup> Report on Wesleydale Boys Home by TV Thomas, ISSE, 7/07/81, Wesleydale Profile 33555.

<sup>578</sup> Report on Wesleydale Boys Home by TV Thomas, ISSE, 7/07/81, Wesleydale Profile 33555.

<sup>579</sup> Report on Wesleydale Boys Home by TV Thomas, ISSE, 7/07/81, Wesleydale Profile 33555.

<sup>580</sup> Report on Wesleydale Boys Home by TV Thomas, ISSE, 7/07/81, Wesleydale Profile 33555.

<sup>581</sup> Report on Wesleydale Boys Home by TV Thomas, ISSE, 7/07/81, Wesleydale Profile 33555.

<sup>582</sup> Annual Report 1981, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>583</sup> Annual Report 1984, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>584</sup> Annual Report 1984, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

The school programme remained basically the same in 1984 setting out to provide a climate in which children who were out of touch with school would feel safe to begin again.<sup>585</sup>

Submissions were made in 1984 for the introduction of computer education and computer recreation to Wesleydale for the residents.<sup>586</sup>

## Absconding

Observation of the data for absconding highlights that there are discrepancies between different reports and statistics as to the number of abscondings each year. The reasons for these discrepancies may be attributed to different methods of collating or submitting the information, for example whether the number of incidents of abscondings was recorded compared with the number of boys who absconded.<sup>587</sup> Wesleydale had the highest degree of discrepancy of all the institutions. The following section uses figures from the Annual Reports.

Absconding incidents ranged from 46 in 1976 to 85 in 1981. It was noted that it was well known that serial absconders were, "...responsible for taking a good number of other boys with [them]."<sup>588</sup> In 1976 some possible reasons for the number of absconding incidents were that the staff were new to residential work and were trying to "find their feet", the fact that abscondings happened at most institutions and were possibly more frequent at open institutions.<sup>589</sup>

Persistent absconders were a constant theme at Wesleydale, as was the transfer of persistent absconders to Owairaka Boys' Home due to there being no secure facilities at Wesleydale.<sup>590</sup>

There was a supposed decrease in the number of absconding incidents in 1977.<sup>591</sup> This was said to be possibly attributed to the increase in experience and confidence in the staff new to residential work.<sup>592</sup>

The Principal commented in 1979 that the lack of a secure unit meant that a staff member was taken out of the duty team to closely supervise persistent absconders when the need arose.<sup>593</sup>

In 1980 absconding incidents had increased to 81 with persistent absconders being transferred to Owairaka a continuing feature.<sup>594</sup> This was in accordance with the

<sup>585</sup> Annual Report 1984, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>586</sup> Memo, Dave Theobald, Assistant Residential Social Worker Wesleydale to Regional Director, Auckland, 26/03/84, Wesleydale Education 33555.

<sup>587</sup> Annual Reports 1979-1983, Wesleydale Reports 33557, 33556; Minutes of Special Director-General's Meeting 26/03/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>588</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>589</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>590</sup> Annual Report 1978, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>591</sup> Memo, T Flynn, Housemaster & T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director Auckland, 21/11/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557; Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director Auckland 1979, Wesleydale Profile 33557. It is only a supposed decrease as different figures for 1977 are recorded in a number of reports.

<sup>592</sup> Memo, T Flynn, Housemaster & T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director Auckland, 21/11/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>593</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director Auckland 1979, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

Police attitude who wanted some of the persistent and difficult absconders locked in secure facilities.<sup>595</sup> In 1981 the police attitude was said to have become more satisfactory but they expressed a "harsh manner" on some occasions.<sup>596</sup>

The Principal was very concerned about the high number of abscondings in 1980 and the unsettling affect it had on the Home. He attributed the abscondings to 75% of the residents being at Wesleydale for less than three weeks and that many abscondings were initiated by boys awaiting placement in National Institutions. The Principal requested that, to achieve the desired stability in the Home, these boys be transferred to the National Institutions as soon as possible rather than waiting for the normal admission time at the beginning of the school term.<sup>597</sup>

During 1980 the Principal also noted that "a good number of abscondings during the year stemmed from a number of difficult and disturbed youngsters who had some association with gangs and were not afraid to use violence."<sup>598</sup> There were also some car conversions by absconders in 1980.<sup>599</sup>

This high level of absconding continued in 1981 with 85 incidents of absconding. The majority of the absconding involved only a small percentage of the total boys admitted for the year. The staff at Wesleydale attempted to keep absconding numbers down "by both an awareness during supervision times and also by trying to make the programme operating more appealing and interesting to the boys."<sup>600</sup>

In 1982 there was a major increase in absconding with 162 incidents being reported during the year.<sup>601</sup> This sharply increased again in 1983 with the number of abscondings rising to 250.<sup>602</sup> The absconding rate dropped again in 1984 to 164 incidents.<sup>603</sup>

An examination of the absconding incidents showed that the majority of absconders were State Wards awaiting placement in a National Institution.<sup>604</sup> It was felt that if their placement was accelerated it would eliminate the major problems and it was also considered that there was merit in "sending unsettled youngsters away from their home district for a period."<sup>605</sup> On this basis a proposal was made to utilise the spare space at Wesleydale and Hamilton Boys' Home so that boys who needed settling out of their own home area could go to somewhere close.<sup>606</sup> This proposal was to be considered and examined in greater detail, but there is nothing on file to indicate whether it was effected.<sup>607</sup> Another reason given for the high absconding rate in 1984 was the minimal staff coverage that had always existed.<sup>608</sup>

---

<sup>594</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>595</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>596</sup> Annual Report 1981, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>597</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Regional Manager, Auckland, 29/07/80, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>598</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>599</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>600</sup> Note for file by unknown author, 29/07/81, Wesleydale Discipline 33556.

<sup>601</sup> Annual Report 1982, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>602</sup> Annual Report 1983, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>603</sup> Annual Report 1984, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>604</sup> Memo, RJ Wilson, Regional Director to Director-General, 27/08/82, Wesleydale Profile 33555.

<sup>605</sup> Memo, RJ Wilson, Regional Director to Director-General, 27/08/82, Wesleydale Profile 33555.

<sup>606</sup> Memo, RJ Wilson, Regional Director to Director-General, 27/08/82, Wesleydale Profile 33555.

<sup>607</sup> Memo, B Manchester to JH Lucas, 9/9/82, Wesleydale Profile 33555.

<sup>608</sup> Minutes of Special Director-General's Meeting 26/03/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

## Secure care

No secure facilities were available at Wesleydale.<sup>609</sup> If secure care was needed, residents were transferred to Owairaka.<sup>610</sup>

## Discipline

The head teacher did not use corporal punishment but would seek the Principal's assistance if there was serious misbehaviour. The Principal would decide whether corporal punishment was necessary or whether the boys should be withheld from the school.<sup>611</sup> Boys with negative attitudes or difficult behaviour would be withdrawn from the school so the school was as "free as often as practicable from these difficult cases."<sup>612</sup>

In 1981 a points system was used in school situation to regulate boy's behaviour and self discipline was promoted.<sup>613</sup> The head teacher found that there was "no place for corporal punishment or any other form of punishment that makes a child lose face or 'mana'."<sup>614</sup>

Persistent absconders were punished by deprivation of privileges or corporal punishment and some were transferred to Owairaka.<sup>615</sup>

Returned absconders had to assist with chores until their attitude was considered to be settled and they were able to return to school.<sup>616</sup>

## Physical punishment

An ex-staff member had concern about the use of physical punishment around 1979. It was said that aggressive tactics were used to restrain residents which at times verged on the offensive.<sup>617</sup> "The staff are not legally permitted to touch the boys yet the senior staff are allowed to enforce corporal punishment – usually in the form of a leather strap."<sup>618</sup> It was said to be generally administered to the buttocks, but in some occasions bruising had formed on the arms and torso. One boy was said to have had bruising on his buttocks for a week. Strappings were also said to take

<sup>609</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>610</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>611</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Regional Manager, Auckland, 6/06/79, Wesleydale Discipline 33557.

<sup>612</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Regional Manager, Auckland, 6/06/79, Wesleydale Discipline 33557.

<sup>613</sup> Annual Report 1981, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>614</sup> Annual Report 1981, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>615</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Regional Manager, Auckland, 6/06/79, Wesleydale Discipline 33557.

<sup>616</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>617</sup> Report, Gary J Anstis, ex teacher Wesleydale, undated circa 1980, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>618</sup> Report, Gary J Anstis, ex teacher Wesleydale, undated circa 1980, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

place in front of other boys to make an example out of them. Another staff member was often requested to be present as a precaution against refusal of the strappings and "in isolated cases staff have been asked to hold boys refusing punishment".<sup>619</sup>

The ex-staff member further commented that a form of punishment for returned absconders was the resident being "made to put boxing gloves on against 'selected' opponents. Blood has been drawn in some instances."<sup>620</sup> This was confirmed to have happened on two occasions and then was stopped.<sup>621</sup>

It was recommended by the Regional Manager, Social Work and Residential Services that no further action be taken in relation to these complaints by the former staff member.<sup>622</sup>

By 1980 Wesleydale was the only institution to still use corporal punishment and this was said to be due to the age of the boys in residence and because there were no secure facilities.<sup>623</sup> Sixty-three boys received corporal punishment in the twelve months from November 1980 to November 1981 for misdemeanours such as "absconding or aggressive and defiant conduct".<sup>624</sup>

The corporal punishment register showed a decrease in the number of strappings in 1981.<sup>625</sup> "The Principal now realises that little is really achieved in the use of corporal punishment and he is now looking at other more suitable ways of maintaining reasonable discipline and levels of behaviour."<sup>626</sup>

In 1981 discipline at Wesleydale was considered to be too regimented, almost military and the cause of many of the problems in the Institution.<sup>627</sup> An example was that returned absconders were placed on P.T. supervision sessions for three days which included numerous P.T. sessions during the day and night, and being placed "on the line".<sup>628</sup> This was not elaborated on.

It was noted in 1983 that "the staff at Wesleydale had an inappropriate appreciation of the role of physical force in the institution."<sup>629</sup> There was no further information available about this.

In response to a letter from a local resident, the Minister of Social welfare stated in 1984 that there "is no total prohibition against physical contact in residential work, as it is recognised that a degree of physical restraint is necessary on some occasions."<sup>630</sup>

<sup>619</sup> Report, Gary J Anstis, ex teacher Wesleydale, undated circa 1980, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>620</sup> Report, Gary J Anstis, ex teacher Wesleydale, undated circa 1980, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>621</sup> Report, Gary J Anstis, ex teacher Wesleydale, Note in margin, unknown author, undated circa 1980, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>622</sup> Memo, SJ Stanton, Regional Manager Social Work & Residential Services to Director General, 08/06/79, Wesleydale Profile 33557.

<sup>623</sup> Memo, I Johnson, Assistant Director to Regional Director, 28/11/80, Wesleydale Discipline F5000002185732.

<sup>624</sup> Memo, I Johnson, Assistant Director to Regional Director, 28/11/80, Wesleydale Discipline F5000002185732.

<sup>625</sup> Note for file by unknown author, 29/07/81, Wesleydale Discipline 33556. Please note that we have no copy or other reference to the corporal punishment register on our files.

<sup>626</sup> Note for file by unknown author, 29/07/81, Wesleydale Discipline 33556.

<sup>627</sup> Note for file by unknown author, 29/07/81, Wesleydale Discipline 33556.

<sup>628</sup> Note for file by unknown author, 29/07/81, Wesleydale Discipline 33556.

<sup>629</sup> Memo, unknown author to unknown recipient, 12/08/83, Wesleydale Discipline 33555.

<sup>630</sup> Letter, Ann Hercus, Minister of Social Welfare to Jack Elder, MP, 29/10/84, Wesleydale Profile 33555.

## Drugs, alcohol, and tattoos

Concern was expressed in 1984 about the difficult and violent behaviour of boys admitted to the Home often being related to solvent abuse and that "the habit is so strong with some boys, that they abscond back to the 'streets' to partake of the practice."<sup>631</sup> It was considered that this behaviour was a direct result of glue sniffing.<sup>632</sup>

The head teacher felt that 1984 was the most difficult of years due to the constant misuse of solvents and drugs among other things.<sup>633</sup>

## Smoking

The Minister of Social Welfare remarked in reply to concerns of a constituent that staff do issue cigarettes to young people that are allowed to smoke, and that these are purchased from pocket money earned by the young person.<sup>634</sup>

## Contact with field social workers

Wesleydale benefited from the introduction of Regionalisation during 1979.<sup>635</sup> This continued into 1980 with residential social workers becoming more involved and experienced in dealing with their caseloads.<sup>636</sup> Contact with field social workers happened before admission and allowed for residential social workers to help formulate plans for the placement of children.<sup>637</sup>

Concern was held over the lack of information and proposals received by residential social workers from the districts in 1983 and the uncertainty this caused the residential staff.<sup>638</sup>

## Contact with community

In October 1976, an Open Day was held at Wesleydale to serve as an introduction of Wesleydale to the neighbours.<sup>639</sup> That year several outside clubs played rugby against Wesleydale teams on the grounds of the Home.<sup>640</sup>

<sup>631</sup> Quarterly Management Report 18/10/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>632</sup> Quarterly Management Report 18/10/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>633</sup> Annual Report 1984, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>634</sup> Letter, Ann Hercus, Minister of Social Welfare to Jack Elder, MP, 29/10/84, Wesleydale Profile 33555.

<sup>635</sup> Annual Report 1979, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>636</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>637</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>638</sup> Staff in Confidence Memo, from GT Comber, Director (Regional Residential Services) to Regional Director 24/08/83, Wesleydale Profile 33555, further discussed in staffing, above.

<sup>639</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

During 1977, the lack of transport for the Home meant that community involvement was minimal.<sup>641</sup>

In 1980 the Lions and Rotary were involved at times in taking the residents on outings. Youth Guidance and a Department of Maori Affairs Community Adviser were also involved in taking some of the boys on camps.<sup>642</sup>

These outings continued in 1981 coupled with educational outings. Different organisations such as the Police and St John's Ambulance visited the Home for informed talks.<sup>643</sup>

In 1982 youth and Church groups visited the Home to play sports, Youth Guidance personnel came weekly, and Service clubs also took boys to concerts or on day outings.<sup>644</sup> This kind of involvement continued into 1983.<sup>645</sup> Community involvement in 1984 continued but with more visits being made outside the Home than community members visiting the Home.<sup>646</sup>

A member of the public was concerned about the changes that were made in relation to the closure of Wesleydale. It was said that there were both good and poor changes evidenced by internal staff problems and lower staff morale as well as discipline being considered a "dirty word."<sup>647</sup> This was not addressed in any detail in the reply by the Minister of Social Welfare apart from the comment that "stresses and pressures inherent in work with troubled or troublesome children can and do affect any of these at any time."<sup>648</sup>

## Visiting committees

The Auckland Visiting Committee was formed in July of 1978 with Mr D Wilson J.P. appointed to oversee Wesleydale.<sup>649</sup>

It was mentioned by the Principal in 1980 that one of the visitors to the home was the Visiting Committee Member who visited "as often as he is able and is supportive of the Home's programme."<sup>650</sup>

In 1982 the Visiting Committee members were said to have come to Wesleydale occasionally.<sup>651</sup>

In 1983 the Visiting Committee members increased to 3 and they visited a number of times.<sup>652</sup>

<sup>640</sup> Memo, T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director (Social Work) Auckland, 8/03/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>641</sup> Memo, T Flynn, Housemaster & T Waetford, Principal Wesleydale to Director Auckland, 21/11/77, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>642</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>643</sup> Annual Report 1981, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>644</sup> Annual Report 1982, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>645</sup> Annual Report 1983, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>646</sup> Annual Report 1984, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>647</sup> Letter, unknown constituent to Jack Elder, MP, 1984, Wesleydale Profile 33555.

<sup>648</sup> Letter, Ann Hercus, Minister of Social Welfare to Jack Elder, MP, 29/10/84, Wesleydale Profile 33555.

<sup>649</sup> Annual Report 1978, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>650</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>651</sup> Annual Report 1982, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>652</sup> Annual Report 1983, Wesleydale Reports 33556.



The Visiting Committee visits were regular in 1984 with individual and collective visits.<sup>653</sup> From August to October the Committee visited five times.<sup>654</sup>

Visits continued to be regular in 1984 and at the request of staff there were some surprise visits.<sup>655</sup>

There were no Visiting Committee Reports on the Wesleydale files.

## Contact with families

The programme used at Wesleydale included weekend leave for the children and most long-term boys were allowed leave during the school holidays.<sup>656</sup> Weekend leave was granted once a boy had been in the Home for 3-4 weeks and was continued "if it can be seen as positive towards eventual return home."<sup>657</sup> As most of the admissions were from surrounding districts, the families of residents were also able to visit Wesleydale.<sup>658</sup>

In 1981 the Principal observed a developing trend of increased numbers of boys going on weekend leave and holiday placements.<sup>659</sup> Home leave continued to be offered and was not often abused.<sup>660</sup>

Some parents would come and collect their children for church or sporting activities during the weekend.<sup>661</sup>

## Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements

The introduction of Regionalisation in 1979 allowed for closer examination of children needing residential care, and allowed for appropriate post-residential placement plans to be followed through.<sup>662</sup>

In 1980 it was recognised that there was some uncertainty around case plans for new admissions.<sup>663</sup> Residential staff were often unsure as to whether a particular boy would be returned to Wesleydale or home. It was only when they were returned to Wesleydale that a residential social worker in collaboration with the field social worker could prepare a plan working towards discharge.<sup>664</sup> This uncertainty continued right through to 1984.<sup>665</sup>

<sup>653</sup> Quarterly Management Report 2/07/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>654</sup> Quarterly Management Report 18/10/84, Wesleydale Reports 33555.

<sup>655</sup> Annual Report 1984, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>656</sup> Annual Report 1979, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>657</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>658</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>659</sup> Annual Report 1981, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>660</sup> Annual Report 1984, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>661</sup> Annual Report 1982, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>662</sup> Annual Report 1978, Wesleydale Reports 33557.

<sup>663</sup> Annual Report 1980, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>664</sup> Annual Report 1981, Wesleydale Reports 33556.

<sup>665</sup> Annual Report 1981, Wesleydale Reports 33556; Annual Report 1982, Wesleydale Reports 33556; Annual Report 1983, Wesleydale Reports 33556; Annual Report 1984, Wesleydale Reports 33556.



Chapter  
**3**

# Hamilton Boys' Home

## Physical description

Hamilton Boys' Home was located two miles from Hamilton at 67 Mount View Road, Hamilton.<sup>666</sup> It was opened in early 1959.<sup>667</sup> There is no more information on this subject in the Hamilton Boys' Home files until 1978.

In 1978 staff and boys completed exterior repainting and repapered one dormitory.<sup>668</sup> Stage two of the re-roofing programme was done.<sup>669</sup> The earning fund of the residents accumulated until there was enough to purchase a swimming pool.<sup>670</sup> There is no more information to specify what an earning fund is.

Re-roofing over the three dormitories and sewing room was completed in 1979, leaving just the games area to be finished.<sup>671</sup> An exercise area was planned to be attached to the secure unit.<sup>672</sup> Staff and boys continued with the redecoration project.<sup>673</sup>

The senior wing facilities were revamped in 1980 to create a semi-secure unit for the Home.<sup>674</sup> A secure exercise area was also added in 1980 and the games/recreation area was re-roofed.<sup>675</sup> By 1981 Hamilton Boys' Home had a bed capacity of 40 in the open institution, 5 in the semi-secure unit and 4 in the secure unit.<sup>676</sup>

A proposal was presented in 1980 to convert the redundant staff wing into a, "... long term training unit for younger boys to cater for Holdsworth/Hokio age boys catering for their needs closer to district..."<sup>677</sup> This proposal was still sought in 1981.<sup>678</sup>

In 1981 it was recognised that after 22 years, the Institution needed to be redecorated.<sup>679</sup>

<sup>666</sup> Unknown author "Accent on Colour and Quality at the Melville Boys' Home", *NZ Free Lance*, 11/03/59, Hamilton Boys' Home Profile 31571; Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>667</sup> Memo, AL Rounthwaite DCWO to Superintendent, 8/1/59, Hamilton Boys' Home Profile 31571.

<sup>668</sup> Annual Report 1978, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>669</sup> Annual Report 1978, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>670</sup> Annual Report 1978, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>671</sup> Annual Report 1979, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>672</sup> Annual Report 1979, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>673</sup> Annual Report 1979, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>674</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>675</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>676</sup> Inspection Questionnaire – District & National Institutions 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773705.

<sup>677</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>678</sup> Annual Report 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>679</sup> Annual Report 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

In 1983 there were some delays with the redecoration programme.<sup>680</sup> The refurbishing of the superfluous staff wing for use as a long term hostel was almost finished by the end of that year and the renovation of the secure unit had begun.<sup>681</sup> The heating and hot water system was in need of modification.<sup>682</sup>

In 1984 the extended care unit was finished as was the refurbishing of the secure care unit.<sup>683</sup>

There was a need for upgrades in the office and staffing facilities due to the increase in staffing in 1984.<sup>684</sup> School classrooms also needed developments due to the submission for more teachers and also to cater for manual training.<sup>685</sup> The Principal stated that the need for a swimming pool was becoming more important in 1984, although a pool was purchased in 1978.

In 1985 criticisms were made about the recreational areas being so close to the accommodation blocks. For example, the football field was short and the goal line was within five metres of buildings and any construction of the administration block would mean removal of the tennis court.<sup>686</sup> The décor and fittings of the Home were considered to be of lower standard compared to Hamilton Girls' Home.<sup>687</sup>

Interior decoration was nearly complete by the end of 1985 but the need for better staffing facilities was still a problem.<sup>688</sup> The Wesleydale swimming pool was transferred to Hamilton Boys' Home.<sup>689</sup>

There were thirty beds in the Home in 1988 and during the time of the audit the roll numbers were in the high twenties.<sup>690</sup>

## Resident profile

The Hamilton Boys' Home was a regional institution established to cater for the reception and short-term care of boys aged 12-16 who were in the custody of the Department of Social Welfare but where a community placement was not practical.<sup>691</sup> The Boys' Home function was also to cater for the extended care and treatment of a small number of boys aged between 12 and 14.<sup>692</sup>

<sup>680</sup> Annual Report 1983, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>681</sup> Annual Report 1983, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>682</sup> Annual Report 1983, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>683</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>684</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>685</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>686</sup> Letter, E Te Moananui, Director Review of Residential Services to Director General, 15/02/85, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773615.

<sup>687</sup> Letter, E Te Moananui, Director Review of Residential Services to Director General, 15/02/85, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773615.

<sup>688</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>689</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>690</sup> Institution Internal Audit Report, P Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor (residential), 31/05/88, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports ADM 21-6-220 Part one.

<sup>691</sup> Hamilton Boys' Home Role and Functions, undated, Hamilton Boys' Home Profile F5000002368864.

<sup>692</sup> Hamilton Boys' Home Role and Functions, undated, Hamilton Boys' Home Profile F5000002368864.

The catchment area for Hamilton Boys' Home extended north to Huntly and Coromandel, west to Raglan, Kawhia and New Plymouth, south to Taumaranui and Turangi and east to Gisborne.<sup>693</sup>

The Principal, along with the relevant district liaison officer, was responsible for approving admissions to Hamilton Boys' Home.<sup>694</sup>

There are no admission statistics for the years preceding 1978. The number of admissions from 1978 to 1985 ranged from 367 to 487.<sup>695</sup> The lowest was in 1983 due to admission criteria changing to focus on more serious offending.<sup>696</sup> The number of admissions increased sharply in 1984 to 429 and again in 1985 to 487 admissions.<sup>697</sup>

From 1980 to 1982 just less than fifty percent of admissions were remand cases. This dropped to 40 percent in 1983 and 1984 but increased to 51 percent in 1985.<sup>698</sup> The number of state wards admitted to Hamilton Boys' Home ranged from 26 to 33 percent from 1980-1984. This dropped to 16% in 1985.<sup>699</sup> From 1980-1985 there was a trend of a decreasing number of residents being admitted on a police warrant, shown by 14 percent in 1980 compared with six percent in 1985.<sup>700</sup>

Approximately 15 percent of the residents at Hamilton Boys' Home were Pakeha, and the rest were predominantly Maori.<sup>701</sup>

In 1978 the numbers in residence were consistently above the available bed numbers.<sup>702</sup> There was an increase in readmissions to the Home and there was, "... a marked increase in the physical violent, property damage types of offending."<sup>703</sup> Some boys with gang affiliations were admitted to Hamilton Boys' Home and there was concern over the violent attitude of these admissions. A number of potentially dangerous situations had occurred in the Institution because of the violent nature of these residents.<sup>704</sup> There was also an increase in the "racial undercurrent" and it was thought that the percentage of non-Maori admissions had decreased.<sup>705</sup>

It was noted in 1978 that the use of institutions as "holding pens" had grown considerably from preceding years and needed to be carefully monitored. It was felt that when sufficient information was gained which highlighted this use of institutions, the matter should be taken up with police to seek their cooperation and also directives issued to Social Welfare staff.<sup>706</sup>

<sup>693</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>694</sup> Inspection Questionnaire – District & National Institutions 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773705.

<sup>695</sup> Annual Report 1978, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571- Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>696</sup> Annual Report 1983, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>697</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616; Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>698</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616; Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>699</sup> Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616; Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>700</sup> Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616; Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>701</sup> Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616; Annual Report 1983, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616

<sup>702</sup> Annual Report 1978, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>703</sup> Annual Report 1978, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>704</sup> Annual Report 1978, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>705</sup> Annual Report 1978, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>706</sup> Handwritten comment on Annual Report 1978, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

In 1979 the types of offences for which boys were admitted was similar to that of previous years with racism, violence and more sophisticated types of offences becoming increasingly present at the Home.<sup>707</sup> This became more prevalent in 1980 with a noticeable increase in violent offences against persons and property which were often gang-related.<sup>708</sup> This meant that on admission boys were more anti-authority and some boys stayed in the community to avoid associating with current residents.<sup>709</sup>

It was observed in 1979 that there were an increasing number of Maori boys admitted to Hamilton Boys' Home who were classified as disturbed children when previously the majority of disturbed children residents were European.<sup>710</sup>

The Principal commented in 1980 that the goals and aims of the institution had developed but not changed and were essentially determined by the types and pressures of admissions. The Home was increasingly becoming a remand and classification centre but the staff were still able to retain most aspects of short-term training.<sup>711</sup> There was a change to direct liaison between contributing districts and the Boys' Home in 1980 from previously having a local liaison officer who dealt with admissions. This change meant there was, "... a significant reduction in the briefer admissions with the advent of direct liaison."<sup>712</sup>

There was a decrease in the number of gang offences in 1981, but the types of offending had not changed.<sup>713</sup> The anti-authority nature of some inmates continued and was further experienced by the impact of the Rastapharian religion.<sup>714</sup>

The trend of admissions for crimes against persons and property continued into 1982.<sup>715</sup> The Principal remarked that a large number of state wards were re-offending and being admitted to the Home and that they showed little remorse for their actions as the court would do little but admonish and return them to care.<sup>716</sup>

The following quote from the 1985 Annual Report sets out the key issues for this year: "1985 presented considerable change. The effect of 'Judge Wallace's report' from 1984 started to have impact on this institution from the beginning of the year. The statistical figures show that District Court judges were following the spirit and intention of the report, sending more of the older offending children into our custody. There was, however, a dramatic change from the first of October when all, including those more hardened youngsters, came into our care as a direct result of the Criminal Justice Act. The remainder of the year was an adjustment period for both boys and staff. In retrospect, although the numbers in that age group had doubled, the number of young persons presenting serious difficulty and having disproportionate influence on the group, was in fact not very high at any one time. Those few particularly difficult 'ex-system' boys had severe detrimental effect on the other inmates and caused considerable stress on the staff."<sup>717</sup>

<sup>707</sup> Annual Report 1979, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>708</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>709</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>710</sup> Report on Emotionally Disturbed Children and Young People in National and Local Institutions, JR Lee, Senior Residential Social Worker, 06/03/79, Hamilton Boys' Home F5000005773723.

<sup>711</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>712</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>713</sup> Inspection Questionnaire – District & National Institutions 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773705.

<sup>714</sup> Annual Report 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>715</sup> Annual Report 1982, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>716</sup> Annual Report 1982, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>717</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

There was a reduction in acceptance of the authority of the Home, an increase in abscondings and some incidents of staff assaults because of the older age group admitted.<sup>718</sup> This older age group was illustrated by the increase of 16 year old boys to 96 in 1985 compared with 45 in 1984.<sup>719</sup>

In 1985 there was a shift to boys wearing their own clothes in the institution.<sup>720</sup>

In 1988 it was stated that Hamilton Boys' Home was a short term remand centre for boys aged 13-17 years.<sup>721</sup>

## Length of stay

There is no information on length of stay before 1978.

In 1978 the increase in numbers of admissions did not reduce the length of stay which was averaging slightly less than four weeks.<sup>722</sup> The Principal remarked that, "... contributing districts will have to accept that remand periods of three months do not fit in with either the pressures on beds or with the programme cycles."<sup>723</sup>

From 1980 to 1985 the number of residents discharged to the community ranged from 63 to 75 percent. The number of residents discharged to a National Institution for this period ranged from 9 to 10 percent with a decrease to six percent in 1985.<sup>724</sup>

It was hoped in 1983 that a longer settlement period could be offered to some of the residents due to the decrease in admissions because of the change in admission criteria.<sup>725</sup>

The highest number of admissions in 1985 decreased the length of stay of boys at the home.<sup>726</sup> This decrease was caused by the number of boys remanded to the Home for 2-3 weeks for probation reports or sentencing.<sup>727</sup>

## Programmes and care

There is little information on the files available about the type of programmes offered in the home prior to 1980 other than the following references from 1959 and 1979.

The senior housemaster in 1959 followed what he had seen in the Auckland Homes and implemented a compulsory rest period in the afternoons which lead to trouble in

<sup>718</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>719</sup> Memo, CC Chibnall, Principal, Hamilton Boys' Home to Director, Hamilton, 16/01/86, Hamilton Boys' Home Profile F5000005773705.

<sup>720</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>721</sup> Institution Internal Audit Report, P Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor (residential), 31/05/88, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports ADM 21-6-220 Part one.

<sup>722</sup> Annual Report 1978, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>723</sup> Annual Report 1978, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>724</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616; Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>725</sup> Annual Report 1983, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>726</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>727</sup> Memo, CC Chibnall, Principal, Hamilton Boys' Home to Director, Hamilton, 16/01/86, Hamilton Boys' Home Profile F5000005773705.

the dormitories at night.<sup>728</sup> The practice was criticised by an Inspector in 1959 who thought that the extra rest needed to be balanced by more physical activity at other times of the day.<sup>729</sup>

In 1979 in a report on emotionally disturbed children, it was noted that some of the children classified under this heading were able to adapt and normalise, "once exposed to our consistent, structured, warm but no-nonsense institutional environment, demonstrating that they actually have no real or deep emotional disturbance."<sup>730</sup> No specific facilities existed for those children with a real emotional disturbance but the "institutional society" of Hamilton Boys' Home provided an environment that was conducive to rehabilitation of those residents.<sup>731</sup>

Recreational activity, including indoor and outdoor sports, was a major part of the programme as it allowed, "...quick and effective contact with the boys and often good case work is made easier because of this, particularly as staff are encouraged to participate."<sup>732</sup> While it was commented that staff participation might be potentially dangerous it was, "... often the start of respectful attitudes and relationships."<sup>733</sup> Camps and outings were part of the programme and usually took place in the holidays.<sup>734</sup> "Free play" was also part of the recreation programme.<sup>735</sup>

It was felt that although contact with the residents was brief and the Home did not attempt a "remodelling or reconditioning" service, the hope was to "re-establish positive attitudes, supply alternatives, create respect and understanding of authority and develop skills sufficiently for survival in the community with adequate continuing care from other agencies."<sup>736</sup>

C.A.A. personnel were not part of the programme at Hamilton Boys' Home in 1980.<sup>737</sup> It was noted by the Principal that when Head Office were asked about the possible introduction of an Arts & Crafts instructor, no reply was received.<sup>738</sup> Proposals for C.A.A workers were intended to be made in 1981.<sup>739</sup>

Two C.A.A staff were employed as part of the programme in 1981 – one was a mechanical instructor and the other a physical education instructor who took wrestling for four hours during the week. In 1983 a pottery and craft instructor was employed as well as a trampolining instructor for one term.<sup>740</sup> The pottery instructor continued in 1985 and some other instructors were employed for short periods of time for activities such as macramé and jazzercise.<sup>741</sup>

In response to an inspectors question, "What programmes are arranged during the day to cater for ... those not attending school (other than domestic activities)?" the reply was given that, "Schooling for boys not attending school is not offered either

<sup>728</sup> Extract from Report of unknown author, 16-24/03/59, Hamilton Boys' Home Profile 31571.

<sup>729</sup> Extract from Report of unknown author, 16-24/03/59, Hamilton Boys' Home Profile 31571.

<sup>730</sup> Report on Emotionally Disturbed Children and Young People in National and Local Institutions, JR Lee, Senior Residential Social Worker, 06/03/79, Hamilton Boys' Home F5000005773616.

<sup>731</sup> Report on Emotionally Disturbed Children and Young People in National and Local Institutions, JR Lee, Senior Residential Social Worker, 06/03/79, Hamilton Boys' Home F5000005773616. For more detail about emotionally disturbed children, see the report.

<sup>732</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>733</sup> Annual Report 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>734</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>735</sup> Annual Report 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>736</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>737</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>738</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>739</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>740</sup> Annual Report 1983, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>741</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.



they are not steady enough for schooling or consider themselves beyond it.<sup>742</sup> The response when asked to give details of regular programmes and activities for residents outside of school hours was that, "This is a major structure of our overall programme & to detail it is not practicable here but our therapy and our case work is very much based on the activities programme which varies to meet the needs of the boys through various types of sporting and games activities to quieter arts and crafts activities."<sup>743</sup>

The rise in the number of admissions in 1981 meant that the programme was heavily focussed on containment, although a therapeutic atmosphere continued because of programme activity and good casework.<sup>744</sup>

The staff were aware of the need for quick and accurate assessments for residents and in 1981 the Principal stated that they were developing a system to fully assess and identify needs of residents quickly to ensure that the full potential of the brief stay is reached.<sup>745</sup>

In 1982 the "Care Profile" pilot was introduced and the "School Assessment" system was about to be used as was the starting of the "Pre-vocation Vocational" instrument.<sup>746</sup>

Boys in residence at the Home over one month qualified for the 'Care Profile' but some residents qualified on the basis of the degree to which they needed various aspects of care.<sup>747</sup> Residents destined for long-term institutions also had a Profile completed. If a resident was programmed for a Profile, the staff examined the resident's behaviour closely and the casework team gathered information from all files and reports available. The teams then used this information and their own observations to decide on a suitable intervention strategy.<sup>748</sup> The Care Profile report was then brought to staff meetings for discussion and was also checked by the review committee.<sup>749</sup>

A Report on the value of the Care Profiles found that there was no uniform procedure followed by social workers when using them and that the information was only acted on when considered relevant. It was also found that there were some delays in Care Profiles being received by social workers and other caregivers and that this diminished the potential of the Care Profiles. Overall they were thought to be, "... making important practical contributions to raising the standard of professional assessment in institutions by providing a practical and relevant vehicle for social work training."<sup>750</sup>

The development of a long-term facility for Hamilton Boys' Home was proposed in 1983. It was proposed to renovate the existing staff wing to develop a five bed unit which would be self-contained.<sup>751</sup> The programme for the long-term unit was envisaged to begin with an introductory period in the Boys Home short-term programme and enrolment at the Boys' Home school. When the resident was

<sup>742</sup> Inspection Questionnaire – District & National Institutions 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773705.

<sup>743</sup> Inspection Questionnaire – District & National Institutions 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773705.

<sup>744</sup> Annual Report 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>745</sup> Annual Report 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>746</sup> Annual Report 1982, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>747</sup> Annual Report 1982, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>748</sup> Annual Report 1982, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>749</sup> Annual Report 1982, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>750</sup> Unnamed Report, SM Baker 18.09.84, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773707.

<sup>751</sup> Memo, C Chibnall, Principal Hamilton Boys' Home to Director General, Wellington, 05/05/83, Hamilton Boys' Home Profile F5000005773615

transferred to the long-term unit they would transfer to Melville Intermediate or High School when considered stable. Home leave would be regular and the residents would be encouraged to have appropriate visitors from outside the family.<sup>752</sup> The case work would be under the direct supervision of the Assistant Principal and the three residential social workers would develop a programme that focussed on long-term care and behavioural development in the school and community. Those in the unit would have limited contact with residents in the short term institution<sup>753</sup>

The extended care (or long-term) unit came into full operation in 1984 which aimed, "... to meet the needs of boys who would normally be considered for Hokio Beach School, but who in a mildly structured environment are able to sustain continued community involvement covering school, sport, leisure and after school employment."<sup>754</sup> It was called Mt View Hostel and one of the main aims was to work closely with family and social workers with regular home contact being encouraged.<sup>755</sup> Seven boys were placed in this hostel during 1984 but four were withdrawn. The admission criterion was redefined because of this and the Principal was confident that future admissions would benefit more from the programme.<sup>756</sup>

The Principal was responsible for the casework management for all residents in the extended care unit and the admitting district was responsible for initiating the planning and review procedures in liaison with the Principal.<sup>757</sup>

The increase in staffing changes meant that a "truer case work approach" was developed in 1984 which made staff, "...more conscious of the pressures of the custodial needs of a large number of admissions coming in for short periods."<sup>758</sup>

In 1985, the increase in admissions and consequent shorter length of stay meant that there was difficulty in developing individual programmes for residents and the focus turned to containment.<sup>759</sup> The change in resident profile meant that the focus of the programme was more custodial rather than social work-based.<sup>760</sup>

The lack of craft work facilities, especially in the cultural area was highlighted in 1985 and it was hoped that the request for extra class rooms would free space for these activities.<sup>761</sup>

In 1985 the "rest period", a quiet time when boys had to be in their room, was still used in the home.<sup>762</sup> The Principal considered it to be a most valuable activity as it allowed for the residents to relax without group pressure and allowed residential staff to have individual contact with the residents in a relaxed setting.<sup>763</sup> JA Blair (for the Director-General) requested that the Director, Hamilton discuss rest periods with the

<sup>752</sup> Memo, C Chibnall, Principal Hamilton Boys' Home to Director General, Wellington, 05/05/83, Hamilton Boys' Home Profile F5000005773615.

<sup>753</sup> Memo, C Chibnall, Principal Hamilton Boys' Home to Director General, Wellington, 05/05/83, Hamilton Boys' Home Profile F5000005773615.

<sup>754</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>755</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>756</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>757</sup> Memo, BM Manchester, Acting Director-General to Director, Hamilton, 30/05/84, Hamilton Boys' Home Profile F5000005773615.

<sup>758</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>759</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>760</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>761</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>762</sup> Memo, C Chibnall, Principal Hamilton Boys' Home to Director, Hamilton, 08/11/85, Hamilton Boys' Home Profile F5000005773615.

<sup>763</sup> Memo, C Chibnall, Principal Hamilton Boys' Home to Director, Hamilton, 08/11/85, Hamilton Boys' Home Profile F5000005773615.

Principal as they were contrary to Departmental practice.<sup>764</sup> The Principal responded that the Social Work Manual discussed the need for extra sleep and that he believed compulsory rest for young people could be of, "... enormous therapeutic value to disturbed youngster..." and that the requirement in the manual was too restrictive in relation to younger children in residential care.<sup>765</sup>

In 1987 an Audit was completed on Hamilton Boys' Home to see how well staff knew and understood the Children and Young Persons (Residential Care) Regulations 1986.<sup>766</sup> The residents in the Home had positive attitudes about the changes brought about by the Regulations, such as greater access to telephones and being allowed to wear their own clothes.<sup>767</sup> The residents showed they were well inducted to the Home and used the comic "The Home" as a way of getting to know the regulations.<sup>768</sup> It was noted again that the compulsory rest periods identified in the audit were contrary to the spirit of the regulations.<sup>769</sup>

The 1988 audit report stated that residents attended school or did horticulture and garden work.<sup>770</sup> It was noted that good programmes were provided by the teachers and the gardener with some help from residential staff.<sup>771</sup>

## Work and training

There was no information in the files viewed for this project on work and training for the years prior to 1980.

In 1980, work training concentrated on the basic fundamentals for every day living. The residents carried out routine repairs around the Home and during the school holidays participated in activities like paper-hanging and painting. They also participated in the upkeep of the grounds including the gardens and lawns.<sup>772</sup>

Industrial outwork was also a sporadic part of the programme in 1980.<sup>773</sup> The industrial work continued, often at short notice and had its rewards in increased pocket money on discharge.<sup>774</sup> Industrial outwork decreased in 1982 and was predicted to remain so due to the unemployment rates in the community.<sup>775</sup> Work experience was not offered because of the short-term nature of the home and the

<sup>764</sup> Memo, JA Blair, for Director-General to Director, Hamilton, 31/10/85, Hamilton Boys' Home Profile F5000005773615.

<sup>765</sup> Memo, C Chibnall, Principal Hamilton Boys' Home to Director, Hamilton, 08/11/85, Hamilton Boys' Home Profile F5000005773615.

<sup>766</sup> Audit Report: P Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor 12/11/87, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports ADM 21-6-220 Part one.

<sup>767</sup> Audit Report: P Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor 12/11/87, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports ADM 21-6-220 Part one.

<sup>768</sup> Audit Report: P Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor 12/11/87, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports ADM 21-6-220 Part one.

<sup>769</sup> Audit Report: P Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor 12/11/87, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports ADM 21-6-220 Part one.

<sup>770</sup> Institution Internal Audit Report, P Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor (residential), 31/05/88, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports ADM 21-6-220 Part one.

<sup>771</sup> Institution Internal Audit Report, P Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor (residential), 31/05/88, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports ADM 21-6-220 Part one.

<sup>772</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>773</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>774</sup> Annual Report 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>775</sup> Annual Report 1982, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

instability of the residents, but there was a general orientation towards work experience for the fifteen year olds in the school.<sup>776</sup>

In 1980, the Principal stated that, "Vocational training other than internal work areas does not apply in our type of Regional Institution."<sup>777</sup> Though vocational training was not available,<sup>778</sup> the school unit tried to make residents aware of vocational possibilities.<sup>778</sup> At the end of 1982 a Vocational Needs Profile was being developed as part of the new assessment system in the Home.<sup>779</sup>

In 1983 the area of work training was said to be developing as much as it could within the limits of a short-term institution.<sup>780</sup>

In 1984 there was more emphasis on providing pre-vocational tuition and work experience. Because a large number of boys aged between 15 and 16 years were admitted to the school, a unit was offered on job interview techniques for these residents.<sup>781</sup> The long-term unit encouraged after school employment and gardening and household work continued as part of work training.<sup>782</sup>

In 1984 a large number of boys aged between 15 and 16 years were admitted to the school so a unit was offered on job interview techniques for these residents.<sup>783</sup>

In 1985 the institution continued to provide horticulture work training, but the gardening instructor left and due to difficulties in finding a suitable replacement, it was felt this position would not be filled until well into 1986.<sup>784</sup>

The audit report in 1987 found that the garden and horticulture work skills programme was excellent.<sup>785</sup>

## Resident-to-resident issues

No information was found on file pertaining to resident-to-resident issues prior to 1980.

It was commented in 1980 that social workers were, "... thinking twice before exposing the gentler offenders to the 'heavier' inmates now in residence."<sup>786</sup>

In 1985 with the increase in older and more sophisticated residents, the extended care unit's use was changed and it was intended to put some of the younger residents there who were likely to be more vulnerable to the these older residents.<sup>787</sup>

<sup>776</sup> Inspection Questionnaire – District & National Institutions 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773705.

<sup>777</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>778</sup> Annual Report 1982, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>779</sup> Annual Report 1982, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>780</sup> Annual Report 1983, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>781</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>782</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>783</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>784</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>785</sup> Audit Report: P Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor 12/11/87, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports ADM 21-6-220 Part one.

<sup>786</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>787</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

## Health and medication

No information pre-dating 1980 was found in relation to health issues.

In 1980, when boys were admitted to Hamilton Boys' Home they were checked by staff for physical deformities, surface scars, boils and scabies amongst other things.<sup>788</sup> The admissions were given a thorough check by the visiting GP who came three times a week.<sup>789</sup>

In 1980 the Department of Education Psychologist visited the home for a half day each week giving enough time to see two boys.<sup>790</sup> This was said to be superficial in 1981 because it meant that only approximately 20% of boys were being screened.<sup>791</sup>

Psychiatric help was more difficult to get at this time, but the Psychotherapist was able to offer much valuable help.<sup>792</sup>

The involvement of the Psychologist in the introduction of the 'Care Profile' in 1982 resulted in more contact with the psychological service. Though there was more contact with this service, the psychologist limited the number of boys screened because he believed that the 'Care Profile' assessment was more thorough in the areas he normally examined.<sup>793</sup>

In 1984 it was commented that all residents had a full medical examination within 24 hours of admission and other dental and medical matters were soon followed up.<sup>794</sup>

In 1985 the Family Planning Association gave specialist instruction in sexual development.<sup>795</sup>

In 1985 it was said that boys were, "... encouraged to have their full medical examination on admission."<sup>796</sup>

## Psychiatric hospital placement

There is no mention of psychiatric hospital placements within the Hamilton Boys' Home files.

## Staffing

There is limited information on the files about staffing before 1978.

<sup>788</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>789</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>790</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>791</sup> Inspection Questionnaire – District & National Institutions 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773705.

<sup>792</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>793</sup> Annual Report 1982, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>794</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>795</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>796</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

## Organisation

In 1959 it was noted that the DCWO arranged for fortnightly staff meetings to be attended by the Senior staff of the Receiving Home, Miss Cunningham (unknown designation) and those members of the Boys' home staff who were available.<sup>797</sup>

The District Child Welfare Officer did not consider that the appointment of night staff was necessary in 1965.<sup>798</sup>

1978 was considered a difficult year for Hamilton Boys' Home due to staffing numbers being maintained only by the use of temporary personnel.<sup>799</sup> The Assistant Principal's position was vacant for six months and a housemaster position was vacant for eight months.<sup>800</sup> There were also pressures on staff in relation to the number of residents being regularly in excess of the bed numbers available.<sup>801</sup> The minimum supervision coverage was increased from three to four by the employment of an extra temporary worker.<sup>802</sup> This extra coverage made for considerable gains in the programme and for personal contact between staff and residents as well as an increase in the safety and security levels for staff.<sup>803</sup>

There were also increasing numbers of violent and gang-affiliated admissions, and an increase in the "racial undercurrent" which also placed pressures on staff in 1978. The Principal, Mr Chibnall, believed, "that it will only be a matter of time before the numerical weakness of our staff coverage, at times such as weekends, will fail to prevent violence towards either staff or other inmates."<sup>804</sup>

The considerable pressure the Boys' Home was under due to staffing levels and the inability to prevent admissions to the Home was recognised by Mr Ball (position not recorded). It was recommended that the request for extra staff be approved by employing three special scheme workers as a temporary measure.<sup>805</sup>

Even with the problems around staffing levels, staff calibre was considered to be high which enabled them to deal with, "... heavy loadings, vacancies and increasingly disturbed children, and still maintain[ing] a therapeutic atmosphere."<sup>806</sup>

Temporary staff were again used to maintain staffing levels in 1979 due to a number of vacancies, changes in staff and the Assistant Principal being away on sick leave for a long period.<sup>807</sup> The Principal reported that throughout this situation, standards and services were maintained.<sup>808</sup>

The staff and service levels maintained in 1979 were at a basic level because the ratio of staff to residents precluded a lot of one to one contact or small group work.<sup>809</sup> This lack of staff was emphasised further with the addition of a semi-secure unit, because it required more staff attention which resulted in supervision pressures in

<sup>797</sup> Extract from Report of unknown author, 16-24/03/59, Hamilton Boys' Home Profile 31571.

<sup>798</sup> Memo, AL Rounthwaite, DCWO to Superintendent, 01/11/65, Hamilton Boys' Home Staffing 31571. The file is not clear about whether this would introduce night staff for the first time, or create additional night staff positions.

<sup>799</sup> Annual Report 1978, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>800</sup> Annual Report 1978, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>801</sup> Annual Report 1978, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>802</sup> Annual Report 1978, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>803</sup> Annual Report 1978, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>804</sup> Annual Report 1978, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>805</sup> Memo, T Ball to unknown recipient, 07/03/78, Hamilton Boys' Home Profile 31571.

<sup>806</sup> Annual Report 1978, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>807</sup> Annual Report 1979, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>808</sup> Annual Report 1979, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>809</sup> Annual Report 1979, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

the main group.<sup>810</sup> "... The closer opportunities presented by having inmates in the semi-secure unit are often lost through not having staff available at the critical times."<sup>811</sup>

In the 1979 Annual Report, the Principal noted that the minimum number of three supervisory staff per shift was dangerous, especially on weekends, even though the, "... high standards of staff sensitivity and awareness with close and vigilant supervision" prevented anti staff incidents developing.<sup>812</sup> The Principal believed that, "an increase of staff is necessary for the improved and intensive therapeutic care required for the type of children being admitted."<sup>813</sup> Staff morale was believed to be high with an increasingly professional approach developing within the programme, notwithstanding the staffing difficulties.<sup>814</sup>

Staff vacancies continued to be filled by relievers in 1980.<sup>815</sup> The minimum coverage was still in issue with only three professional staff covering all aspects of the programme, including secure and semi-secure. This meant that staff were often stretched to dangerous levels.<sup>816</sup> The request for an additional staff member for each of the three shifts was considered urgent. It was also felt that senior staff availability would be improved if a Clerical Assistant was employed because this work was being done by senior staff.<sup>817</sup>

The introduction of a clerical assistant in 1981 along with part-time staff for evening and weekend work made a, "... dramatic difference in the programme safety levels, overall coverage and quality of work."<sup>818</sup> Residential social workers became responsible for admission and the secure areas rather than the less experienced assistant residential social workers being responsible.<sup>819</sup>

C.A.A. personnel were not part of the programme at Hamilton Boys' Home.<sup>820</sup> It was noted by the Principal that when Head Office were asked about the possible introduction of an Arts & Crafts instructor, no reply was received.<sup>821</sup> Proposals for C.A.A workers were intended to be made in 1981.<sup>822</sup>

Two C.A.A staff were part of the programme in 1981 – one was a mechanical instructor and the other a physical education instructor who took wrestling for four hours during the week. In 1983 a pottery and craft instructor was employed as well as a trampolining instructor for one term.<sup>823</sup> The Pottery and mechanic instructors continued in 1984.<sup>824</sup> The pottery instructor continued in 1985 and some other instructors were employed for short periods of time for things like macramé and jassercise.<sup>825</sup> The change in admissions to older, more sophisticated boys caused stress on staff by, "the changes in their work, the pressures of the numbers and types of boys' being admitted, staff inability to carry out their perceived social

<sup>810</sup> Annual Report 1979, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>811</sup> Annual Report 1979, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>812</sup> Annual Report 1979, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>813</sup> Annual Report 1979, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>814</sup> Annual Report 1979, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>815</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>816</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>817</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>818</sup> Annual Report 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>819</sup> Annual Report 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>820</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>821</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>822</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>823</sup> Annual Report 1983, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>824</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>825</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

work/assessment roles to the depth they would like and the physical risks they feel are presenting."<sup>826</sup>

In 1982 the Principal was away on sick leave or was involved with other committees which meant Mr Flynn, the Assistant Principal had considerable responsibility for the Home.<sup>827</sup> Chad Chibnall, Principal Hamilton Boys' Home, presented a paper on his visits and impressions while representing the Residential Care Association at the 10<sup>th</sup> Congress of the International Association of Workers for mal-adjusted children in Copenhagen.<sup>828</sup>

In 1982 three additional staff were employed to provide staff cover to the secure unit where a boy awaiting a murder trial was being contained.<sup>829</sup> The Principal commented that this temporary staff coverage highlighted the difficulty in justifying the use of a secure unit without constant staff coverage.<sup>830</sup> When the boy was acquitted of murder, the secure coverage was taken away. The Principal remarked that the lack of cover was a long-standing issue about which promises had been made but never fulfilled. He believed "that supervisory staff could not be expected to carry the responsibility of having to leave boys locked in a secure unit without staff coverage."<sup>831</sup> When it was realised in 1983 that the boy acquitted of murder would be remaining in the secure unit for at least another six months (reasons unknown), one staff member was reinstated to cover secure care. With this staff member, "... and by making an additional two staff available a programme for 5 boys ... can be implemented. This is in line with our objective of working with children in care in their home communities..."<sup>832</sup>

In 1983 a number of staff were placed in acting positions due to staff changes and transfers within, and to other institutions. The Principal mentioned that this did not affect the quality of work.<sup>833</sup> The main need for staffing at the end of this year was to have the Assistant Principal taken off roster enabling him to facilitate better casework supervision and planning.<sup>834</sup>

There was a high turnover of staff in 1984 but this did not affect the service delivered to the community and the residents.<sup>835</sup> Six new positions were established which allowed for the secure unit to be permanently staffed along with the long-term care unit.<sup>836</sup> One position was created to cover the gap made by taking the Assistant Principal off the roster which was said by the Principal to enhance the quality of service provided.<sup>837</sup> With the increase in staff it was decided to put the residential social workers on a two month rotation of the three units; open, secure and extended care to provide experience in each situation.<sup>838</sup>

<sup>826</sup> Memo, CC Chibnall, Principal, Hamilton Boys' Home to Director, Hamilton, 12/12/85, Hamilton Boys' Home Profile, F5000005773615.

<sup>827</sup> Annual Report 1982, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>828</sup> Residential Care Association Inc Report, Chad Chibnall, June 1982, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773615.

<sup>829</sup> Annual Report 1982, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>830</sup> Annual Report 1982, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>831</sup> Annual Report 1982, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>832</sup> Report, BM Manchester, Acting Director-General to the Acting Minister of Social Welfare, 14/06/83, Hamilton Boys' Home Staffing F5000005773615.

<sup>833</sup> Annual Report 1983, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>834</sup> Annual Report 1983, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>835</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>836</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>837</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>838</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.



There were limited staffing changes in 1985 which was attributed to the stabilising of the new positions created the previous year.<sup>839</sup> Relievers were brought in during the holiday period so that more than one person was on each shift.<sup>840</sup>

The Principal, Mr Chibnall, retired in 1988 and the Assistant Principal acted in this position.<sup>841</sup>

## Training/Supervision

A casework team comprised of the Assistant Principal or a senior residential social worker, a residential social worker and an assistant residential social worker. The work of the residential and assistant residential social workers was overseen by their team leader whose responsibilities included casework supervision, programme responsibility and staff training.<sup>842</sup>

A full staff meeting was held weekly, as was a training meeting between the assistant residential social workers and the Assistant Principal.<sup>843</sup> Senior staff also met once a week to discuss policy and programmes.<sup>844</sup>

All relevant files and manuals were available to staff which ensured that a high level of knowledge was maintained by staff.<sup>845</sup>

Staff training continued in 1980 with staff attending internal and external courses.<sup>846</sup> This training continued in 1981 with staff also attending courses at the Residential Staff Training Service.<sup>847</sup>

In 1984 there was limited opportunity for in-service training courses, but internal staff training was developed during the year and mainly carried out by the senior residential social workers.<sup>848</sup>

The increase in staff in 1984 meant that the three senior residential social workers were responsible for the full supervision of their casework teams. Individual formal supervision meetings were held every three weeks and a case work meeting was held once a week. The weekly staff meetings continued as in previous years.<sup>849</sup>

Staff training continued in 1985 with an emphasis on modular training for the recently appointed assistant residential social workers.<sup>850</sup>

In 1987 the Audit report found that there was a need for an annual staff training programme for all staff, "... on the Children and Young Persons regulations, practice implications and their roles and responsibilities under the regulations."<sup>851</sup>

The Audit report in 1988 recommended, "... that a Residential Social Work model be adopted to help staff translate Philosophy to effective practice."<sup>852</sup> The need for

<sup>839</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>840</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>841</sup> Institution Internal Audit Report, P Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor (residential), 31/05/88, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports ADM 21-6-220 Part one.

<sup>842</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>843</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>844</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>845</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>846</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>847</sup> Annual Report 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>848</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>849</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>850</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>851</sup> Audit Report: P Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor 12/11/87, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports ADM 21-6-220 Part one.

monitoring staff supervision was realised as well as the need for developing internal staff training.<sup>853</sup>

## Concern

It was stated by an unknown author that the Boys' Home was not functioning too well in 1959 because none of the staff had experience in a Child Welfare Institution.<sup>854</sup> "Control of boys, grouping, discipline and use of the remand room were present problems which one would expect to find and were causing concern."<sup>855</sup> The senior housemaster was not experienced in group work and was considered to be "surprisingly fearful" because the personality of the residents was new to him.<sup>856</sup> There is no response to this concern recorded on file.

A newspaper clipping in 1967 reported that Mr Hardy S.M. was concerned about the lack of supervision in the Home and that residents were absconding too frequently.<sup>857</sup> There was no response on file to this concern.

In 1986 after two residents absconded from the semi-secure unit it became evident that half-hour nightly checks by the staff member in charge had not occurred. The impression gained by the Assistant Principal was that it was because this staff member was afraid to enter the semi-secure and secure units when residents were in there, especially when they were older and bigger residents.<sup>858</sup> The Assistant Principal considered that there were two problems that needed attention. The first was how to ensure that staff were completing their job properly and the second was how to help them cope with the perceived threat they felt under.<sup>859</sup> An enquiry by the Principal revealed that other night staff were becoming increasingly nervous about entering the semi-secure unit when a number of boys' were in residence there. This was because the boys were not locked into their individual rooms and there was potential for these boys to form a group to overpower a staff member.<sup>860</sup> The night staff were instructed by the Principal that both staff were to be present when checks of these units were made if there was more than one resident in secure.<sup>861</sup>

## Schooling

No information on the school programme was found until 1978

<sup>852</sup> Institution Internal Audit Report, P Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor (residential), 31/05/88, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports ADM 21-6-220 Part one.

<sup>853</sup> Institution Internal Audit Report, P Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor (residential), 31/05/88, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports ADM 21-6-220 Part one.

<sup>854</sup> Extract from Report of unknown author, 16-24/03/59, Hamilton Boys' Home Profile 31571.

<sup>855</sup> Extract from Report of unknown author, 16-24/03/59, Hamilton Boys' Home Profile 31571.

<sup>856</sup> Extract from Report of unknown author, 16-24/03/59, Hamilton Boys' Home Profile 31571.

<sup>857</sup> Unknown author, "Supervision at Home slated as 'inadequate'", *Waikato Times* 28/04/67, Hamilton Boys' Home Staffing 31571.

<sup>858</sup> Memo, DS Horsefield, Assistant Principal, Hamilton Boys' Home to Principal, Hamilton Boys' Home, 17/06/86, Hamilton Boys' Home Secure F5000005773615.

<sup>859</sup> Memo, DS Horsefield, Assistant Principal, Hamilton Boys' Home to Principal, Hamilton Boys' Home, 17/06/86, Hamilton Boys' Home Secure F5000005773615.

<sup>860</sup> Memo, CC Chibnall, Principal, Hamilton Boys' Home to Acting Director, Hamilton, 24/06/89, Hamilton Boys' Home Secure F5000005773615.

<sup>861</sup> Memo, CC Chibnall, Principal, Hamilton Boys' Home to Acting Director, Hamilton, 24/06/89, Hamilton Boys' Home Secure F5000005773615.

By 1981, the general objective of the Home was to get all children into the school setting which was situated on the premises, regardless of their age and even if it was only on a part-time basis.<sup>862</sup> In 1980, no residents were attending school outside the Home or taking correspondence.<sup>863</sup>

The focus of the school was on allowing the residents to achieve success in order to fulfil a more "positive self concept". This was done by including a strong sports focus to the school rather than having a completely academic programme.<sup>864</sup>

The number of residents attending school increased over the period 1978-1980 with 180 pupils taught in 1978 and 215 taught in 1980. This increase in school attendance put pressure on the three teachers and the one teacher aide.<sup>865</sup> Additional teacher aid hours were allocated to expand the individual use of the remedial reading programme.<sup>866</sup>

The school programme in 1980 focussed on rewarding a boy for what he could do well in order to build on personal strength.<sup>867</sup> Sporting participation was encouraged, including boxing and gymnastics as well as team games.<sup>868</sup> "A successful aspect of our school programme focuses on teacher-organised and run gym sessions. Where possible the teachers do all of the 'tasks' or activities they expect the boys to do – this is done to eliminate double standards which all too often prevail."<sup>869</sup>

A main objective of the school was to provide a current assessment of the academic and social progress of a boy to the Principal, but it was noted that the short stay of some of the boys hindered this.<sup>870</sup> The curriculum was designed to meet each boy's individual needs and the school focussed on relevance and interest values in its programmes. This allowed drivers licence, fire arms safety, drug education and other practical lessons to be taught.<sup>871</sup> The academic aspect of schooling was initially structured and supervised and then could be liberalised once "basic listening and common courtesy skills" were established.<sup>872</sup>

The relationship between the school unit and the Institution was regarded by the Head teacher as being positive and constructive.<sup>873</sup> In 1981 the Principal recorded that, "... we believe we are singularly fortunate in the schooling we have available from the Head Teacher, Mr Burke, and his staff. The care concern and thoroughness they display make their service something the boys seek and enjoy."<sup>874</sup> The school and the Home staff met fortnightly and there were regular informal meetings to ensure that there were consistent policies between the Home and the school.<sup>875</sup>

<sup>862</sup> Inspection Questionnaire – District & National Institutions 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773705.

<sup>863</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>864</sup> Memo, CC Chibnall, Principal, Hamilton Boys' Home to Acting Director, Hamilton, 08/12/81, Hamilton Boys' Home Education F5000005773615.

<sup>865</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>866</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>867</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>868</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>869</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>870</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>871</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>872</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>873</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>874</sup> Annual Report 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>875</sup> Annual Report 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

It was felt that the wide catchment area of admission often meant that there was limited information relating to boys academic and social progress prior to their admission<sup>876</sup>

There was concern over the attitude of the boys who entered the school unit as often these boys saw little value in continuing to attend school and showed apprehension and resentment towards the teaching staff.<sup>877</sup> It was noted in 1981 that there was a consistent level of under-achievement in the residents at the Boys' Home.<sup>878</sup>

The average number of boys in each class in 1981 was approximately 10.<sup>879</sup> The Head Teacher noted that although there were three teachers and a part-time teacher aide, there was sometimes a need for extra staff due to excessive resident numbers.<sup>880</sup> The number of boys in the school increased in 1982,<sup>881</sup> but dropped in 1983 because of the decrease in admissions to the Home. This allowed for, "... more individualised programming and remedial work..."<sup>882</sup> There was concern in 1984 over the pressure of increased class numbers and submissions were made for extra staff and facilities.<sup>883</sup>

It was felt by the Principal and Head Teacher that there should be greater flexibility in relief time for teachers to enable them to meet with others in community school setting in order to gain knowledge about reintegration of residents to community schools.<sup>884</sup> It was also felt that the teacher-to-student ratio should be examined as they were considered to be too high.<sup>885</sup>

In 1983 horticulture was added to the school programme to operate in conjunction with the institution's gardening programme.<sup>886</sup>

The Head Teacher commented in 1983 that the Care Profile and School Skills assessment meant that residential social workers were coming into the school to observe the behaviour of the residents and view their work. "It is gratifying to see this interaction taking place."<sup>887</sup> The Teachers' Guide and Handbook became available to the school in 1983 and was considered by the Head Teacher to be a major achievement.<sup>888</sup>

The school unit took approximately 90% of admissions in 1984 and two boys in the long-term unit attended Melville High School in 1984.<sup>889</sup>

The Head Teacher commented that, "The 1984 school year was more difficult than most of the past 9 years our staff has been together in this school setting."<sup>890</sup> This

<sup>876</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>877</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>878</sup> Memo, CC Chibnall, Principal, Hamilton Boys' Home to Acting Director, Hamilton, 08/12/81, Hamilton Boys' Home Education F5000005773615.

<sup>879</sup> Inspection Questionnaire – District & National Institutions 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773705.

<sup>880</sup> Annual Report 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>881</sup> Annual Report 1982, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>882</sup> Annual Report 1983, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>883</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>884</sup> Memo, CC Chibnall, Principal, Hamilton Boys' Home to Acting Director, Hamilton, 08/12/81, Hamilton Boys' Home Education F5000005773615.

<sup>885</sup> Memo, CC Chibnall, Principal, Hamilton Boys' Home to Acting Director, Hamilton, 08/12/81, Hamilton Boys' Home Education F5000005773615.

<sup>886</sup> Annual Report 1983, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>887</sup> Annual Report 1983, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>888</sup> Annual Report 1983, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>889</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>890</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

was due to the increase in admissions, the changes in educational needs and the intensity of the problems of boys admitted to the Home and school increasing.<sup>891</sup>

The increase in 15 to 16 year old boys being enrolled at the school in 1984 was a cause of concern as the school was ill-equipped to meet the needs of this age group. It was hoped that the Department of Education would give urgent consideration to employing an additional teacher at the school in order for the school to meet the expectations of the institution.<sup>892</sup>

A submission was made by the Head Teacher for an additional teacher and part-time teaching assistance in 1984.<sup>893</sup> This was due to the steady increase in admissions to the school noting that, "There has been times over recent months where up to twelve boys have been unable to attend the school unit due to severe over crowding."<sup>894</sup> A one-to-ten pupil-teacher ratio was considered realistic by the Head Teacher but it was stated one classroom usually had over ten pupils which meant that the remedial and core curriculum was not being given to some boys on an individual level.<sup>895</sup>

The concern over the ability to cater for all age-groups in the schooling situation had increased in 1985 as had the need to provide pre-employment programmes for the increasing number of older residents.<sup>896</sup>

The school programme was deemed to be good in the 1987 Audit Report.<sup>897</sup>

In 1988 the audit noted that the head teacher had spent time arranging activities for the residents by taking himself out of his teaching role and that this should be done by residential staff.<sup>898</sup>

## Absconding

There is limited information on file about absconding before 1979.

From the years 1979 to 1985 there were an increasing number of residents absconding illustrated by there being only 42 absconders in 1979 compared with 91 in 1984 and then a large increase in 1985 to 170.<sup>899</sup> The number of absconding incidents ranged from 41 to 52 incidents from 1980 to 1984 with a major increase in 1985 to 99 incidents of absconding.<sup>900</sup>

<sup>891</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>892</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>893</sup> HG Burke, Head Teacher, Case for an Additional Teacher and Part Time Teaching Assistance, 20/09/84, Hamilton Boys' Home Education F5000005773615.

<sup>894</sup> HG Burke, Head Teacher, Case for an Additional Teacher and Part Time Teaching Assistance, 20/09/84, Hamilton Boys' Home Education F5000005773615.

<sup>895</sup> HG Burke, Head Teacher, Case for an Additional Teacher and Part Time Teaching Assistance, 20/09/84, Hamilton Boys' Home Education F5000005773615.

<sup>896</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>897</sup> Audit Report: P Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor 12/11/87, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports ADM 21-6-220 Part one.

<sup>898</sup> Institution Internal Audit Report, P Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor (residential), 31/05/88, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports ADM 21-6-220 Part one.

<sup>899</sup> Annual Report 1979, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571; Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616; Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>900</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616; Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616; Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

The usual time residents absconded was late in the evening or during the night.<sup>901</sup>

In 1980 local police were helpful and cooperative in relation to residents who had absconded, but they were considered to be mainly ineffective.<sup>902</sup> It was only when the absconder offended that their identity was established.<sup>903</sup>

Only two residents were classed as persistent absconders in 1980.<sup>904</sup>

## Secure care

### Secure and semi-secure

Plans were underway in 1979 for a "much needed" exercise room to be attached to the secure complex. It was considered that this would also improve security.<sup>905</sup>

A semi-secure unit which could hold a maximum of five boys was added in 1979. All rooms of the unit were open to one another, with only the entrance door being locked during lights out. Those boys in the semi-secure unit spent the majority of their time with the main group of boys from the open unit allowing better integration of the residents with their peers. The programme in the unit was considered to be more flexible than the secure unit programme and it was found that, "... settling is much faster and more positive when this lighter form of security can be used."<sup>906</sup> The Principal considered that the function of the semi-secure unit was, however, compromised by a lack of staff.<sup>907</sup>

There was a complete change in the use of the secure unit in 1980. The addition of the semi-secure unit meant that admissions to secure decreased, with the secure unit being used mainly for returned absconders, residents who were considered a risk to peers on admission and time out for volatile or irrational behaviour.<sup>908</sup> Permission for admission to secure had to be granted by the Principal, or in the case of a child, the Director's approval was needed.<sup>909</sup>

The length of stay in the secure unit was not to exceed two days unless the Principal's approval was obtained and four days was the maximum a resident could spend in secure.<sup>910</sup>

The limited number of staff in the Home meant that counselling and instructing in secure was often done informally when time was available.<sup>911</sup> Constant staffing in secure was needed for, "... the unit to function at maximum efficiency" but could not be done due to the needs of the residents in the open institution being paramount.<sup>912</sup>

<sup>901</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>902</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>903</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>904</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>905</sup> Annual Report 1979, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>906</sup> Annual Report 1979, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>907</sup> Annual Report 1979, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>908</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>909</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>910</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>911</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>912</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

The introduction of part-time staff in 1981 meant that residential social workers were responsible for admissions and secure, "... with a marked improvement in boys settling."<sup>913</sup>

There was an increase in the use of secure for new admissions in 1982 due to the nature and gravity of offences and an increase in the number of readmissions.<sup>914</sup>

In 1983 it was affirmed that secure care was used as little as possible, usually only for absconders and admissions, but most admissions were through the semi-secure unit.<sup>915</sup> Secure care was not used for discipline and the average length of stay was one day (with the exception of one boy there for five months awaiting a murder trial).<sup>916</sup>

The secure unit began to be renovated in 1983 to provide a more acceptable form of close custody.<sup>917</sup> These renovations were completed in 1984 to provide an environment that was, "... far more conducive to the type of therapeutic programme we set out to operate."<sup>918</sup> The unit was not heated during winter months as the heating system failed and alternatives were not successful.<sup>919</sup>

Extra staffing was granted for the new long-term unit in 1983, which allowed for staff supervision of boys in secure, though not consistently due to delays in appointments.<sup>920</sup> The introduction of 3 residential social work positions in 1984 allowed for the secure unit to be staffed during waking hours.<sup>921</sup>

In 1985 comments about the deficiencies at Hamilton Boys' Home included, "... an inappropriate secure unit that is still inadequate."<sup>922</sup> It was constructed with temporary material and security was considered to be minimal. This was illustrated by the number of residents escaping with ease and frequency even after the upgrading in 1984.<sup>923</sup>

There were major problems with the secure unit in 1985. It was used more frequently and for greater lengths of time (although the average length of stay was 3 days) due to changes in the type of boys admitted, many of whom had previously been in either the department's long-term institutions or with the Justice Department.<sup>924</sup> This caused pressure on the unit and meant that the semi-secure unit had to be used for secure purposes as well.<sup>925</sup> There was one staff member specifically allocated to secure until August when the appointment of relief staff meant that a second person was available to the unit also.<sup>926</sup> The deficiencies of the secure unit were highlighted over this time and it was considered inadequate for meal, recreation, exercise and activities. There were also serious concerns about the lack of heating.<sup>927</sup> Schooling was also an issue in 1985. The programme was

<sup>913</sup> Annual Report 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>914</sup> Annual Report 1982, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>915</sup> Annual Report 1983, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>916</sup> Annual Report 1983, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>917</sup> Annual Report 1983, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>918</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>919</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>920</sup> Annual Report 1983, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>921</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>922</sup> Letter, E Te Moananui, Director Review of Residential Services to Director General, 15/02/85, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773615.

<sup>923</sup> Letter, E Te Moananui, Director Review of Residential Services to Director General, 15/02/85, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773615.

<sup>924</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>925</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>926</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>927</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

as varied as possible and the school provided work for residents in secure, but specific teaching time was not available.<sup>928</sup>

In 1986 it was recognised by the Principal that night staff were nervous about making routine checks of the secure units – especially semi-secure where the boys were not locked into their individual rooms.<sup>929</sup> It was felt that the cause of this was the change in the type of boys admitted to the Home because of the Criminal Justice Act 1985.<sup>930</sup>

The audit report in 1987 noted that one of the matters requiring attention was, “Reasons for secure admissions as stated in the regulations be used in recordings.”<sup>931</sup>

The audit report in 1988 stated that there needed to be clarification regarding boys in secure not being allowed to wear their own clothes.<sup>932</sup>

## Programmes and Education

The semi-secure unit allowed for greater emphasis in programme work for new admissions to the Home.<sup>933</sup>

Because the length of stay in secure was brief, programmes focussed on reading and writing and were available to boys at all times.<sup>934</sup> Recreation and leisure activities took place twice a day for one hour in the gym or the recreation room.<sup>935</sup>

Programmes and activities in secure care were hindered by the lack of staffing in the Home generally. It was said by the Principal that the secure area often needed two staff because of the attitude and aggressiveness of the residents placed there.<sup>936</sup>

In 1981 secure programmes were focused on reading, writing, instructions about the Boys' Home and exercise/recreation.<sup>937</sup> The unstable temperament of the residents and the short length of stay in secure meant that no formal teaching was given.<sup>938</sup>

The programme continued to be the same in 1982, “... with the Senior Officer talking to each youth during his shift in order to determine attitude so that movement can be to the open institution as soon as possible and into the normal programme of recreation and education.”<sup>939</sup>

<sup>928</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>929</sup> Memo, CC Chibnall, Principal, Hamilton Boys' Home to Acting Director, Hamilton, 24/06/89, Hamilton Boys' Home Secure F5000005773615. For more about this, see staffing.

<sup>930</sup> Memo, CC Chibnall, Principal, Hamilton Boys' Home to Acting Director, Hamilton, 24/06/89, Hamilton Boys' Home Secure F5000005773615.

<sup>931</sup> Audit Report: P Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor 12/11/87, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports ADM 21-6-220 Part one.

<sup>932</sup> Institution Internal Audit Report, P Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor (residential), 31/05/88, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports ADM 21-6-220 Part one.

<sup>933</sup> Annual Report 1982, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>934</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>935</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>936</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>937</sup> Annual Report 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>938</sup> Inspection Questionnaire – District & National Institutions 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773705.

<sup>939</sup> Annual Report 1982, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.



In 1983 programmes were set in secure to ensure that, when possible, residents were able to attend work or school under supervision.<sup>940</sup>

The head teacher commented in 1984 that providing a meaningful education programme for the secure unit was a concern but that there were no time or resources to meet that need.<sup>941</sup> The school was supplying resource material and a residential social worker taught the residents in an activity room off the semi-secure wing.<sup>942</sup>

Schooling was an issue in 1985. The programme was as varied as possible and the school provided work for residents in secure, but specific teaching time was not available.<sup>943</sup>

## Discipline

There is a lack of information held on file in relation to discipline in Hamilton Boys' Home but it was noted that there were no time-out rooms in Hamilton Boys' Home and the "Room Time Out" procedure was not used.<sup>944</sup> It was also noted that the lack of this procedure meant that some residents were placed in secure for longer periods than necessary or appropriate.<sup>945</sup>

## Physical punishment

There is no mention of physical punishment within the Hamilton Boys' Home files.

## Drugs, alcohol, and tattoos

There is no mention in the files of drug, alcohol or tattoo issues prior to 1980.

It was noted in 1980 that there was a small reduction in drug and sniffing problems.<sup>946</sup>

The Principal and Assistant Principal were members of a committee as part of the Hamilton City Council that was, "... monitoring solvent abuse within the city boundaries and its effect on youth and the community."<sup>947</sup>

<sup>940</sup> Annual Report 1983, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>941</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>942</sup> HG Burke, Head Teacher, Case for an Additional Teacher and Part Time Teaching Assistance, 20/09/84, Hamilton Boys' Home Education F5000005773615.

<sup>943</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>944</sup> Report from the Working Party "Lockable Time Out in Residential Facilities", March 1987, Hamilton Boys Home Discipline, "Room Time Out" meaning time out in a room for a certain period of time.

<sup>945</sup> Report from the Working Party "Lockable Time Out in Residential Facilities", March 1987, Hamilton Boys Home Discipline (no file ref).

<sup>946</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>947</sup> Memo, TE Flynn, Assistant Principal, Hamilton Boys Home to ADSW of all districts, 01/08/85, Hamilton Boys' Home Drugs F5000002357949.

## Smoking

There is no information held on Hamilton Boys' Home files in relation to smoking.

## Contact with field social workers

In 1978 the Principal commented that Hamilton Boys' Home, "...enjoyed good rapport with the social work personnel in all of our contributing districts and their understanding of our needs when under pressure has been appreciated."<sup>948</sup>

In 1980 the Boys' Home began directly liaising with the districts which enabled them to give a better service to other contributing districts.<sup>949</sup> It was thought that this direct liaison had the effect of reducing the number of brief admission to the institution.<sup>950</sup>

Weekly meetings were held with social workers and the residential staff to discuss case problems of residents.<sup>951</sup> Frequent visits were also made to Hamilton Boys' Home by field social workers and senior staff.<sup>952</sup>

## Contact with community

The residential staff were encouraged to organise activities where community groups could participate and interact with the residents.<sup>953</sup>

Religious instruction was held every Sunday with a variety of dominations invited to send representatives.<sup>954</sup>

Sports games outside the institutions were held but discontinued in 1980 on a trial basis in order to encourage more recreational involvement on the Home's grounds which could then involve the whole institution rather than a small team of boys.<sup>955</sup> In 1981 it was acknowledged that while community involvement in sporting activities from outside groups coming to the Home was encouraged, only a small number actually came.<sup>956</sup>

Outings and camps were part of the programme, and some of the longer stay boys were able to go into town with an escort, for example, to go to the movies.<sup>957</sup>

<sup>948</sup> Annual Report 1978, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports 31571.

<sup>949</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>950</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>951</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>952</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>953</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>954</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>955</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>956</sup> Annual Report 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>957</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

Visitors were encouraged to come to the Home and became a daily feature of the Home. School teachers, police, social workers, students from other schools and training colleges were just some of the many people who visited the Home.<sup>958</sup>

Contact with the community continued to be encouraged with Touch Rugby competitions and rugby league being organised in 1985.<sup>959</sup>

In 1985 Hamilton Boys' Home hosted the social work section of the Hamilton visit of the Maori Perspective Advisory Committee and welcomed over 200 people into the Home.<sup>960</sup>

## Visiting committees

There was no information found on file in relation to visiting committees prior to 1980.

There were three visiting committee members in 1980 who worked, "... on a triangular format, each respectively attached to the three Hamilton Dept. S.W. institutions. Since the visiting committees (sic) inception, all three members have completed a period of observation at the Boys Home."<sup>961</sup>

It was commented by the Principal in 1981 that more frequent visits by the visiting committee would be "wise".<sup>962</sup> During this year the visiting committee changed and there was a gap in contact because of this.<sup>963</sup>

During 1982 the three visiting committee members worked on a six month rotation and were allocated one of the three Hamilton Institutions for this period.<sup>964</sup> It was believed, "... that the intention and function of visiting committees has been carried out in the spirit of the act and are more than a little concerned that the intention to advertise for 'interested people' will only be an invitation to people who wish to change a system they disagree with."<sup>965</sup>

In 1983 two of the three members visited the Home often and the chairman came regularly and was available for consultation.<sup>966</sup>

The chairman of the visiting committee continued to visit regularly and offer support in 1984. The other two members still visited, but with less regularity. The Principal thought it desirable that these two members become more involved with the Home.<sup>967</sup>

<sup>958</sup> Annual Report 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616; Annual Report 1983, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>959</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>960</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>961</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>962</sup> Inspection Questionnaire – District & National Institutions 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773705.

<sup>963</sup> Annual Report 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>964</sup> Annual Report 1982, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>965</sup> Annual Report 1982, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>966</sup> Annual Report 1983, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>967</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

The chairman continued to visit in 1985 and the, "... two members who had previously shown little support resigned during the year and their replacements were subject to many delays."<sup>968</sup> It was hoped that the positions would be filled in 1986.<sup>969</sup>

There were eleven visits made to the Institution during 1986 and concern was raised by the committee over vacancies, were later filled.<sup>970</sup>

In 1987 the visiting committee made 21 visits to the Home.<sup>971</sup>

In 1987 an Audit of the Home found that the residents did not know the role and function of the Visiting Committee nor its members.<sup>972</sup>

## Contact with families

Because of the wide catchment area for admissions to Hamilton Boys' Home, most residents were not given home leave unless it was a special occasion. The exceptions to this were boys on their way to a National Institution who were granted two or three days home leave and most boys were given a week at home over the Christmas period.<sup>973</sup>

Boys were able to have visits from family at Hamilton Boys' Home but these were more frequent for locally admitted residents.<sup>974</sup>

In 1983 it was noted that while home leave was not part of the programme, the opportunity for deserving boys going on leave was sought if their length of stay warranted it.<sup>975</sup>

Those residents in the long-term unit were encouraged to make regular home contact in 1984.<sup>976</sup>

Home leave was more flexible in 1984. A boy who was in residence for longer than three weeks was able to be considered for day leave and then if remaining longer, for weekend leave with the approval of the field social worker.<sup>977</sup>

Residents in the extended care unit were able to go on home leave once a month.<sup>978</sup>

## Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements

Hamilton Boys' Home was a short term residence which meant that the programme was all "pre discharge".<sup>979</sup> "Every attempt is made to develop positive attitudes to

<sup>968</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>969</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>970</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report, 1986, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000006661405.

<sup>971</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report, 1987, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000006661405.

<sup>972</sup> Audit Report: P Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor 12/11/87, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports ADM 21-6-220 Part one.

<sup>973</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>974</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>975</sup> Annual Report 1983, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>976</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>977</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>978</sup> Annual Report 1985, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

this [discharge].<sup>980</sup> Other agencies were kept informed of progress through either regular phone calls, written reports if the resident was there beyond three weeks and case conferences with social workers when possible.<sup>981</sup> The resident was involved in discussions about his discharge when possible and informed of the recommendations and decisions.<sup>982</sup>

If the recommended placement upon discharge was with family or a foster home, preliminary visits for meals or weekends occurred prior to this placement.<sup>983</sup>

In 1980 the Principal commented that, "There are times when pressure of numbers and circumstances beyond control cause a 'horse trading' in and out with districts and this is very disconcerting. It is a policy that is resisted."<sup>984</sup> The "horse trading" was largely discontinued in 1981.<sup>985</sup>

The introduction of the Care Profile assessment focussed specifically on discharge and provided information for when a boy was discharged from the Home.<sup>986</sup>

---

<sup>979</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>980</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>981</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>982</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>983</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>984</sup> Annual Report 1980, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>985</sup> Annual Report 1981, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616.

<sup>986</sup> Annual Report 1984, Hamilton Boys' Home Reports F5000005773616. For more on Care Profile see Programmes and Care.

# Epuni Boys' Home

## Physical description

The Lower Hutt Boys' Home opened on 29 January 1959 at 441 Riverside Drive North, Lower Hutt, with a capacity of up to 22 boys, including two secure beds.<sup>987</sup> Accommodation consisted of single rooms.<sup>988</sup> The local council had objected to the siting of the home in a residential area.<sup>989</sup>

In 1961, six beds were added and the two secure beds became secure cells.<sup>990</sup> By February 1962, extensive building renovations temporarily limited Epuni's capacity to 20.<sup>991</sup> Renovations were completed by July 1962, with capacity restored to 28.<sup>992</sup>

In 1965, adjacent land was purchased to provide additional recreation area, but was used to build staff housing.<sup>993</sup> A fence was erected along the northern boundary to protect neighbouring properties.<sup>994</sup> More land was purchased in 1967.<sup>995</sup>

In 1966, further additions increased capacity to 42 beds plus 4 secure beds (2 additional cells also being built in 1966).<sup>996</sup> A new gymnasium was built in 1966.<sup>997</sup> The new classroom block opened in 1968.<sup>998</sup>

In 1969, the residence changed its name to the Epuni Boys' Home.<sup>999</sup> Further land was purchased shortly after the name change. In 1970, work started on a fence on

<sup>987</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p2.

<sup>988</sup> Thomas, Rita, "Time spent in a Boys' Home can be a turning point for many wayward young men", *Evening Post*, 17/12/69, Epuni Profile 31567.

<sup>989</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p2.

<sup>990</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p2.

<sup>991</sup> Memo, Elliot (ADCWO) to DCWOs in Lower North Island, 13/2/62, Epuni Profile F5000002843724.

<sup>992</sup> Memo, FitzGerald (DCWO) to DCWOs in Lower North Island, 6/7/62, Epuni Profile 31565.

<sup>993</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p2.

<sup>994</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p2.

<sup>995</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p2.

<sup>996</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p2.

<sup>997</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p2.

<sup>998</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p2.

<sup>999</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p3.

the southern boundary. This was completed 4 years later, with the delays due to protracted negotiations with neighbours.<sup>1000</sup>

By 1979, the Epuni complex covered 4 acres of grounds.<sup>1001</sup> Alterations and the addition of a new building were completed in 1980. Accommodation was made for clerical and management services, increased sewing, clothing and food storage facilities, a redesigned medical room with isolation bathroom and sickbay, and addition of a dressing room to the gymnasium. The alterations resulted in the loss of one bed, leaving a 41 bed capacity.<sup>1002</sup> The strain of running a full institution while alterations were done, often in bad weather, was also noted; as was the fact that other urgent and sometimes expensive repairs came to light during the renovations.<sup>1003</sup>

A new communications system was installed in 1980, providing two-way communication throughout the residence, including calls for emergency back up.<sup>1004</sup> A replacement system was installed in 1981, when a series of further maintenance works were also carried out.<sup>1005</sup>

In 1982 a swimming pool was installed and the pool was enclosed in 1984.<sup>1006</sup> Over these years, boys' rooms were carpeted, painting was done, driveways resealed, and the dining room changed to a cafeteria-style layout.<sup>1007</sup> The combined Annual Report for 1982-84 noted that many works were unable to be completed due to lack of funds, and that the base financial requirement was too low. The entire building maintenance programme for 1984-85 had to be scrapped due to lack of funds.<sup>1008</sup>

Beds were reduced to 30 during June 1985 while toilet and ablution facilities were altered.<sup>1009</sup> In 1986, bed numbers were again temporarily reduced while renovations were undertaken. Twelve beds were lost for six weeks from the end of February, followed by a 4 month closure of the secure wing.<sup>1010</sup> This was managed by reducing admissions and by 5 secure Kohitere beds being reserved for use by Epuni. The rising numbers of 16 year-old admissions made the closure of secure a challenge.<sup>1011</sup> Judges were notified that during the renovations the Department would be hard-pressed to provide secure custodial care.<sup>1012</sup>

By the mid-1980s, plans for integration of services were underway, resulting in a drop in bed numbers as use declined and the existing institutions were rarely full. In 1986, for example, Epuni had 42 beds plus 6 secure beds but often had about 35

<sup>1000</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p3.

<sup>1001</sup> Howe, M, Principal, Notes for the Information of Visiting Training Courses, 1979, Epuni Reports F5000003771094.

<sup>1002</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 3.

<sup>1003</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 4.

<sup>1004</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 4.

<sup>1005</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1981, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 10.

<sup>1006</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p4.

<sup>1007</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p8.

<sup>1008</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p9.

<sup>1009</sup> AK McLean, Principal to ADSWs 6.5.85, Epuni Admissions F5000001639093.

<sup>1010</sup> Memo, Fitzpatrick, Director, Lower Hutt to all Directors, 7/2/86. Epuni Secure F5000003771094.

<sup>1011</sup> Memo, Fitzpatrick, Director, Lower Hutt to all Directors, 7/2/86. Epuni Secure F5000003771094.

<sup>1012</sup> Letter AD Johnston for Director to The Registrar, District Court Wanganui, 7/4/86, Epuni Profile F5000002843734.

residents, rarely going over 40 in residence.<sup>1013</sup> A target of 10 boys in residence was set from 1 January to 31 March 1989, dropping to 5 boys and a skeleton staff over Christmas.<sup>1014</sup>

The residence was renamed the Epuni Residential Centre in 1990 and commenced operations as a national co-educational facility on 27 August of that year.<sup>1015</sup> At this time, residences were closed at Kohitere, Hokio and Mirimar. Epuni became the only Lower North Island residence – favoured over other sites because of its strategic location, accessibility, including to the Court, as well as to supporting personnel.<sup>1016</sup> In 1994 the Centre was described as having 20 open unit beds and 6 secure unit beds – and even though it was a national institution it mainly catered for males and females from the Lower North Island.<sup>1017</sup>

## Resident profile

In 1959, when the Epuni Boy's Home first opened, it catered for up to 22 boys aged 8-16 for short-term (i.e. 3-6 months) residential care.<sup>1018</sup> The Boys' Home was a District institution and the initial catchment area was Wellington-Napier.<sup>1019</sup>

Throughout the first half of 1959, just under half of boys admitted were 13 or 14 years old.<sup>1020</sup> Soon after opening, concern was expressed that the Home was overloaded with older boys and this proved to be a continuing theme.<sup>1021</sup> This older group of boys were described in 1959 as being "boisterous, demanding, bullying and frequently difficult to occupy".<sup>1022</sup> Further, efforts to do case work with younger boys was negated by the presence and behaviour of the older boys.<sup>1023</sup>

Little information was found on file during the 1960s. In August 1969, of 38 boys, 23 were state wards (of whom 3 were being held for other institutions), 8 were on adjournment in child welfare cases, and 7 were on remand.<sup>1024</sup> A newspaper reporter writing about the Home in December 1969 noted that there were 42 boys, ranging in age from 7-15.<sup>1025</sup>

<sup>1013</sup> Letter A McLean, Principal Epuni to Regional Director, Central South, undated 1986, Epuni Profile SWK 9-22-1 Part Two.

<sup>1014</sup> Memo, A McLean, Principal Epuni to Director, Porirua, 22/11/88. Epuni Profile F5000003771094.

<sup>1015</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p4.

<sup>1016</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p6, footnote iii.

<sup>1017</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p5 – quoting evidence of Manager to Planning Tribunal in 1994.

<sup>1018</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p2.

<sup>1019</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p2.

<sup>1020</sup> Progress Report 1959, Boys' Home, Epuni, Epuni Reports 31565.

<sup>1021</sup> Progress Report 1959, Boys' Home, Epuni, Epuni Reports 31565, p4.

<sup>1022</sup> Progress Report 1959, Boys' Home, Epuni, Epuni Reports 31565, p4.

<sup>1023</sup> Progress Report 1959, Boys' Home, Epuni, Epuni Reports 31565, p4.

<sup>1024</sup> Memo, FitzGerald to Lower North DCOs, 7/8/69, Epuni Profile 31569.

<sup>1025</sup> Thomas, Rita, "Time spent in a Boys' Home can be a turning point for many wayward young men", *Evening Post*, 17/12/69, Epuni Profile 31567.



The lack of information arriving with admissions from districts created problems in 1970. Boys often inflated their age, so that they could work or smoke and incorrect birthdates were sometimes entered on file as a result.<sup>1026</sup>

During 1977 there were 294 admissions, 27.4% of whom were state wards. Fifteen and sixteen year olds together made up 42% of all admissions. Sick bay beds were regularly used when the Home was full.<sup>1027</sup>

In 1979, the number of admissions and percentage of state wards were similar to those in 1977.<sup>1028</sup> The large number of admissions was due to a number of very short-stay remand cases, as distinct from the other group who stayed for three months or more.<sup>1029</sup> During 1978, 13 and 14 year olds made up 50% of admissions and 15 and 16 year olds made up 36% of admissions; and figures were similar in 1979.<sup>1030</sup>

In 1980, 13 and 14 year olds made up 53% of admissions, with 15 and 16 year olds making up 38%.<sup>1031</sup> In 1981 the respective figures were similar for 13 and 14 year olds, and slightly less (33%) for 15 and 16 year olds.<sup>1032</sup> By 1985, almost 50% of admissions were 15 or 16 years old.<sup>1033</sup>

Staff shortages and a lack of cover for peak supervision periods led to the closure of 11 beds for three weeks in March 1981. This had the desired effect of increased staff provision by Head Office, and numbers of residents were gradually restored.<sup>1034</sup> The statistical effect was that 1981 admissions dropped by 16.9 % from the 1979 and 1980 rates.<sup>1035</sup>

During the early 1980s, turnover was quicker and the average daily roll was slightly lower. There were about 300 admissions a year.<sup>1036</sup> Boys were slightly older and discharge to the community remained at around 70%, with other boys generally going to long-stay institutions or to borstal.<sup>1037</sup>

The issue of whether boys should be remanded to Mount Crawford Prison was debated during 1981, and it was agreed that appropriate cases should be remanded to Manawatu Youth Prison (i.e. older offenders alleged to have committed serious offences, often with adult co-offenders).<sup>1038</sup>

Occupancy rates dropped after the National Review of Residential Services in 1986 led to a focus on care in the community closer to the young person's home area. Up until 1986, occupancy had been near or at maximum capacity.<sup>1039</sup>

<sup>1026</sup> BM FitzGerald for DCWO to DCWOs, 18/6/70 Epuni Admissions F5000002843734.

<sup>1027</sup> Annual Statistics for the year ending 31/12/77, Epuni Reports 31567 and Epuni Reports F5000002843734.

<sup>1028</sup> Howe, M, Principal, Notes for the Information of Visiting Training Courses, 1979, Epuni Reports F5000003771094.

<sup>1029</sup> Howe, M, Principal, Notes for the Information of Visiting Training Courses, 1979, Epuni Reports F5000003771094.

<sup>1030</sup> MJ Howe, Principal, Epuni to Director-General 10/8/80, Epuni Admissions F5000001639093.

<sup>1031</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, Table 5/4.

<sup>1032</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 7.

<sup>1033</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1985 Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p4.

<sup>1034</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1981, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 2.

<sup>1035</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1981, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 3.

<sup>1036</sup> Admissions to DSW institutions 1976-1983, Epuni Admissions F5000002186500.

<sup>1037</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p14.

<sup>1038</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1981, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 4.

<sup>1039</sup> Audit Report of a visit under Residential Care Regulations 1986, 21-23 Sept 1987, Epuni Reports ADM 21-6-209 Part One, p2.

A study conducted in 1989 into under-use of Epuni found that although some community alternatives were inadequate, they were used because the young person did not meet the strict admission criteria set by Epuni.<sup>1040</sup> These criteria were strictly applied to cater for an inexperienced staff, due to other staff moving elsewhere or leaving the department during the restructuring period.<sup>1041</sup> Admissions remained a mix of youth justice and those care and protection cases that were dangerous to themselves or to others and who were in Department of Social Welfare custody.<sup>1042</sup>

From 1990 the Home became a co-educational facility and as at 12 February 1991 there had been 66 admissions; 63 males and 3 females. The average age of residents was 15.5 years.<sup>1043</sup>

In 1994, the average age on admission was 15 years.<sup>1044</sup> Residents remained a mix of remand and short-stay cases. In 1994 residents were either Residence with Supervision order (2-3 months) or remand cases; 2-6 weeks.<sup>1045</sup>

### **Type of admissions and purpose of institution**

From the outset there were concerns about inappropriate admissions. In 1959 the DCWO thought that the purpose of admission to the Home should be stated, whether for psychological investigations, discipline, social training, on remand, etc., with a follow-up request for a discharge plan once the purpose of admission had been achieved.<sup>1046</sup>

Most admissions were remand cases in 1966, and the percentage of remand cases to other cases was another ongoing theme.<sup>1047</sup> In 1972, it was felt that the Home was simply a remand centre, meaning that it could no longer serve its original purpose.<sup>1048</sup> Further, it was thought that boys admitted to the Home who were not delinquents were educated by others in the Home and began to build up a criminal history.<sup>1049</sup>

By 1974 the Home was operating almost exclusively as a remand centre.<sup>1050</sup> A memo by the Assistant Director at the end of 1975 asked for discussions on the purpose of institutions such as Epuni, which were being used "as a holding paddock for the convenience of admissions to National Institutions".<sup>1051</sup> Problems included chronic overcrowding with boys eventually approved for national institutions, the calling of psychiatric reports by Head Office when there were no available Psychological Services, and a lack of control over both admissions and

<sup>1040</sup> Report into the current levels of use by the community of Epuni Youth Centre, Sept 1989, Epuni Reports F5000003771094.

<sup>1041</sup> Memo, Audrey Scott, Change Manager to Directors etc, 19/6/90, Epuni Profile F5000001643632.

<sup>1042</sup> Memo, Audrey Scott, Change Manager to Directors etc, 19/6/90, Epuni Profile F5000001643632.

<sup>1043</sup> Memo, J Ngatai, AD, to Directors Eastern Region, 13/2/91, Epuni Profile F5000005282674.

<sup>1044</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p5 – quoting evidence of Manager to Planning Tribunal in 1994.

<sup>1045</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p5 – quoting evidence of Manager to Planning Tribunal in 1994.

<sup>1046</sup> Progress Report 1959, Boys' Home, Epuni, Epuni Reports 31565, p6.

<sup>1047</sup> Memo, FitzGerald to Lower North DCWOs, 5/8/66. , Epuni Admissions 31569

<sup>1048</sup> Memo, WC FitzGerald, Acting Director to D-G DSW 12/4/72, Epuni Profile 31569

<sup>1049</sup> Memo, WC FitzGerald, Acting Director to D-G DSW 12/4/72, Epuni Profile 31569

<sup>1050</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p3.

<sup>1051</sup> Memo, BC Baker, AD (SW) to Director-General, 1/12/75. Epuni Profile 31567.

discharges.<sup>1052</sup> There was a strong feeling, supported by the Director, that both the Police and Kohitere had mis-used Epuni for the past 15 years and that this meant the Home could not fulfill its functions.<sup>1053</sup> These factors were compounded by indifferent and untrained staff.<sup>1054</sup>

In 1979 it was noted that pressures were created by the inability of any short-term institution to control or select admissions. These pressures included overcrowding.<sup>1055</sup> The inability to place out boys added to overcrowding and resulted in a group of long-stay boys who formed a "hard core of experienced offenders who unsettle the group".<sup>1056</sup>

Up until 1980 no figures were kept on the reason for admission.<sup>1057</sup> By 1985 over 60% of admissions were for offending behaviour and 12% were held pending transfer to another institution.<sup>1058</sup>

Admissions criteria were clarified in 1990 after problems were experienced resulting in tensions between districts and Epuni staff. The criteria clarified that remand in custody was only possible after all other alternatives had been explored, and that admission to the Centre was not the same as admission to secure care – the Centre was an open residence with a secure wing, and not a secure residence with an open wing. Most admissions were on Supervision with Residence Orders, and were aged 14-17 years. There were also a small number of 12-14 year olds on remand for indictable offences. The total capacity of Epuni from 1990 was 20.<sup>1059</sup>

Concern was expressed about the lack of options for the care of psychologically disturbed boys and the need for a specialised care facility. Many admissions of this nature to Epuni were thought inappropriate.<sup>1060</sup>

In 1985, the new Principal questioned the role of the Home. The Home was traditionally a provider of short- to medium-term training and assessment. The programmes, including the school programme, did not, in the Principal's view, meet the needs of residents, who required 5-6 weeks of work skills and the creation of links with family. Further, staff were not trained to meet the needs of older boys, especially those referred by the police or courts. The Principal recommended that either the training and focus of Epuni should change to reflect this, or that it should revert to its former functions and a new remand facility should be built.<sup>1061</sup>

Ninety percent of admissions were on remand in 1991, with many going on to Supervision with Residence orders.<sup>1062</sup> The wide intake area and the effect of having to move young people out of their home area were also noted.<sup>1063</sup>

<sup>1052</sup> Memo, BC Baker, AD (SW) to Director-General, 1/12/75. Epuni Profile 31567.

<sup>1053</sup> Memo, BC Baker, AD (SW) to Director-General, 1/12/75. Epuni Profile 31567.

<sup>1054</sup> Memo, BC Baker, AD (SW) to Director-General, 1/12/75. Epuni Profile 31567.

<sup>1055</sup> Howe, M, Principal, Notes for the Information of Visiting Training Courses, 1979, Epuni Profile F5000003771094.

<sup>1056</sup> Howe, M, Principal, Notes for the Information of Visiting Training Courses, 1979, Epuni Profile F5000003771094.

<sup>1057</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1981, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, Table 5/1.

<sup>1058</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1985 Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p4.

<sup>1059</sup> Memo, R Campbell, Director to EMT, 19/7/90, Epuni Profile F5000002180902.

<sup>1060</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p13.

<sup>1061</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1985 Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p5.

<sup>1062</sup> Memo, J Ngatai, AD, to Directors Eastern Region, 13/2/91, Epuni Profile F5000005282674.

<sup>1063</sup> Memo, J Ngatai, AD, to Directors Eastern Region, 13/2/91, Epuni Profile F5000005282674.

## Length of stay

Most information found in regards to length of stay relates to the 1960s. At the outset, boys were kept for a period that was long enough to be effective, yet not so long as to turn the boys into "long term chronics".<sup>1064</sup>

Length of stay at Epuni had increased by 1965, where, by January of that year, over a third of boys had been in the residence for more than 5 months, with one boy being there for 8 months. This had the effect of blocking admissions. In 1965, the optimum stay was thought to be 4 months, with behaviour deteriorating after this time.<sup>1065</sup>

Pressures on accommodation were evident in 1966, with boys needing to be placed in staff quarters, and the Home closed to new admissions for a time.<sup>1066</sup> There was also pressure on admissions during 1969, due to "situations" at Hokio and Campbell Park.<sup>1067</sup> In 1969, a 3-month stay was thought to be optimum.<sup>1068</sup> A reporter was told in December 1969 that stays ranged from 3-5 months.<sup>1069</sup>

Pressures from admissions and an inability to discharges were creating bottle-neck problems at the end of 1975.<sup>1070</sup>

## Programmes and care

### Sport and recreation

The gym was built in 1966 and contained a variety of gymnastics equipment as well as being used for team sports and other group work.<sup>1071</sup>

Sports tournaments were arranged between the boys during the holidays with points deducted for bad behaviour. The winning team was given an outing. Outings included visits to factories, roller skating and camping holidays.<sup>1072</sup>

In 1969, activities offered included clay modelling, carpentry, art, aeroplane models and stamp collecting.<sup>1073</sup>

<sup>1064</sup> Progress Report 1959, Boys' Home, Epuni, Epuni Profile 31565, p3.

<sup>1065</sup> Ball (SDWO) to Lower Hutt DCWO, 27/1/65, Epuni Profile F5000002843724.

<sup>1066</sup> Memo, FitzGerald to Lower North DCWOs, 5/8/66. , Epuni Profile 31569 and also Epuni Profile F5000002843724.

<sup>1067</sup> Memo, FitzGerald to Lower North DCOs, 7/8/69, Epuni Profile 31569.

<sup>1068</sup> Memo, FitzGerald to Lower North DCOs, 7/8/69, Epuni Profile 31569.

<sup>1069</sup> Thomas, Rita, "Time spent in a Boys' Home can be a turning point for many wayward young men", *Evening Post*, 17/12/69, Epuni Profile 31567.

<sup>1070</sup> Memo, BC Baker, AD (SW) to Director-General, 1/12/75. Epuni Profile 31567.

<sup>1071</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p2; Thomas, Rita, "Time spent in a Boys' Home can be a turning point for many wayward young men", *Evening Post*, 17/12/69, Epuni Profile 31567.

<sup>1072</sup> Thomas, Rita, "Time spent in a Boys' Home can be a turning point for many wayward young men", *Evening Post*, 17/12/69, Epuni Profile 31567.

<sup>1073</sup> Thomas, Rita, "Time spent in a Boys' Home can be a turning point for many wayward young men", *Evening Post*, 17/12/69, Epuni Profile 31567.

In 1979 the recreation programme, which ran in the evenings and weekends, included basketball, softball, soccer and table tennis. Woodwork, art and pottery classes were also available. Social workers also conducted formal short study groups based on the book "People with Problems".<sup>1074</sup>

In 1980, 13 people were employed on a fee for service basis, offering programmes in woodturning, mechanics, trampoline, gymnastics, guitar, woodwork, pottery (at the local technical college), macramé, softball, leatherwork, art and vocational guidance.<sup>1075</sup>

From 1982-84, the leisure and recreation programme continued, with the use of fee for service workers. Programmes offered were similar to those offered in 1980, with the addition of computer skills.<sup>1076</sup> The use of the programme to link the Home with the surrounding community was also noted.<sup>1077</sup>

A pool was installed in November 1982. Although initially unheated it was well used for 5 months of the year, including by a number of community groups.<sup>1078</sup>

Art therapy was introduced in 1985 (four groups of three boys each), working with art expression as a way of connecting and dealing with emotion.<sup>1079</sup>

In the combined 1982-84 Annual Report, the Principal commented that since the Home began operation, the standards expected of the boys were those expected in the general community and that these changed as community norms changed.<sup>1080</sup>

A 1987 Audit found the cultural development programme in the Home very impressive, particularly noting its embracing of all cultures and the ready acceptance of the programme by both staff and boys.<sup>1081</sup>

The 1987 Audit also found an impressively simplified key system very few keys carried by staff.<sup>1082</sup>

A full audit was conducted two weeks after the centre re-opened in 1990. Programmes included access courses available at Kokiri Seaview Centre (for example hairdressing, computing and life skills) and visits to Waiwhetu marae. Bone carving was taught on site and RSWs were running recreational, social skills and living skills programmes.<sup>1083</sup>

By 1993, programmes were described as covering education, cultural activities such as bone and wood carving, taiaha and tāniko, vocational training (work experience),

<sup>1074</sup> Howe, M, Principal, Notes for the Information of Visiting Training Courses, 1979, Epuni Profile F5000003771094.

<sup>1075</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 9.

<sup>1076</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p4.

<sup>1077</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p4.

<sup>1078</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p10.

<sup>1079</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1985 Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, Appendix IV.

<sup>1080</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p4.

<sup>1081</sup> Audit Report of a visit under Residential Care Regulations 1986, 21-23 Sept 1987, Epuni Reports ADM 21-6-209 Part One, p5.

<sup>1082</sup> Audit Report of a visit under Residential Care Regulations 1986, 21-23 Sept 1987, Epuni Reports ADM 21-6-209 Part One, p6.

<sup>1083</sup> Epuni Residential Centre, Internal Audit Report 10-14 Sept 1990, Epuni Reports ADM 21-6-229 Part One, p8.

recreation (provided for 2 hours minimum per day), life and social skills, and health.<sup>1084</sup>

## Camps

One boy was sent home from camp in 1959.<sup>1085</sup>

During 1981, staff conducted 4 short camps of one weeks' duration. These were attended by a total of 60 boys and provided outdoor experiences and self improvement activities.<sup>1086</sup>

School camps were held regularly through 1982-1984. These were usually one week-long, at the Riversdale YMCA campsite and had a focus on physical extension activities.<sup>1087</sup>

## Other practices

Boys were required to have rest time on their beds from 3.30-4.45pm each day, and during this time they were not permitted to read or write.<sup>1088</sup> Boys told a reporter in 1969 that although they did not feel the need for a daytime rest, they welcomed the break from chores, although they were not as enthusiastic where the rest time interfered with their sporting activities.<sup>1089</sup>

A points system allowed the accumulation of points for leave passes.<sup>1090</sup> In 1979, this was described as a token economy system, with credits used to purchase privileges.<sup>1091</sup> The Principal described group training as providing "cause and effect" teaching. "Reality training" was also used.<sup>1092</sup>

An interdenominational Protestant service was conducted on-site, while Catholic boys attended a local Catholic church.<sup>1093</sup> A nun from the Sisters of the Good Shepherd attended the Home for up to 1 ½ days per week during the early 80s.<sup>1094</sup>

The 1987 Audit team commented on over-ordering by the Epuni stores supervisor, which had led to a large amount of clothing in stores that was outdated and out of style.<sup>1095</sup>

<sup>1084</sup> Robin Wilson, General Manager, Epuni, Report to Assoc Minister of SW, 7/7/92. Epuni Reports F5000004081321.

<sup>1085</sup> BC Burton, DCWO to Superintendent, 4/6/59, Epuni Discipline/Punishment Prod # 20065038 NZ Archives.

<sup>1086</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1981, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 11.

<sup>1087</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p7.

<sup>1088</sup> Thomas, Rita, "Time spent in a Boys' Home can be a turning point for many wayward young men", *Evening Post*, 17/12/69, Epuni Profile 31567.

<sup>1089</sup> Thomas, Rita, "Time spent in a Boys' Home can be a turning point for many wayward young men", *Evening Post*, 17/12/69, Epuni Profile 31567.

<sup>1090</sup> Thomas, Rita, "Time spent in a Boys' Home can be a turning point for many wayward young men", *Evening Post*, 17/12/69, Epuni Profile 31567.

<sup>1091</sup> Howe, M, Principal, Notes for the Information of Visiting Training Courses, 1979, Epuni Profile F5000003771094.

<sup>1092</sup> Howe, M, Principal, Notes for the Information of Visiting Training Courses, 1979, Epuni Profile F5000003771094.

<sup>1093</sup> Thomas, Rita, "Time spent in a Boys' Home can be a turning point for many wayward young men", *Evening Post*, 17/12/69, Epuni Profile 31567.

<sup>1094</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p12.

<sup>1095</sup> Audit Report of a visit under Residential Care Regulations 1986, 21-23 Sept 1987, Epuni Reports ADM 21-6-209 Part One, p6.

## Work and training

### Work training and life-skills programmes

Work placements in the community appeared to be a feature of Epuni from the time it was set up in 1959. For example, the progress report in June 1959 made reference to a lack of Field staff to liaise in regard to work placements.<sup>1096</sup> However, no statistics appear to have been kept and therefore it is difficult to assess the extent of work placements in the community by boys residing at Epuni.

In 1959 a call was made for an on-site work programme as many boys were at the residence all day and it was thought that they should not spend all of their time on gardening or domestic duties.<sup>1097</sup>

A reporter writing in 1969 noted that one or two boys attended work at local factories or warehouses for a trial period.<sup>1098</sup>

Boys were required to polish the wooden floors in the corridors.<sup>1099</sup> They were also required to mow the lawns and tend the vegetable and flower gardens.<sup>1100</sup>

Boys were assessed for work in the community and were called "Working Boys" in 1975. Work placements were used to assess progress and to prepare a boy for return to the community. Jobs had to be ratified by Management and there were set procedures for receiving pay packets. Pocket money and other incidental amounts were allocated, board deducted and the rest banked in the boy's name.<sup>1101</sup>

In 1979 it was noted that Epuni was situated close to "work situations when and as required to extend the experience or responsibility of our boys prior to their return to the community".<sup>1102</sup>

In 1980 it was thought important to focus on vocational guidance as so many of the boys could become the "new unemployed". Assistance included interview techniques and dressing for interviews and included role playing interviews as well as some work trials in local businesses.<sup>1103</sup>

Also in the life skills area, a two-week pre-employment course was held in 1981. It was attended by a number of working age boys in the Home, as well as by other young people in the surrounding community nominated by local Field Social Workers.<sup>1104</sup> As a result of the course, 4 out of the 10 attendees gained full time employment.<sup>1105</sup>

<sup>1096</sup> Progress Report Boys' Home Epuni, 11/6/59, Epuni Reports 31565.

<sup>1097</sup> Progress Report 1959, Boys' Home, Epuni, Epuni Reports 31565, p7.

<sup>1098</sup> Thomas, Rita, "Time spent in a Boys' Home can be a turning point for many wayward young men", *Evening Post*, 17/12/69, Epuni Profile 31567.

<sup>1099</sup> Thomas, Rita, "Time spent in a Boys' Home can be a turning point for many wayward young men", *Evening Post*, 17/12/69, Epuni Profile 31567.

<sup>1100</sup> Thomas, Rita, "Time spent in a Boys' Home can be a turning point for many wayward young men", *Evening Post*, 17/12/69, Epuni Profile 31567.

<sup>1101</sup> Handbook, circa 1975 "Working Boys" 8.3, Epuni Education UR/0268.

<sup>1102</sup> Howe, M, Principal, Notes for the Information of Visiting Training Courses, 1979, Epuni Profile F5000003771094, p1.

<sup>1103</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 9.

<sup>1104</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1981, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 8.

<sup>1105</sup> PW George, Report on Pre-employment Course, 12/8/81, Epuni Education 9-22-1 Part One.

Another course of this nature was run in 1985.<sup>1106</sup> Also during 1985, several boys did work experience for one day a week.<sup>1107</sup>

Work placements following assessment at Epuni became harder to obtain as the economic situation tightened. For example, in 1981, Districts were asked to advise of any positions or government schemes offering placements.<sup>1108</sup>

Vocational training programmes were available to some young people in Epuni in 1992, although it is not clear if these were training schemes or work placements in local businesses.<sup>1109</sup>

## Resident-to-resident issues

### Sexual misconduct

Sexual misbehaviour between residents was discovered in 1963. The behaviour was widespread and continued for some months before being detected. Behaviour included mutual and group masturbation and oral sex. The first incidents were thought to have taken place on the Christmas 1962 camp and rejuvenated during the May 1963 camp. From the end of May until mid-July 1963 when it was detected, the behaviour was occurring nightly, and involved at least 17 boys. Some incidents took place during the screening of movies, while others took place during the night, often between 3-4am. Other references were made to incidents in corridors, the dining room, in the toilets and in the laundry. Boys were posted as 'guards' to detect staff presence. Staff carried out irregular night checks as a matter of standard practice. There were several pressures and staff shortages over the time in question.

On detection of this behaviour the Home was temporarily closed while the matter was dealt with. Extra discipline was imposed, and routines for lining up for showers and seating during films adjusted.<sup>1110</sup> The practice of providing the boys with as much physical activity as possible, in the gym and in field games, was emphasised.<sup>1111</sup>

The Director-General also directed that boys involved should not be placed out without further training, to avoid the spread of sexual misconduct to foster homes.<sup>1112</sup> Two boys subsequently alleged sexual interference by a visiting [REDACTED] leader but later retracted their statements to the Police (CIB), which were thought to stem from the pattern of behaviour between residents.<sup>1113</sup> The Police interviewed several other boys in the group about these allegations of indecent assault, but the outcome of their inquiries is not known.<sup>1114</sup>

<sup>1106</sup> AK McLean, Principal Epuni to Director, Lower Hutt, 9/4/85, Epuni Education SWK 9-22-1 Part Two.

<sup>1107</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1985 Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One,

<sup>1108</sup> Memo, GA Stewart for Principal to ADSW, 12/2/81, Epuni Education F5000002180902.

<sup>1109</sup> Report to Hon Roger McClay, Associate Minister Social Welfare, 7/7/92, Epuni Reports F5000004081321.

<sup>1110</sup>

<sup>1111</sup>

<sup>1112</sup>

<sup>1113</sup>

<sup>1114</sup>



## Approved fight to settle dispute

An incident report where two boys were allowed by staff to settle their differences by fighting met with Head Office disapproval. Head Office pointed out that the practice was fraught with danger, not only in possible escalation of the situation, but also in injury and in legal action against the department by aggrieved parents. In this case, the bigger bullying boy wanted to fight the boy he was picking on and the smaller boy did not want to fight. In the event, only a few punches were thrown and the bigger boy had his nose broken. No other boys were present and the fight was arranged by the Assistant Principal. The Principal thought this method was "practical social adjustment" and that the boy had "received his just desserts".<sup>1115</sup>

## Health and medication

A Wellington GP visited Epuni once a fortnight in 1960 to carry out medical checks on any admissions and on other residents as required. The system was changed so that medical checks could be conducted more frequently, because a number of boys staying less than two weeks were leaving without an examination being done. A Lower Hutt GP attended admissions on a fee-for-service basis, with the Superintendent directing that the local GP only be called on in cases of emergency.<sup>1116</sup> A decade later it appeared that Head Office did not appreciate the need for medical checks on every admission until it was pointed out that not conducting checks created a danger of spreading infectious diseases such as hepatitis, as well as checking for deficiencies in hearing or eyesight.<sup>1117</sup> Head lice and scabies presented ongoing problems.<sup>1118</sup>

After a riotous event in 1972, a number of emotionally upset boys were given sedatives by the Assistant Matron. Another boy received injuries to the face and was taken to hospital by ambulance.<sup>1119</sup>

An incident report of an attempted suicide by hanging in 1976 noted the inability of Epuni to make early psychological or psychiatric referrals. The incident appeared to be prompted by 'talking out' sessions in the Home about prior sexual abuse. Staff were credited with saving the boy's life by applying mouth-to-mouth resuscitation.<sup>1120</sup>

In 1979, a psychologist and child psychiatrist were available to assess boys.<sup>1121</sup> The weekly clinic was lost when the Head Office psychiatrist left the service and it was difficult to find an alternative referral service.<sup>1122</sup> The Home was allocated only one appointment to Psychological Services a week in 1981 and asked districts to do their own assessments due to this limitation.<sup>1123</sup> A similar letter went out in 1984

<sup>1116</sup> Memo, DWCO Lower Hutt to Superintendent, 15/9/60, Epuni Health 31565.

<sup>1117</sup> Memo, DWCO to Superintendent, 23/4/71, Epuni Health 31567.

<sup>1118</sup> Memo, Director to ADSW, 5/8/75, Epuni Health F5000002180902 8/6/38.

<sup>1119</sup> Disturbance at Epuni Boys' Home on 23 June 1972, Report on Sequence of Events, undated, author unknown, Epuni Incidents 31567, p3.

<sup>1120</sup> Memo J Howe, Principal Epuni, to Director, Lower Hutt, 20/7/76, Epuni Incidents F5000005659656.

<sup>1121</sup> Howe, M, Principal, Notes for the Information of Visiting Training Courses, 1979, Epuni Profile F5000003771094.

<sup>1122</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1981, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 10,11.

<sup>1123</sup> Memo, GA Stewart for Principal to ADSWs, 8/6/81, Epuni Health F5000001639093.

when Psychological Services could not offer any service to Epuni.<sup>1124</sup> The Regional Psychologist of the Department was actively involved in the case work of the more seriously disturbed boys during the early 80s.<sup>1125</sup>

Group work took place during 1980 – groups of 6 boys attended weekly counselling sessions to improve communication skills. Five attendees were assessed as needing help, while the sixth member was considered to have good relationships with adults and good communication skills. A second programme consisted of a “reality group” that meet an hour a week for six weeks and aimed to get the boys to accept responsibility for themselves and not blame others. This group used role plays, psychodrama and discussion.<sup>1126</sup>

Staff were advised in 1981 that any medical examination required the consent of the person being examined and that an enforced medical examination was an assault.<sup>1127</sup>

Weekly medical clinics and health checks for new admissions continued to be provided by a local GP during 1982-84, supplemented by a part-time nurse.<sup>1128</sup> A part-time counsellor was appointed in 1985.<sup>1129</sup> That year, re-approval to re-employ the nurse was sought and the Home was without a visiting medical practitioner for most of the year.<sup>1130</sup>

Another attempted suicide is reported in 1985. Informal counselling was given by the visiting Sister from the Sisters of the Good Shepherd while a psychiatric referral was arranged.<sup>1131</sup>

The 1985 Handbook sets out the approach to discussing venereal disease with boys in the Home “staff should show an adult attitude to this whole subject without treating it as something forbidden or to be hidden or not talked about, but at the same time not a subject which is to be made light of or shouted from the rooftops.”<sup>1132</sup> Education involved medical personnel giving talks and showing films, and referral to a doctor whenever a boy expressed concern about venereal disease.<sup>1133</sup> Staff were advised that there was little chance of infection if a person with venereal disease handled food and that accordingly they should not be banned from kitchen duties.<sup>1134</sup>

## Psychiatric hospital placement

The inability of Epuni to make early referrals to psychiatric care was noted in 1976.<sup>1135</sup>

<sup>1124</sup> Memo, GA Stewart for Principal to Senior Social Worker, Levin, 20/1/84. Epuni Health F5000001643632 6/1/8.

<sup>1125</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p13.

<sup>1126</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 12-13.

<sup>1127</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p2.

<sup>1128</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p8.

<sup>1129</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1985 Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p2.

<sup>1130</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1985 Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p4.

<sup>1131</sup> Memo, McLean, Principal Epuni 7.5.85, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1 Part Two.

<sup>1132</sup> Handbook Epuni 12.10, Epuni Health UR/0268.

<sup>1133</sup> Handbook Epuni 12.10, Epuni Health UR/0268.

<sup>1134</sup> Memo, Head Office, Action to be taken following study of Archbishop Johnston's Report, 26/11/82, Epuni Reports, SWK 9-22-1 Part One.

<sup>1135</sup> Memo J Howe, Principal Epuni, to Director, Lower Hutt, 20/7/76, Epuni Incidents F5000005659656.

No other references to placement in psychiatric hospital were found on file.

Privacy Act s 29(1)(a) Affairs of another

## Staffing

Mr [redacted] kept tight control over staff and the running of the institution, which led to later criticism (see below).

Even at the beginning of the Home's life, there were staffing issues, with dedicated staff working long hours and dissatisfaction with the suitability of other staff.<sup>1136</sup> In 1959, there was also a problem with female staff not coping with supervising older boys.<sup>1137</sup> At that time, Field staff were brought in to cover staff shortages. In addition, a constant stream of visitors in the early months put pressure on the Home – 470 people in four months.<sup>1138</sup>

An Inspection Report of a visit undertaken on 14-15 March 1963 noted that the residence “lacks spirit and a sense of purposefulness” with a lack of enthusiasm in either boys or staff. This was reflected in a number of things including “behaviour, deportment, dress and care of property. It was felt that the boys were bored and lacking in any sense of achievement, and that issues with them were “deftly sidestepped rather than faced”.<sup>1139</sup> There was also evidence of property being defiled.<sup>1140</sup>

## The events of 1972

Shortages of staff, and constant turnover resulting in a lack of experienced staff were persistent themes. In 1972, it was noted that there had been 17 changes of staff in the previous 12 months. The Acting Director described this as “trying to run the new Rangatira with a crew of Barge-hands”.<sup>1141</sup>

Later that year, in July 1972, a number of “serious crises” occurred, resulting in 16 boys being transferred to Kohitere and for staff from other institutions being brought in to cope with the situation.<sup>1142</sup> The crises involved persistent absconding and rebellious behaviour, including physical attacks on staff (involving, for example, boys punching staff and the use of knives) which were thought to be a product of management and staffing problems.<sup>1143</sup> They caused embarrassment to the Department and to the Minister.<sup>1144</sup> On numerous occasions the boys were said to take control of the Home and staff were unable to prevent this.<sup>1145</sup>

<sup>1136</sup> Progress Report 1959, Boys' Home, Epuni, Epuni Profile 31565, p2.

<sup>1137</sup> Progress Report 1959, Boys' Home, Epuni, Epuni Profile 31565, p2.

<sup>1138</sup> Progress Report 1959, Boys' Home, Epuni, Epuni Profile 31565, p3.

<sup>1139</sup> Report of Visit of Mr Fountain 14/15 March 1963, p5. , Epuni Profile 31565

<sup>1140</sup> Report of Visit of Mr Fountain 14/15 March 1963, p6. , Epuni Profile 31565.

<sup>1141</sup> Memo, WC FitzGerald, Acting Director to D-G DSW 12/4/72, Epuni file 31569.

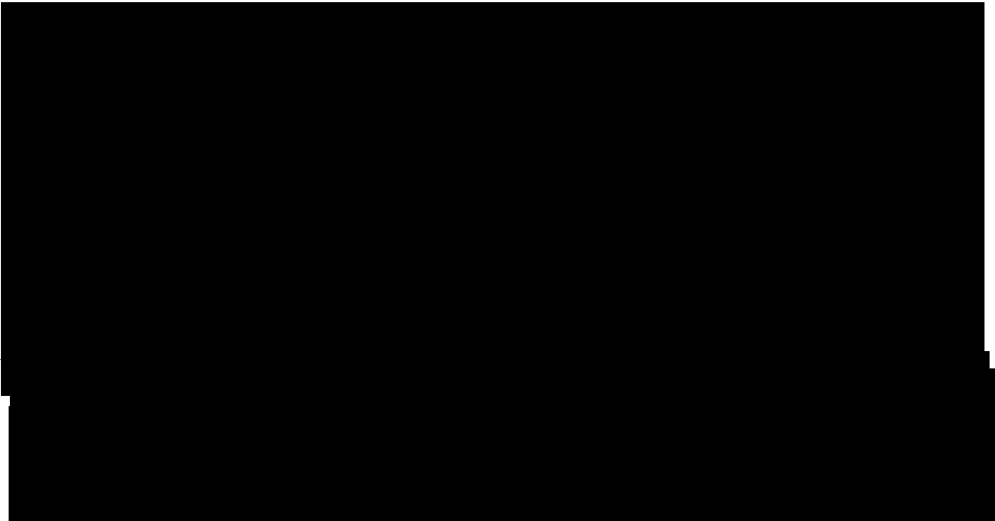
<sup>1142</sup> Extract from report of Senior Staff Meeting, 4/7/72, Epuni Profile 31569.

<sup>1143</sup> Report on Epuni Boys Home, DG Reilly, Acting Assistant Director, Residential Services, to Director-General, 28/7/72, Epuni Profile 31567. One sequence of events is detailed in: Disturbance at Epuni Boys' Home on 23 June 1972, Report on Sequence of Events, undated, author unknown, and Epuni Incidents 31567.

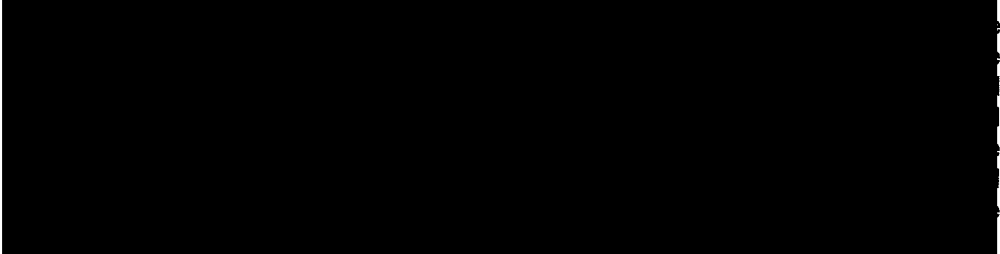
<sup>1144</sup> Memo, IDJ MacKay, Director-General to Director, Lower Hutt, 26/9/72, Epuni Reports 31567.

<sup>1145</sup> Memo, IDJ MacKay, Director-General to Director, Lower Hutt, 26/9/72, Epuni Reports 31567.

Official Information Act s 9(2)(a) Privacy of natural persons



In September 1972, the Home was closed "in a further attempt to stabilise the serious situation which has developed there over recent months leading to riots, assaults on staff, mass abscondings etc".<sup>1149</sup>

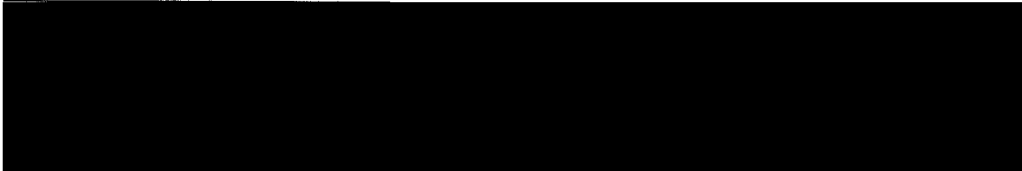


The Director General also noted that descriptions of responsibilities were vague or non-existent and that visitors were allowed to wander in the building.<sup>1152</sup> In the lead up to [redacted] a number of staff were seconded in to Epuni, while others were sent to the National Training Centre at Kohitere. This assistance and intervention did not prevent closure of the Home.<sup>1153</sup>

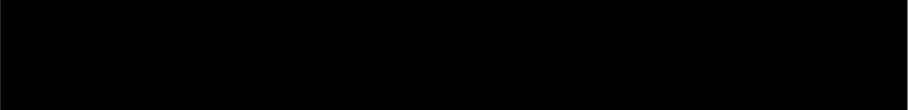
**Staffing training and organisation**

At the end of 1975, the Assistant Director noted that only one Housemaster had had the benefit of Residential Training School, while others learned on the job.<sup>1154</sup>

Staffing totalled 23 in 1979. The management team consisted of the Assistant Principal and two Senior RSWs, and provided staff supervision, programme and



<sup>1149</sup> Minute, Author unknown, 21/9/72, Epuni Profile F5000005659656.



<sup>1154</sup> Memo, BC Baker, AD (SW) to Director-General, 1/12/75. Epuni Profile 31567.

casework oversight, additional counselling and staff training.<sup>1155</sup> Another team of 4 RSWs provided direct group control of daily routines, programmes and work, with each having a caseload to monitor and assess for future placement.<sup>1156</sup>

In 1980 a receptionist/typist was appointed for the first time in any regional DSW institution. It was hoped the position would improve public relations.<sup>1157</sup> That year there were significant delays in appointing staff, especially two senior positions.<sup>1158</sup> Tensions among staff, including mounting dissent and lethargic attitude, worsened as a result.<sup>1159</sup>

During 1980, regular staff meetings were held on Friday afternoons for 45 minutes, with off-duty staff attending when they could. Staff training was affected by staff availability and the need to cover rosters, but commenced on a formal basis in June 1980. The programme revolved around three general aims: job analysis, knowledge of specific skills, and putting theory into practice. Both internal and external expertise was drawn on. This programme was compulsory for all staff and staff become more aware of each others' responsibilities as a result.<sup>1160</sup>

Staff training continued during 1981. The programme had three phases; attending in-service courses on specific skills; eight months of formal training (20 1 ½ hour sessions); four months of individual study and papers presented on a range of topics.<sup>1161</sup>

Three senior staff provided weekly casework supervision by way of an open case meeting. Progress and placement reports were expected. An improvement in casework was noticed in 1980, with more in-depth work and "extensive programmed assessment".<sup>1162</sup> Input from districts on or near admission also improved allowing both admission and discharge to be better coordinated. Casework practice was further developed in 1981, involving regular reports and meetings with RSWs, school staff, psychologist and District Office staff. Each boy had to complete a "goals and achievement" programme.<sup>1163</sup>

In February 1981, staff shortages meant less staff were available to escort boys, programmes were scaled down, inductions could not be run and the secure unit could not be opened. At one point, one staff was left to monitor 45 boys while another responded to Police inquiries and a third staff member processed a new admission.<sup>1164</sup> In response, the Home was closed to new admissions. The secure unit's staffing was maintained by reducing numbers in the open unit.<sup>1165</sup> This situation presented some problems in districts, which were unable to admit to Epuni as usual and had to find alternative arrangements.<sup>1166</sup> Full admissions were restored three weeks later, in early April.<sup>1167</sup>

<sup>1155</sup> Howe, M, Principal, Notes for the Information of Visiting Training Courses, 1979, Epuni Profile F5000003771094.

<sup>1156</sup> Howe, M, Principal, Notes for the Information of Visiting Training Courses, 1979, Epuni Profile F5000003771094.

<sup>1157</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 4.

<sup>1158</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 5.

<sup>1159</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 5.

<sup>1160</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 11.

<sup>1161</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1981, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 8.

<sup>1162</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 11.

<sup>1163</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1981, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 9.

<sup>1164</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 6.

<sup>1165</sup> JR Fitzpatrick Director to Director (Social Work) 19/3/81, Epuni Admissions F5000003771094.

<sup>1166</sup> AG Ellis, ADSW to Director Wanganui, 27/3/81, Epuni Admissions F5000002843734.

<sup>1167</sup> MJ Howe, Principal to Director Lower Hutt, 3/4/81, Epuni Admissions F5000001643632.

During 1982-83 staffing was also short, not helped, in the Director's view, by the "frozen ceiling vacancy".<sup>1168</sup> The ceiling led to regular use of supernumerary workers who were social work students, to the point where, although technically surplus positions, these positions were relied on to make the rosters function.<sup>1169</sup> In addition, a number of regular part-time relievers were used, and were considered staff of good quality and experience.<sup>1170</sup> Casework processes continued to be developed during this period, although hampered by staff shortages.<sup>1171</sup> Objectives, tasks for behaviour change and placement options were finalised in a family meeting.<sup>1172</sup> Preparation of Case Plans and progress reports were expected at certain intervals.<sup>1173</sup>

In 1984, the Home was granted seven new social work positions, said to give the Home "terrific stimulus".<sup>1174</sup> Staff shortages led to the closure of secure many times during 1982-84.<sup>1175</sup>

Staff training continued in 1982 in the format of weekly two-hourly sessions, although getting all rostered staff together proved an ongoing challenge.<sup>1176</sup> In 1983 a programme was developed based on the needs of longer serving staff, over a whole day rather than in a two-hour block of time. Training reverted to the two-hour format in 1984 and included work on developing a Code of Practise for the Home. One day training was reinstated later in 1984 and combined with a full staff meeting.<sup>1177</sup>

Staff were encouraged to take in-service training and more staff attended university courses. The induction process moved to a modular system, a multi-cultural training course and a stress management course were run.<sup>1178</sup>

Many staff changes occurred in 1985 including a new Principal, six social workers and two teachers.

The communications system of the Principal appointed in 1985 was described as being very directive, although prior to an Audit Report in September 1987, this had become more of a two-way system. The management style was not an initial focus of the audit team but became a focus during the visit, perhaps due to the fact that the Principal was on extended leave at the time of the visit and because future plans to close the Unit had just been announced.<sup>1179</sup>

The new Principal expressed dissatisfaction with the number of relievers required and the fact that untrained and inexperienced people were put in positions of responsibility. Modular training also put strain on staffing cover.<sup>1180</sup>

<sup>1168</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p2.

<sup>1169</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p3.

<sup>1170</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p3.

<sup>1171</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p5.

<sup>1172</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p5.

<sup>1173</sup> GA Stewart Acting Principal to Senior Social Worker Levin, 16/5/83, Epuni Admissions

F5000001643632, 6/1/8.

<sup>1174</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p3.

<sup>1175</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p3.

<sup>1176</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p7.

<sup>1177</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p7.

<sup>1178</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p8.

<sup>1179</sup> Audit Report of a visit under Residential Care Regulations 1986, 21-23 Sept 1987, Epuni Reports ADM 21-6-209 Part One, p5.

<sup>1180</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1985 Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p1.

casework oversight, additional counselling and staff training.<sup>1155</sup> Another team of 4 RSWs provided direct group control of daily routines, programmes and work, with each having a caseload to monitor and assess for future placement.<sup>1156</sup>

In 1980 a receptionist/typist was appointed for the first time in any regional DSW institution. It was hoped the position would improve public relations.<sup>1157</sup> That year there were significant delays in appointing staff, especially two senior positions.<sup>1158</sup> Tensions among staff, including mounting dissent and lethargic attitude, worsened as a result.<sup>1159</sup>

During 1980, regular staff meetings were held on Friday afternoons for 45 minutes, with off-duty staff attending when they could. Staff training was affected by staff availability and the need to cover rosters, but commenced on a formal basis in June 1980. The programme revolved around three general aims: job analysis, knowledge of specific skills, and putting theory into practice. Both internal and external expertise was drawn on. This programme was compulsory for all staff and staff become more aware of each others' responsibilities as a result.<sup>1160</sup>

Staff training continued during 1981. The programme had three phases; attending in-service courses on specific skills; eight months of formal training (20 1 ½ hour sessions); four months of individual study and papers presented on a range of topics.<sup>1161</sup>

Three senior staff provided weekly casework supervision by way of an open case meeting. Progress and placement reports were expected. An improvement in casework was noticed in 1980, with more in-depth work and "extensive programmed assessment".<sup>1162</sup> Input from districts on or near admission also improved allowing both admission and discharge to be better coordinated. Casework practice was further developed in 1981, involving regular reports and meetings with RSWs, school staff, psychologist and District Office staff. Each boy had to complete a "goals and achievement" programme.<sup>1163</sup>

In February 1981, staff shortages meant less staff were available to escort boys, programmes were scaled down, inductions could not be run and the secure unit could not be opened. At one point, one staff was left to monitor 45 boys while another responded to Police inquiries and a third staff member processed a new admission.<sup>1164</sup> In response, the Home was closed to new admissions. The secure unit's staffing was maintained by reducing numbers in the open unit.<sup>1165</sup> This situation presented some problems in districts, which were unable to admit to Epuni as usual and had to find alternative arrangements.<sup>1166</sup> Full admissions were restored three weeks later, in early April.<sup>1167</sup>

<sup>1155</sup> Howe, M, Principal, Notes for the Information of Visiting Training Courses, 1979, Epuni Profile F5000003771094.

<sup>1156</sup> Howe, M, Principal, Notes for the Information of Visiting Training Courses, 1979, Epuni Profile F5000003771094.

<sup>1157</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 4.

<sup>1158</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 5.

<sup>1159</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 5.

<sup>1160</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 11.

<sup>1161</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1981, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 8.

<sup>1162</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 11.

<sup>1163</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1981, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 9.

<sup>1164</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 6.

<sup>1165</sup> JR Fitzpatrick Director to Director (Social Work) 19/3/81, Epuni Admissions F5000003771094.

<sup>1166</sup> AG Ellis, ADSW to Director Wanganui, 27/3/81, Epuni Admissions F5000002843734.

<sup>1167</sup> MJ Howe, Principal to Director Lower Hutt, 3/4/81, Epuni Admissions F5000001643632.

During 1982-83 staffing was also short, not helped, in the Director's view, by the "frozen ceiling vacancy".<sup>1168</sup> The ceiling led to regular use of supernumerary workers who were social work students, to the point where, although technically surplus positions, these positions were relied on to make the rosters function.<sup>1169</sup> In addition, a number of regular part-time relievers were used, and were considered staff of good quality and experience.<sup>1170</sup> Casework processes continued to be developed during this period, although hampered by staff shortages.<sup>1171</sup> Objectives, tasks for behaviour change and placement options were finalised in a family meeting.<sup>1172</sup> Preparation of Case Plans and progress reports were expected at certain intervals.<sup>1173</sup>

In 1984, the Home was granted seven new social work positions, said to give the Home "terrific stimulus".<sup>1174</sup> Staff shortages led to the closure of secure many times during 1982-84.<sup>1175</sup>

Staff training continued in 1982 in the format of weekly two-hourly sessions, although getting all rostered staff together proved an ongoing challenge.<sup>1176</sup> In 1983 a programme was developed based on the needs of longer serving staff, over a whole day rather than in a two-hour block of time. Training reverted to the two-hour format in 1984 and included work on developing a Code of Practise for the Home. One day training was reinstated later in 1984 and combined with a full staff meeting.<sup>1177</sup>

Staff were encouraged to take in-service training and more staff attended university courses. The induction process moved to a modular system, a multi-cultural training course and a stress management course were run.<sup>1178</sup>

Many staff changes occurred in 1985 including a new Principal, six social workers and two teachers.

The communications system of the Principal appointed in 1985 was described as being very directive, although prior to an Audit Report in September 1987, this had become more of a two-way system. The management style was not an initial focus of the audit team but became a focus during the visit, perhaps due to the fact that the Principal was on extended leave at the time of the visit and because future plans to close the Unit had just been announced.<sup>1179</sup>

The new Principal expressed dissatisfaction with the number of relievers required and the fact that untrained and inexperienced people were put in positions of responsibility. Modular training also put strain on staffing cover.<sup>1180</sup>

<sup>1168</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983,1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p2.

<sup>1169</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983,1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p3.

<sup>1170</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983,1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p3.

<sup>1171</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983,1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p5.

<sup>1172</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983,1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p5.

<sup>1173</sup> GA Stewart Acting Principal to Senior Social Worker Levin, 16/5/83, Epuni Admissions F5000001643632, 6/1/8.

<sup>1174</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983,1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p3.

<sup>1175</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983,1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p3.

<sup>1176</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983,1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p7.

<sup>1177</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983,1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p7.

<sup>1178</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983,1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p8.

<sup>1179</sup> Audit Report of a visit under Residential Care Regulations 1986, 21-23 Sept 1987, Epuni Reports ADM 21-6-209 Part One, p5.

<sup>1180</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1985 Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p1.



Three objectives were set in 1985 – firstly to review all practices and procedures for compliance with the National Code of Practice; secondly to ensure all staff understood their role and had the appropriate knowledge and skills to carry it out; and thirdly to review all facilities. A staff committee was set up to review practice and procedure, all job descriptions were reviewed and changes to facilities suggested that would allow the boys to have a choice of recreation and leisure activities.<sup>1181</sup>

In 1986, there were problems with staff cover, with a request in to HO for n additional 7 positions. Due to vacancies and staff illness, every shift had at least one totally inexperienced and untrained relieving staff member.<sup>1182</sup> The lack of job permanency and employment protections for relief staff was also noted.<sup>1183</sup>

In September 1986, the Principal requested the closure of the Home from 15-19 December in order to run a series of workshops to consider the findings of an internal review. It was proposed that a part-time psychologist employed at Epuni would conduct the review by interviewing all staff and any other people contributing directly to the Home.<sup>1184</sup>

An Audit Report in 1987 found a mixture of long-serving experienced staff and fairly recent appointments.<sup>1185</sup> Although enthusiastic and able to carry out basic duties, the auditors found staff more limited in formal social work tasks and recommended further training and qualified social work supervision. More junior staff also needed a better grasp of the 1986 Regulations and inconsistencies were picked up across SRSW practice.<sup>1186</sup>

The new Epuni Residential Centre was opened after careful staff selection processes took place and a 2 month training programme conducted.<sup>1187</sup>

In 1990, only 7 staff were experienced, the remaining 31.5 being inexperienced.<sup>1188</sup> An audit report conducted just 2 weeks after the centre re-opened found many gaps in record-keeping, with staff strong on practical skills but with written work needing further development. Information and recording systems were overly complex, with duplication and a lack of integration.<sup>1189</sup>

Staff also did not have easy access to new policies, circular memoranda and Social Work Manuals, and SRSWs were not formally monitoring the work of their respective staff. SRSWs had no standard procedures setting out their

<sup>1181</sup> Letter, A McLean, Principal Epuni to Director, Lower Hutt, 2/5/85, Epuni Staffing SWK 9-22-1 Part Two.

<sup>1182</sup> Letter A McLearn, Principal Epuni to Regional Director, Central South, undated 1986, Epuni Profile SWK 9-22-1 Part Two.

<sup>1183</sup> Letter A McLean, Principal Epuni to Regional Director, Central South, undated 1986, Epuni Profile SWK 9-22-1 Part Two.

<sup>1184</sup> Letter A McLean, Principal Epuni to Regional Director, Central South, 23/9/86, Epuni Profile SWK 9-22-1 Part Two.

<sup>1185</sup> Audit Report of a visit under Residential Care Regulations 1986, 21-23 Sept 1987, Epuni Reports ADM 21-6-209 Part One, p5.

<sup>1186</sup> Audit Report of a visit under Residential Care Regulations 1986, 21-23 Sept 1987, Epuni Reports ADM 21-6-209 Part One, p1,2.

<sup>1187</sup> Letter, R Wood, Assistant Director-General, Central Southern Region to Minister of Social Welfare, 27/7/89 Epuni Secure F5000003771094.

<sup>1188</sup> Letter, R Campbell, Director to M Rogers, Assistant Director General, Eastern Operations, 30/10/90, Epuni Profile F5000005282674.

<sup>1189</sup> Epuni Residential Centre, Internal Audit Report 10-14 Sept 1990, Epuni Reports ADM 21-6-229 Part One, p7.

responsibilities.<sup>1190</sup> However, an ongoing training programme, including staff supervision training was put in place to follow an intensive two-week induction programme.<sup>1191</sup>

### Staff to resident incidents

Privacy Act s 29(1)(a) Affairs of another

A night supervisor was dismissed in [REDACTED] after he was unable to satisfactorily answer why he woke boys at night to go to the toilet by touching their penis. The boys woken in this manner were not known bed wetters.

The DCWO decided not to lay charges with the Police because he thought no irreparable harm had been done to the boys. Further, the lack of corroborative evidence affected the likely outcome (corroboration was required by the law at the time and was not possible to obtain as each boy was in a separate bedroom). It was thought that laying charges would only "bring opprobrium on the institution and possibly give rise to considerable speculation on the part of the public."<sup>1192</sup> The DCWO went on to say:

"I realise, of course, that these boys could at some later date talk of this to their parents or foster-parents or if transferred to another institution, make mention of it, and I have instructed Mr Howe that should this be the case, the matter be referred to me personally so that I could deal with the matter appropriately. It would probably be in the best interests for the DCWO in the area from which these boys came to be notified of the incident, and I propose to do this so that they will be au fait with the situation.

"You may consider it necessary to draw the attention of the Police to this, but I feel in the circumstances that it is more prudent to let the matter lie as it has been dealt with. Any comments you might have to make in this respect would be appreciated."

Mr Reilly, for the Superintendent replied:<sup>1193</sup>

"I think we must protect the interests of other children as well as those for whom we are responsible when they might be in moral danger. It seems to me that you should tell the incident to an appropriate officer in the Police Department, not for the purpose of having an information laid against this man but ensuring the Police know of it so that something can be done if future employment is found where offences against children are made easier to commit – a school caretaker for example. I think our obligation would end there. Your intentions about notification to our Officers is correct."

In 1969 it was alleged that a policeman at the Danniverke station had told four absconding youths held at that station to gang up on and belt any Housemaster if the boys felt they were being picked on. The boys claimed to have absconded in response to being picked on by staff. The inappropriateness of the policeman's advice was noted.<sup>1194</sup>

<sup>1190</sup> Epuni Residential Centre, Internal Audit Report 10-14 Sept 1990, Epuni Reports ADM 21-6-229 Part One, p9.

<sup>1191</sup> Epuni Residential Centre, Internal Audit Report 10-14 Sept 1990, Epuni Reports ADM 21-6-229 Part One, p6.

<sup>1193</sup> Note of DG Reilly, for Superintendent, 28/11/68 to Memo, Fitzgerald DCWO to Superintendent 26.11.68, Epuni Incidents F5000005659656.

<sup>1194</sup> Memo, GL Hermansson, Assistant Manager to DCWO, Lower Hutt, 25/7/69, Epuni Incidents F5000002180902.

In [REDACTED] one staff member was sacked for slack practice in secure that led to an absconding. The confidential staff report into this matter noted that the incident was the result of "serious slackness" by a number of staff and "cumulative individual mistakes", and the Principal was directed to address this matter across the institution.<sup>1195</sup>

In 1984 [REDACTED] made a complaint to the Ombudsmen about the handling of an incident involving what [REDACTED] viewed as unnecessarily harsh and violent physical restraint of a boy. The altercation occurred in the court yard and continued in the secure unit with other staff involved. The boy was subsequently taken to Porirua where an assessment found no evidence of mental illness, but it was alleged that the boys in the Home were told otherwise. [REDACTED] had raised the matter within the Home and with the District Office. The District Officer told [REDACTED] a meeting would be arranged with the Visiting Committee, but [REDACTED] never heard from the Visiting Committee. In a meeting between [REDACTED] the Principal and the Headmaster of the school [REDACTED] was told that what happened was of no concern to her and she was reminded of the declaration of secrecy she had signed on commencing employment.<sup>1196</sup> Soon after, there was [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]'s services were dispensed with. [REDACTED] alleged her dismissal was due to her complaint to the Ombudsman.<sup>1197</sup>

## Schooling

In 1967, concern was expressed about the delay in getting boys to attend either a local school or the Epuni school. Sometimes this took several weeks, and a 1967 Inspection Report noted 14 boys not at school but on work duties in the grounds and indicated that this was not acceptable.<sup>1198</sup>

The opening of a new classroom block in 1968 allowed the full day school to run for the first time.<sup>1199</sup> In 1969 the school had capacity for 15 pupils and was "always operational at that level".<sup>1200</sup> A journalist writing during that year noted the difficulty of teaching a wide age range of boys, many of whom were "far below average in scholastic ability".<sup>1201</sup> It was also noted that some boys attended local schools.<sup>1202</sup>

A further classroom was added in 1972.<sup>1203</sup> Another pre-fabricated classroom was added in 1984.<sup>1204</sup>

<sup>1196</sup> Letter, LJ Castle, Ombudsman, to Director-General, Social Welfare, 20/3/84, Epuni Incidents SWK 9-22-1 Part One.

<sup>1197</sup> BM Manchester for Director-General to Mr Castle, Ombudsman, 15/6/84 Epuni Complaints SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One

<sup>1198</sup> Inspection Report, Mr Hayes, 10-20 October 1967, Epuni Reports 31567.

<sup>1199</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p2.

<sup>1200</sup> Memo, FitzGerald to Lower North DCOs, 7/8/69, Epuni Profile 31569.

<sup>1201</sup> Thomas, Rita, "Time spent in a Boys' Home can be a turning point for many wayward young men", *Evening Post*, 17/12/69, Epuni Profile 31567.

<sup>1202</sup> Thomas, Rita, "Time spent in a Boys' Home can be a turning point for many wayward young men", *Evening Post*, 17/12/69, Epuni Profile 31567.

<sup>1203</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p3.

<sup>1204</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p4.

In 1977 three teachers and one teacher's aid were employed. Three student teachers per term on section were also utilised. At this time there were 3 classrooms, 1 library, a staffroom and storeroom. In addition, the school made use of a gym and woodwork room on site. Boys ranged in age from 9-16, with 9 students on average per class. The average length of attendance was 33 days and a total of 152 boys attended the school during 1977.<sup>1205</sup> In 1978 the average length of attendance was 8.4 weeks, and in 1979 it was 12.5 weeks.<sup>1206</sup>

In 1979 the school was said to "provide remedial work in basic academic subjects and assists with a social re-education programme".<sup>1207</sup> At this time, some boys near the end of their stay at Epuni attended local schools.<sup>1208</sup>

In 1979, the school was administered by the Principal and staffed by the Special Services Division of the Department of Education.<sup>1209</sup> Testing of reading ability showed that 90% of the boys were retarded in reading skills by between 3-7 years, with some progressing 2 years in reading ability after six to eight weeks at the school.<sup>1210</sup> Despite these successes, it was common for boys to be underachievers at school and many were described as being "totally devoid of any worthwhile motivation towards school work".<sup>1211</sup> Each boy was put on an individual programme where early successes were recognised. School attendees went on weekly community visits and the school emphasised social education, aimed at improving the boys' self image.<sup>1212</sup>

In 1979 the three teachers were all new staff, with one teacher away on a year-long training course on Special Education. This led to a drop in the physical condition of the school and in school standards, both of which were rectified the following year.<sup>1213</sup>

The Epuni Handbook sets out criteria for considering a boy for placement in a school within the local community (called Outside School). A boy was assessed in the Home and if thought capable of the level of school work, and if there were no other factors, such as a history of poor attendance etc, would be considered for Outside School. His Caseworker was expected to keep a close eye on progress and attend to any signing of notes or other tasks a parent would be expected to undertake.<sup>1214</sup>

The Head Teacher reported a good year in 1980, including positive relations with RSWs. Academic work was completed in the mornings with school trips and art-related activities taking place in the afternoons. Few disciplinary problems were experienced. The local Police constable spent one day a week working with the pupils, although the content of his work is not documented. Other schools

<sup>1205</sup> Annual Statistics for the year ending 31/12/77, Epuni Reports 31567.

<sup>1206</sup> MJ Howe, Principal, Epuni to Director-General 10/8/80, Epuni Admissions F5000001639093.

<sup>1207</sup> Howe, M, Principal, Notes for the Information of Visiting Training Courses, 1979, Epuni Reports F5000003771094.

<sup>1208</sup> Howe, M, Principal, Notes for the Information of Visiting Training Courses, 1979, Epuni Reports F5000003771094.

<sup>1209</sup> Howe, M, Principal, Notes for the Information of Visiting Training Courses, 1979, Epuni Reports F5000003771094.

<sup>1210</sup> Howe, M, Principal, Notes for the Information of Visiting Training Courses, 1979, Epuni Reports F5000003771094.

<sup>1211</sup> Howe, M, Principal, Notes for the Information of Visiting Training Courses, 1979, Epuni Reports F5000003771094.

<sup>1212</sup> Howe, M, Principal, Notes for the Information of Visiting Training Courses, 1979, Epuni Reports F5000003771094.

<sup>1213</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 7.

<sup>1214</sup> Outside School, Handbook 8.2, Epuni Education UR/0268, undated, circa 1975.

participated in the Epuni school programme, as did other outside agencies.<sup>1215</sup> The average length of school attendance during 1980 was 35 days.<sup>1216</sup> Average attendance dropped to 28 days in 1981.<sup>1217</sup>

Staffing the school proved difficult in 1981, with 5 relievers employed during terms 2 and 3 and an inability to fill positions resulting in the closure of one classroom for six weeks.<sup>1218</sup>

From 1982-84, about half the annual intake of boys attended school and staffing during this time was relatively constant.<sup>1219</sup> A new method of education was introduced – an activity-based programme based on pre-set objectives that tried to engage the boys in learning.<sup>1220</sup> The programme provided a different experience for boys than what they had experienced at other schools, and was considered successful, although difficulties arose for boys whose stay was very short.<sup>1221</sup> Relations between school and residential staff were said to be good during these years, with school staff meeting regularly with other staff and being fully integrated into the institution.<sup>1222</sup>

A pre-fabricated classroom was brought on site in 1984 with the idea of setting up a fourth classroom for the teaching of pre-work and unemployment skills, as well as wood, metal and other craft work, for all boys, not just those attending the school. However, it was used as a reading resource library after the Education Department refused to grant Epuni school another teacher.<sup>1223</sup> A complaint about the location of the new classroom was made by a neighbour.<sup>1224</sup>

A vacation school programme commenced in 1984, to allow for educational assessments of boys admitted over the summer vacation.<sup>1225</sup>

In November 1985, the Principal of Epuni wrote to the Director, Lower Hutt expressing his view that the school was understaffed and poorly resourced. The extra load on teachers, including attending case work meetings and dealing with difficult pupils was said to be placing teachers under great strain and made recruitment and retention of staff difficult, and extra resources were asked for.<sup>1226</sup>

The increase in age of admissions over time led to submissions in the 1985 Annual Report that the school should be reclassified from a primary to a secondary school. Classification as a primary school meant that many primary-trained teachers applying for positions were put off by having to teach 13-15 year olds while some secondary-trained teachers were barred from applying. Another problem created by classification was that teachers at the school had little contact with other secondary teachers and also that specialised classes usually offered at secondary level, such as manual training, were not offered due to a lack of resources.<sup>1227</sup>

<sup>1215</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 7.

<sup>1216</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, Table 5/11..

<sup>1217</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1981, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, Table "School".

<sup>1218</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1981, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 7.

<sup>1219</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p5.

<sup>1220</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p5.

<sup>1221</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p5.

<sup>1222</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p6.

<sup>1223</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p6.

<sup>1224</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p9.

<sup>1225</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p6.

<sup>1226</sup> Memo, A McLean, Principal Epuni to Director, Lower Hutt, 1/11/85, Epuni Education SWK 9-22-1, Part Two.

<sup>1227</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1985 Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, Appendix III.

In 1986 it was noted that Epuni had been having an ongoing battle with the Department of Education to provide more resources for the school.<sup>1228</sup> The Principal also requested direction from the Director-General on whether the school was obliged under the law to provide an education to all residents.<sup>1229</sup>

A 1987 Audit found the school's programme academically limited and not extending the boys enough. Residential social workers were also overused in the programme.<sup>1230</sup>

When the centre re-opened in 1990, the school was established by two relieving High School teachers from Hutt Valley High School. The programme that these teachers set up focused on individual needs, based around remedial reading, music, mathematics, writing, reading and simple geography. Three permanent teachers were expected to start by October.<sup>1231</sup> The Hutt Valley High School Board of Trustees also took over the administration of the school programme. The Board became dissatisfied with this arrangement, as they felt they had responsibility over things they had no direct control of, and because administration took up a disproportionate amount of the Board's time.<sup>1232</sup>

## Absconding

The physical location of Epuni within an industrial and urban environment, as opposed to the rural location of many other institutions made absconding easier than from other department institutions, and boys were able to make contact with old associated, "bodgies and other street types" by the movement of young people up and down the electric units that ran through the Hutt Valley.<sup>1233</sup> This gave rise to issues at Epuni that were different to some other department institutions.

During March 1972, 22 boys absconded, committing offences such as burglary, theft and car conversion.<sup>1234</sup> Some of these were repeat offenders. The intake of boys from surrounding areas meant that they often converted cars and attempted to drive home. The number of abscondings led local police to ask that security be improved at the home. It was felt that the number of abscondings at this time was due to lack of staff and the length of time boys were held before being transferred to a long term institution.<sup>1235</sup>

An absconding incident where 2 boys broke out of the secure unit using a screwdriver resulted in car conversion and the sacking of a staff member who had made several mistakes.<sup>1236</sup>

<sup>1228</sup> Letter A McLean, Principal Epuni to Regional Director, Central South, undated 1986, Epuni Profile SWK 9-22-1 Part Two.

<sup>1229</sup> A McLean, Principal Epuni to Director-General, 28/7/86, Epuni Education SWK 9-22-1 Part Two.

<sup>1230</sup> Audit Report of a visit under Residential Care Regulations 1986, 21-23 Sept 1987, Epuni Reports ADM 21-6-209 Part One, p4.

<sup>1231</sup> Epuni Residential Centre, Internal Audit Report 10-14 Sept 1990, Epuni Reports ADM 21-6-229 Part One, p7.

<sup>1232</sup> A Scott, Acting Director Epuni Residential Centre to M Doolan Assistant Director-General, 26/9/91, Epuni Education F5000005282674.

<sup>1233</sup> Progress Report 1959, Boys' Home, Epuni, Epuni Reports 31565, p5.

<sup>1234</sup> Memo, WC FitzGerald, Acting Director to D-G DSW 12/4/72. , Epuni Incidents 31569.

<sup>1235</sup> Memo, WC FitzGerald, Acting Director to D-G DSW 12/4/72. , Epuni Incidents 31569.

<sup>1236</sup> Memo, BD Baker, ADSW to Director, Lower Hutt, 1/6/73, Epuni Staffing 31569.

The total number of abscondings rose through the late-60s and early 70s, although the percentage of abscondings per admissions remained relatively static, although high, at around 36%. This rate had dropped to 15% by 1979.<sup>1237</sup>

There were 86 abscondings involving 66 boys during 1980.<sup>1238</sup> In 1981, the rate of abscondings dropped by 5%, rising again to between 22-24% of all admissions in the early 80s.<sup>1239</sup> The rise in abscondings was linked by the Principal to the drop in admissions to the secure unit, which fell from 69% of all admissions in 1982 to 32% in 1984.<sup>1240</sup>

The absconding rate rose markedly in 1985, leading to complaints from the police and the local community.<sup>1241</sup>

Two serious abscondings were noted in 1990. One of which resulted in an accident in a converted car driven at speeds of over 180kms per hour.<sup>1242</sup> The trend of car conversion in an attempt to get home was raised again, although it was noted that there had been few of these in the year to July 1990.<sup>1243</sup> Other issues were raised. Young people awaiting sentencing in the District Court saw little penalty in absconding. The location of Epuni within an urban area and its nature as an open institution also offered opportunities to abscond.<sup>1244</sup>

## Secure care

Disputes with contractors left the 2 new secure units un-operational throughout 1969.<sup>1245</sup>

Overcrowding was experienced at Epuni in 1972, with up to 12 boys being held in the 4 cells at times, as well as others being held in the Police cells or sent to Kohitere.<sup>1246</sup> At one time two boys held in Police custody in Hastings were aged 11 and 12.<sup>1247</sup> All admissions were made through secure at this time, and this was always done by the Manager, even though department policy was for Managers to only have the authority to admit into secure in an emergency (refer Field Officers Manual J124).<sup>1248</sup> One boy was permitted to be admitted directly to the open side of the institution because he was very distressed.<sup>1249</sup>

A Mr O [redacted] made a complaint to the Minister of Justice about the secure cells in 1973. In response, the Principal invited Mr O [redacted] to visit, although there is nothing

<sup>1237</sup> MJ Howe, Principal, Epuni to Director-General 10/8/80, Epuni Admissions F5000001639093.

<sup>1238</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, Table 5/6.

<sup>1239</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1981, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 2. Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p14. See also, Analysis of Abscondings 1979-1983, Epuni Incidents F5000002186500.

<sup>1240</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p14.

<sup>1241</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1985 Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p4.

<sup>1242</sup> Memo, R Campbell, Director to M Rogers, Assistant Director General, Eastern Operations, 29/10/90 Epuni Profile F5000005282674.

<sup>1243</sup> Letter, R Campbell, Director to M Rogers, Assistant Director General, Eastern Operations, 30/10/90, Epuni Profile F5000005282674.

<sup>1244</sup> Letter, R Campbell, Director to M Rogers, Assistant Director General, Eastern Operations, 30/10/90, Epuni Profile F5000005282674.

<sup>1245</sup> Memo, FitzGerald to Lower North DCOs, 7/8/69, Epuni Profile 31569.

<sup>1246</sup> Memo, WC FitzGerald, Acting Director to D-G DSW 12/4/72, Epuni Incidents 31569

<sup>1247</sup> Memo, WC FitzGerald, Acting Director to D-G DSW 12/4/72, Epuni Incidents 31569

<sup>1248</sup> Memo, IDJ MacKay, Director-General to Director, Lower Hutt, 26/9/72, Epuni Reports 31567.

<sup>1249</sup> [redacted], Attendant to Manager Epuni, 21/11/72, Epuni Secure CF/600099.

on file to indicate whether he did. In a letter of explanation to the Director-General, it was noted that outsiders often reacted badly to the stark cells, but their views changed when they understood how the cells were used and for whom. For example, secure admission was used while boys recovered from substance abuse and caught up on food and sleep. Close staff supervision was also thought appropriate during the first few days when boys came to terms with the behaviour that had led to their admission. The correspondence also noted that the punishment motive was non-existent at the Institution, but that the boys viewed being locked up as punishment.<sup>1250</sup>

In 1975 most boys were admitted through secure, usually for 3 days.<sup>1251</sup> The other main group using secure were returned absconders.<sup>1252</sup>

A nine-page policy document on procedures in the secure unit was issued on 15 May 1975.<sup>1253</sup> Because admission was routinely through secure, policies covered general admission procedures such as showering, delousing and health checks. A daily domestic cleaning schedule was set out with boys expected to clean their rooms, as well as floors, showers and toilets in common areas. Two hours per day was set aside for exercise. For short-term (i.e. 3 day admissions) exercise was to be given in the secure unit (a set of exercises) as long as the gym was used every second day. Long-term admissions were required to have daily exercise in the gym. Room checks were carried out while boys were showered. Records were required including the keeping of a daily secure unit diary. Reading books were provided and preferred over comics. Games and art materials were available for supervised use in the common room. A three-day school work plan of various grades was provided by the senior teacher and given to all short term secure admissions. Each room had an emergency call button, which was turned off if misused.<sup>1254</sup>

Further overcrowding was experienced in September 1976, with permission sought to use Kohitere after 14 boys occupied a unit designed to hold 4 boys.<sup>1255</sup>

In 1979, about 90% of boys were being admitted through secure, and this was described as offering "a three day induction and assessment programme."<sup>1256</sup> This figure dropped to 81% in 1980, and some boys spent shorter periods on induction.<sup>1257</sup> The average length of stay also declined, from 3 days in 1979 to 1.9 days in 1983.<sup>1258</sup> The 1980 Annual Report noted that a major emphasis of the induction programme was that time in the secure unit was not a punishment. A programme balancing recreation, discussion, induction, practical written work and relaxation was aimed for.<sup>1259</sup> However, reliance was often placed on inexperienced staff to run the induction programme.<sup>1260</sup> The different uses of the secure unit, i.e.

<sup>1250</sup> Memo, BC Baker, Epuni, to Director-General, 30/5/73, Epuni Secure 31569.

<sup>1251</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p3.

<sup>1252</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p3.

<sup>1253</sup> MJ Howe, Principal Epuni, Secure Unit, Notes of comments on supervision and routines, Handbook 9.4.2, 15/5/75, Epuni Reports, UR/0268.

<sup>1254</sup> MJ Howe, Principal Epuni, Secure Unit, Notes of comments on supervision and routines, 15/5/75. See also Handbook, 9.5, 1975, Epuni file UR/0268.

<sup>1255</sup> Memo, M Howe, Principal to Director, Lower Hutt, 25.9.76, Epuni file F5000005659656.

<sup>1256</sup> Howe, M, Principal, Notes for the Information of Visiting Training Courses, 1979, Epuni Profile F5000003771094.

<sup>1257</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 9.

<sup>1258</sup> Summary of secure statistics, 1979-1983, Epuni Secure, F5000002186500.

<sup>1259</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 10

<sup>1260</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 10.



for remand cases and returned absconders also presented challenges.<sup>1261</sup> The 1981 figure for admissions to secure dropped again to 74%.<sup>1262</sup> Length of stay in the secure unit was sometimes shortened by the pressure of new admissions, which meant that unsettled boys were placed in the open part of the institution – leading to absconding and further pressure on secure from returned absconders.<sup>1263</sup>

By early 1981 the unit was under criticism for being inadequate and oppressively designed. Bulldozing the unit and rebuilding was thought to be the best option, but modifications were also proposed. Epuni wanted to move to a reception centre arrangement along the lines of Owairaka.<sup>1264</sup> The 1981 Annual Report called the secure facilities “primitive and inadequate”.<sup>1265</sup> The New Horizons Departmental report noted in 1982 that the secure facilities were “poor and badly sited”.<sup>1266</sup>

Staffing shortages impacted on secure in 1981, with the unit being staffed for 5 hours a day weekdays and for 4 hours a day on weekends, with staff checks at 30 minute intervals at other times.<sup>1267</sup> Staffing shortages led to the closure of secure many times during 1982 and 1983, but the situation was remedied by additions to the staff ceiling in 1984.<sup>1268</sup> During these years negotiations were underway for renovation and extension of the secure unit. It was argued that 6 beds would not meet future needs, and the proposal was accepted on the proviso that 10 beds be made available at Kohitere for long-term difficult secure cases and remands.<sup>1269</sup> The upgrade was seen as a temporary measure until a purpose-built remand unit could be constructed and included seat covers being put on toilets in two secure rooms.<sup>1270</sup> By 1984, alterations were viewed as urgent and requiring immediate attention.<sup>1271</sup> The 1985 Annual Report noted that finance for stage one of the alterations had been requested and plans for stage two were under preparation.<sup>1272</sup>

Admissions to secure dropped dramatically in the early 80s – from 69% of all admissions in 1982 to 32% in 1984. This was linked to a rise in abscondings during these years.<sup>1273</sup>

The rundown condition of the secure unit in 1985 affected programmes offered.<sup>1274</sup> Overcrowding occurred, with 14 boys housed in the unit in September and regular notifications to Head Office about double occupancy of single secure rooms during 1984 and 1985.<sup>1275</sup> Also during 1985, the school teachers were too busy with other tasks to offer a school programme in secure.<sup>1276</sup>

<sup>1261</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 10.

<sup>1262</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1981, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 6.

<sup>1263</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1981, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 6.

<sup>1264</sup> Memo, M Howe, Principal Epuni to Director, Lower Hutt, 26/2/81, Epuni Secure SWK 9-22-1 Part One.

<sup>1265</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1981, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 5.

<sup>1266</sup> Historical notes on the Epuni Residential Centre, Lower Hutt (1995) NZCYP Service, Wellington, Epuni Profile F5000002368862, p4.

<sup>1267</sup> Memo, M Howe, Principal Epuni to Director, Lower Hutt, 26/2/81, Epuni Secure SWK 9-22-1 Part One.

<sup>1268</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p3.

<sup>1269</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p10.

<sup>1270</sup> Memo, M Howe, Principal Epuni to Director, Lower Hutt, 18.4.84, Epuni file SWK 9-22-1 Part One.

<sup>1271</sup> Memo, M Howe, Principal Epuni to Director, Lower Hutt, 18.4.84, Epuni file SWK 9-22-1 Part One.

<sup>1272</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1985 Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p10.

<sup>1273</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p14.

<sup>1274</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1985 Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p2.

<sup>1275</sup> File note, Secure Occupancy, 3/10/85, Epuni Secure SWK 9-22-1-1 Part Two.

<sup>1276</sup> Memo, A McLean, Principal Epuni to Director, Lower Hutt, 1/11/85, Epuni Education SWK 9-22-1, Part Two.

A 1987 audit report found only minimal placements to an adequately staffed secure unit, after separate secure staffing levels were introduced nationwide in 1986.<sup>1277</sup>

Problems with the legal restriction on not admitting care and protection admissions to secure were noted in 1989, with the correct procedure being to readmit under the youth justice provisions.<sup>1278</sup>

A 1990 audit visit found no method of recording activities, programme details and duty period details. The physical environment was not suitable for long-term care, and any long-stay residents were sent to Weymouth or Kingslea by arrangement. The audit found exposed wiring in three rooms, cracked window panes, a continuously running toilet in one room and a blocked toilet in another.<sup>1279</sup> Three Judges had visited the secure unit and recommended renovations, estimated at a cost of \$40,000.<sup>1280</sup>

In early 1991 there had been 106 admissions to secure and 66 admissions to the Centre. The large number of secure admissions was said to be due to the serious nature of offending by residents and the difficulty of containing people in an open residence.<sup>1281</sup> The Court had granted 32 extensions to the initial 72 hour secure period. The heavy use of secure placed strain on staffing.

By 1992, the secure wing was 30 years old and described as being "inadequate for present day need".<sup>1282</sup>

## Discipline

A camp report from 1959 documents the sending home of a boy after refusing an order made by a staff member. The necessity of "man handling" the boy was noted. The boy was brought back to the Home in a police car from the Akatarawa Camp as no other transport was available.<sup>1283</sup>

No information was found in relation to discipline in the 1960s.

One of the reports on a 1972 incident reveals a number of punishments, such as being harangued in line, being sent early to bed, having extra time in the gymnasium, being taken off privileges, including the privilege of smoking.<sup>1284</sup>

<sup>1277</sup> Audit Report of a visit under Residential Care Regulations 1986, 21-23 Sept 1987, Epuni Reports ADM 21-6-209 Part One, p5.

<sup>1278</sup> Letter R Campbell, Director Epuni to Assistant Director-General, Central Southern Region, 19/12/89 Epuni Secure S/84 and letter R Crawford Senior Programme Advisor (Youth) to R Campbell, Director Epuni, undated, Epuni Secure F5000001643632.

<sup>1279</sup> Epuni Residential Centre, Internal Audit Report 10-14 Sept 1990, Epuni Reports ADM 21-6-229 Part One, p5.

<sup>1280</sup> Epuni Residential Centre, Internal Audit Report 10-14 Sept 1990, Epuni Reports ADM 21-6-229 Part One, p2.

<sup>1281</sup> Memo, J Ngatai, AD, to Directors Eastern Region, 13/2/91, Epuni Profile F5000005282674.

<sup>1282</sup> Robin Wilson, General Manager, Epuni, Report to Assoc Minister of SW, 7/7/92. Epuni Profile F5000004081321.

<sup>1283</sup> BC Burton, DCWO to Superintendent, 4/6/59, Epuni Discipline/punishment Prod # 20065038 NZ Archives.

<sup>1284</sup> Disturbance at Epuni Boys' Home on 23 June 1972, Report on Sequence of Event, undated, author unknown, Epuni Incidents 31567.

Several practices were roundly criticised after the closure of the Home in 1972. These included boys having to frequently line up before moving from place to place and being held in line until there was silence; eating of meals in silence with a staff member sitting on a dais in the dining room; and the use of afternoon sleep periods. The Director-General insisted that these practices be stopped immediately.<sup>1285</sup>

The Director-General also suggested that the system of rewards be extended to replace the overly negative discipline system used at that time.<sup>1286</sup> He noted that boys were threatened so often about reductions in pocket money, being off privileges for up to 8 hours a week, going early to bed and missing films that the threats ceased to have any effect beyond creating resentment.<sup>1287</sup>

The Epuni Handbook of 1975 repeated the section from the Child Welfare Officer's Manual. This excerpt emphasised the need for respect for the individual, the responsiveness of children to qualities in adults rather than to their staff position alone and the need to keep children fully occupied. Corporal punishment was to be administered as a last resort and was generally discouraged. Systems of rewards or privileges were not to amount to bribery and group-based solutions were not to give any child any personal authority over other children.<sup>1288</sup>

In 1980, reference was made to re-instituting "blitzes" to improve behaviour after staff shortages had lowered morale among both staff and residents. It was noted that recourse to "blitzes" had not been necessary for many years.<sup>1289</sup>

## Physical punishment

Nothing was found on file in relation to physical punishment before the 1970s.

A memorandum outlining a general disturbance noted that a pre-cursor event was the taking of a group of boys to the gymnasium as an additional punishment for using foul language to female staff.<sup>1290</sup>

Returned absconders were re-inducted through the secure unit and given extra duties and/or additional compulsory physical education as part penalty.<sup>1291</sup>

The 1975 Handbook prohibited the use of physical force as a punishment, and all incidents had to be reported by the Principal to the Director-General and could lead to a staff member's dismissal. The only permissible uses were where a staff member needed to protect themselves or others from assault, to prevent damage to property or harm to the young person, or on a young person's refusal to go to secure.<sup>1292</sup>

<sup>1285</sup> Memo, IDJ MacKay, Director-General to Director, Lower Hutt, 26/9/72, Epuni Reports 31567.

<sup>1286</sup> Memo, IDJ MacKay, Director-General to Director, Lower Hutt, 26/9/72, Epuni Reports 31567.

<sup>1287</sup> Memo, IDJ MacKay, Director-General to Director, Lower Hutt, 26/9/72, Epuni Reports 31567.

<sup>1288</sup> Handbook 12.4, Epuni, 1975, Epuni Reports UR/0268.

<sup>1289</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 6.

<sup>1290</sup> Disturbance at Epuni Boys' Home on 23 June 1972, Report on Sequence of Event, undated, author unknown, Epuni Incidents 31567.

<sup>1291</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 10.

<sup>1292</sup> Handbook 3.9, Epuni, 1975, Epuni Reports UR/0268.

Following the Johnston Report, and while administrative directives were being formulated during 1982, all staff were directed to fully record all disciplinary measures, either on the personal file or in the daily occurrence register.<sup>1293</sup>

Corporal punishment was phased out during 1984, ahead of regulations to this effect coming into force. The practice of corporal punishment was said to be on a minor scale. The Principal was concerned that corporal punishment would be replaced by negative psychological punishment of longer and potentially more damaging nature and he felt it necessary to keep a close eye on staff to ensure this did not happen.<sup>1294</sup>

## Drugs, alcohol, and tattoos

Little information was found prior to the late 1970s. By the late 1970s, glue sniffing was a major issue at Epuni. A survey of residents showed widespread use.<sup>1295</sup> The lack of any other agencies dealing specifically with the problem was noted and Epuni therefore decided to run its own programme. The programme appeared to have more impact if it focussed on the health effects of solvent abuse and allowed the boys to challenge statements made about the dangers of sniffing. An extensive paper on the physiology and other aspects of solvent abuse was prepared by the Assistant Principal.<sup>1296</sup>

The increase of the problem to "alarming proportions" by 1981 led to a request for more information from district social workers about solvent and other drug abuse in regard to new admissions.<sup>1297</sup>

## Smoking

No information was found relating to smoking in the 1950s or 1960s.

In 1970, some boys gave incorrect birth dates so that they would be allowed to smoke.<sup>1298</sup> Smoking was considered a privilege and permission to smoke was withdrawn as a punishment.<sup>1299</sup>

In 1975, short term admissions to secure were not permitted to smoke. In general, smoking in secure was discouraged due to the fire risk. Long-term secure admissions who were 15 or over and who had left school were permitted to smoke. Boys had to pay for and provide their own cigarettes.<sup>1300</sup>

<sup>1293</sup> Action to be taken following Johnston Report, 26.11.82, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1 Part One.

<sup>1294</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p12.

<sup>1295</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, Table 5/12.

<sup>1296</sup> GA Stewart, Petrol and Solvent Abuse in the Wellington Region. Epuni Drugs/Smoking F5000001639093.

<sup>1297</sup> GA Stewart for Principal, Epuni, to ADSW 12/2/81, Epuni Drugs/Smoking F5000003771094.

<sup>1298</sup> BM FitzGerald for DCWO to DCWOs, 18/6/70 Epuni Admissions F5000002843734.

<sup>1299</sup> Disturbance at Epuni Boys' Home on 23 June 1972, Report on Sequence of Event, undated, author unknown, Epuni Incidents 31567.

<sup>1300</sup> MJ Howe, Principal Epuni, Secure Unit, Notes of comments on supervision and routines, 15/5/75, Epuni Reports, UR/0268.

## Contact with field social workers

Nothing was found on file prior to 1970. In 1970, Districts were asked to send fuller information on admission, as Epuni staff sometimes struggled to make headway because information on a resident was lacking. Some boys had been in Epuni for upwards of two months without any relevant material arriving.<sup>1301</sup>

In 1977 further instructions and suggestions for closer contact between Epuni and the boys' home district were distributed. Information requested included the admission form, case history, any medical or other reports, police summary of facts and court appearance dates. Regular updating of information regarding future plans and changed family circumstances were also requested, with field social worker input into case conferences welcomed.<sup>1302</sup>

In 1980, admissions came directly from districts to Epuni, without going through a Liaison Officer. This new system was thought to have benefits because information about individuals could be directly conveyed.<sup>1303</sup> (and was to be reviewed one year later – check)

The Criminal Justice Act 1985 allowed boys to be placed at Epuni without being allocated a social worker, making links with Districts and family difficult.<sup>1304</sup>

## Contact with community

In 1959, boys attended local schools and churches regularly.<sup>1305</sup> Some boys expressed shame at coming from the Home into the community, one boy telling a reporter that he was careful not to be seen leaving or entering the home.<sup>1306</sup>

In 1979, the Principal stated that the institution enjoyed "reciprocal activities with Community groups around us".<sup>1307</sup> At this time, boys also played softball, basketball, soccer and table tennis in community competitions. This continued to be the case throughout the early 80s and included participation in a local raft race and "run for fun".<sup>1308</sup> It was noted that constant change in team membership affected team standards but that nevertheless the positive gains outweighed the negative.<sup>1309</sup> In addition, community groups visited the Home.<sup>1310</sup>

Adverse community publicity during 1980 was noted in the Annual Report. A local security firm put fliers in neighbouring letterboxes after the Evening Post ran an

<sup>1301</sup> BM FitzGerald for DCWO to DCWOs, 18/6/70 Epuni Admissions F5000002843734.

<sup>1302</sup> DB Smith for Director, Lower Hutt to ADSWs, 15/8/77, Epuni Admissions F5000001643632.

<sup>1303</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 4.

<sup>1304</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1985 Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p3.

<sup>1305</sup> Progress Report 1959, Boys' Home, Epuni, Epuni Reports 31565, p4.

<sup>1306</sup> Thomas, Rita, "Time spent in a Boys' Home can be a turning point for many wayward young men", *Evening Post*, 17/12/69, Epuni Profile 31567.

<sup>1307</sup> Howe, M, Principal, Notes for the Information of Visiting Training Courses, 1979, Epuni Profile F5000003771094.

<sup>1308</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p13.

<sup>1309</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p13.

<sup>1310</sup> Howe, M, Principal, Notes for the Information of Visiting Training Courses, 1979, Epuni Profile F5000003771094.

article about an absconder converting a car. The Principal noted that the incident was the first car conversion in 10 years.<sup>1311</sup>

During 1980, the Home received 414 visitors and 41 groups in total.<sup>1312</sup> Visitors rose to 692 and 79 groups in 1981, with most visitors attending for training purposes or for activities with residents.<sup>1313</sup> The Lower Hutt Police used the gymnasium for weekly physical education training.<sup>1314</sup>

The Home became an official Civil Defence Welfare Centre in 1981, to be used to house people in the event of an emergency, with a senior staff member sitting on the local Civil Defence Planning Committee.<sup>1315</sup>

Boys participated in a milk flavouring competition at the Beehive in 1981. The then Prime Minister Mr Muldoon gave the boys' product second placing.<sup>1316</sup>

Community links from 1982-1984 included weekly school and class visits to the Public Library, Huia Swimming Pool and commercial visits. Once a week a group of boys did bodybuilding at a local fitness centre.<sup>1317</sup>

It was also noted that one of the reasons for installing a fence around the pool was "to protect our neighbours' children who often wander into our grounds".<sup>1318</sup> Community groups also made use of the pool.<sup>1319</sup>

Weekly visits to Kokiri marae took place in 1985, with boys learning aspects of Maori culture and crafting kōwhaiwhai and tukutuku panels, which were returned to Epuni for permanent display.<sup>1320</sup>

## Visiting committees

The appointment of a Visiting Committee of 3 people was made in January 1982.<sup>1321</sup> However, by July of 1984, the Principal reported that visits had dropped of to nil. Later that year the Minister dispensed with the services of two of the committee, but omitted to tell the Principal, to his subsequent embarrassment.

The 1984 incident involving the complaint by the art tutor, detailed above, involved a reference to the Visiting Committee, the Chairperson of which unsuccessfully tried to contact the tutor. In correspondence to the Ombudsman over this matter, the Director-General stated that it was not the role of the Visiting Committee to conduct

<sup>1311</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 17.

<sup>1312</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, Table 5/9.

<sup>1313</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1981, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, Table "Visitors to Epuni".

<sup>1314</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1980, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, Table 5/9.

<sup>1315</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1981, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 9.

<sup>1316</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1981, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p 10.

<sup>1317</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p7.

<sup>1318</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p10.

<sup>1319</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1982, 1983, 1984, Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p11.

<sup>1320</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1985 Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p2.

<sup>1321</sup> JM Fitzpatrick, Director, to Chairman, CAB Management Committee, 18/1/82. Epuni Profile F5000001639093.

independent inquiries or investigations, but rather to monitor the policies and practices of the Home and to comment on them.<sup>1322</sup>

Individual members of the Visiting Committee visited the residence weekly during 1986 and the committee also met monthly at the residence. Concerns raised in their 1986 Annual Report were about the adequacy of the school and the secure unit.<sup>1323</sup> Regular visits also took place in 1987. By this time staff morale had been affected by proposed residential services restructuring. Committee members were also concerned about the impact of large amounts of taha Maori activities on Pakeha residents, who felt excluded.<sup>1324</sup>

A 1987 Audit found the boys needed a better understanding of the grievance procedure.<sup>1325</sup> A 1990 Audit found understanding generally good, but that instructions to residents about the process could be clearer.<sup>1326</sup>

## Contact with families

Other than issues raised in other sections of the Epuni profile, nothing was found on file in relation to contact with families.

## Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements

Delays that unnecessarily lengthened stay at Epuni were experienced in placing boys out of the residence in 1962, particularly to Family Homes, and Epuni aimed to give 3-4 weeks notice of requests for placement. On occasion, the delays resulted in a deterioration of behaviour or in absconding.<sup>1327</sup> Delays in release to Home Districts also caused bottle necks in 1969.<sup>1328</sup>

In 1969, a reporter was told that most boys left the home for a foster home or a boarding placement. Few were returned to their homes. Other boys were sent to long-term training institutions, or, if involved in further serious offending, to Borstal.<sup>1329</sup>

Decisions on placement were made on the consensus opinion of Boys' Home staff, school staff, specialist advice and Field social worker. Follow-up work was done after discharge by the Social Work Division. Boys were returned to their home

<sup>1322</sup> JW Grant, Director-General, to LJ Castle, Ombudsman, 7/8/84, Epuni Complaints SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One.

<sup>1323</sup> Visiting Committee, Annual Reports 1986, Epuni Reports, F5000006661405.

<sup>1324</sup> Visiting Committee, Annual Reports 1987, Epuni Reports, F5000006661404; Annual Report of Epuni Visiting Committee 1987, Epuni Reports, F5000006661405.

<sup>1325</sup> Audit Report of a visit under Residential Care Regulations 1986, 21-23 Sept 1987, Epuni Reports ADM 21-6-209 Part One, p4.

<sup>1326</sup> Internal Audit Report 1990, Epuni Residential Centre, Epuni Reports ADM 21-6-229 Part One, p4.

<sup>1327</sup> Memo, FitzGerald (DCWO) to DCWOs in Lower North Island, 6/7/62, Epuni Profile 31565.

<sup>1328</sup> Memo, FitzGerald to Lower North DCOs, 7/8/69, Epuni Profile 31569.

<sup>1329</sup> Thomas, Rita, "Time spent in a Boys' Home can be a turning point for many wayward young men", *Evening Post*, 17/12/69, Epuni Profile 31567.

district where possible, although some went on to long-term training institutions such as Holdsworth, Hokio or Kohitere.<sup>1330</sup>

One problem noted in 1985 involved recommendations that should a boy fail on return the community, he should be placed in a long-term social welfare institution. The practice was to return the boy to Epuni first, where he often spent a long time waiting to get into a long-term home and by the time finally placed in one, his behaviour had often deteriorated markedly.<sup>1331</sup>

---

<sup>1330</sup> Howe, M, Principal, Notes for the Information of Visiting Training Courses, 1979, Epuni Profile F5000003771094.

<sup>1331</sup> Annual Report Epuni Boys' Home, 1985 Epuni Reports SWK 9-22-1-1 Part One, p3.



Chapter  
**5**

# Christchurch Boys' Home

## Physical description

Christchurch Boys' Home was located at 300 Stanmore Road, Christchurch.<sup>1332</sup> The files do not give a date as to when the Boys' Home opened, but it is clear from the files that it was at least open in 1940. The Home consisted of two dormitories, one of ten beds with partitions between them and one with seven beds. There were nine single rooms in the Kauri Wing and an annex which had three beds.<sup>1333</sup> The maximum capacity of the Home was 24, but there were three emergency beds available, taking the maximum to 27..<sup>1334</sup>

There is limited information on the Christchurch Boys' Home files pre 1978.

A trampoline was purchased for the Home by 1966.<sup>1335</sup> It was hoped in 1966 that the purchase of a house that jutted into the Boys' Home property would be effected although the use for the house was not determined at that time.<sup>1336</sup> It was thought by Mr Manchester (designation unknown) that the house could be used to house female staff and that this would then make room in the Home for a sick bay and additional male staff accommodation.<sup>1337</sup>

In 1975 the two former staff rooms were available for use by residents which brought the capacity of the Boys' Home up to 29 plus the two places in secure.<sup>1338</sup>

A complete redecoration of the interior of the Boys' Home was begun in 1978 and was finally completed in 1982.<sup>1339</sup>

A new sprinkler system was installed in 1978 and the removal of some trees and the planting of a flower bed altered the view of the Home.<sup>1340</sup> The redecoration of the exterior of the Home was planned for 1979 as were additions to the secure unit.<sup>1341</sup>

The junior dormitory was divided into cubicles in 1979. A colour television was purchased for the Home in 1979.<sup>1342</sup>

<sup>1332</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1333</sup> Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1334</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1335</sup> Extract from Report by Mr Manchester, 25-29/07/66. Christchurch Boys Home Profile 31437.

<sup>1336</sup> Extract from Report by Mr Manchester, 25-29/07/66. Christchurch Boys Home Profile 31437.

<sup>1337</sup> Extract from Report by Mr Manchester, 25-29/07/66. Christchurch Boys Home Profile 31437.

<sup>1338</sup> Memo, RJ Wilson, for Director General to Director, Christchurch, 04/06/75, Christchurch Boys' Home Profile 31437.

<sup>1339</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437; Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1340</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1341</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1342</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

The inadequate size of the gymnasium was noticed in 1979 and its increase suggested.<sup>1343</sup>

The junior dormitory was carpeted in 1980 which meant that it was warmer in winter and there was a decrease in noise. Three new showers were also installed in the senior dormitory.<sup>1344</sup> The tennis court was also rewired and the cyclone fence extended.<sup>1345</sup>

Electric heaters were installed in most rooms in 1981. The "old" house in front of the main building was demolished to accommodate an administration block. The intermediate dormitory was carpeted which made it warmer in winter and several things, such as emergency bells and windows strengthening, were upgraded in the secure unit.<sup>1346</sup>

In 1981 the Principal felt that better facilities were needed for staff and visitors as there were no toilet facilities for visitors and no privacy available to boys receiving visitors.<sup>1347</sup> This situation was not changed in 1982, but the building of the administration block which was completed in 1984 alleviated the problem.<sup>1348</sup>

The secure unit was renovated and redecorated in 1983 and the activities room was upgraded. One of the old secure units was turned into a "Time-Out" room and another into the residents' dining room.<sup>1349</sup>

A new room was added to the Main building in 1983 and this room became the "... 'smokers' room' and table games room."<sup>1350</sup>

In 1985 the Principal noted that a larger gym would be more beneficial for recreational and sporting activities in the Home.<sup>1351</sup>

The 1987 Audit Report stated that the Boys' Home was to close and amalgamate with Kingslea in 1988.<sup>1352</sup>

## Resident profile

There is little information on Christchurch Boys' Home residents prior to 1975.

Christchurch Boys' Home was a regional institution which provided, "... remand, observation and classification facilities as well as short term assessment and training as a preliminary to more permanent placement."<sup>1353</sup> It was for 12 to 16 year old boys who were "in the custody of the Department and for whom a community living situation is impracticable for the time being."<sup>1354</sup> The range of boys admitted to the

<sup>1343</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1344</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1345</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1346</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1347</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1348</sup> Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1349</sup> Annual Report 1983, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1350</sup> Annual Report 1983, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1351</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1352</sup> Audit Report: MP Doolan, Director Residential Services and M Honeyman, Internal Auditor 06/08/87, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000002572661.

<sup>1353</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1354</sup> Excerpt, roles and functions of Christchurch Boys' Home, undated, Christchurch Boys' Home Profile F5000000902913.

Home was from non-offenders who were just out of control at home, to emotionally disturbed or delinquent boys.<sup>1355</sup> Many of the residents had committed offences against persons or property.<sup>1356</sup>

The catchment area included Nelson, Blenheim, Greymouth, Timaru, Christchurch and other areas.<sup>1357</sup> The majority of the admissions came from Christchurch.<sup>1358</sup>

The maximum capacity for residents in the institution was 25 at any one time with two beds available for emergencies.<sup>1359</sup> This capacity varies between reports, as it was recorded in 1975 that the bed capacity was 29 with two beds for secure.<sup>1360</sup>

The general aim of the Boys' Home was to, "... provide a situation ... to encourage individual and group participation ... encouraging the development of responsibility and leadership qualities ... further the development of work skills through work experiences, vocation guidance..."<sup>1361</sup> The aim of Christchurch Boys' Home is presumed to have stayed the same as no further or different aims were stated on the files.

The Principal stated that short-term institutions had to deal with, "... a moving population and with children of mixed status, all with their individual problems ranging from aggressive to truancy; these are obvious difficulties experienced in the short term establishments."<sup>1362</sup> Residents were encouraged to share their fears and wishes with their case workers in order to help solve problems through sharing and guidance.<sup>1363</sup>

In 1972 the Manager stated that for many months the number of residents in the Institution had been over 24. The limited space and facilities in the Institution meant that any number over 22 residents created overcrowding and increased tension and stress for both staff and residents.<sup>1364</sup> The Manager considered that additions to the Boys' Home urgently needed to be made as well as the appointment of an additional female staff member and the continuance of the emergency position to be continued into January and then reviewed.<sup>1365</sup>

In 1975 the Principal commented on the increasing number of boys admitted to the Home who were older, bigger and involved with drugs. He noted that on three occasions during the year, it was necessary to request that the Police take the boys back into their custody.<sup>1366</sup> RJ Wilson, Assistant Director (Social Work) questioned this by stating, "Should we query the return of boys to Police custody? Is this not against our policy?"<sup>1367</sup> There is no further information on the Christchurch Boys' Home files as to whether this practice was continued.

<sup>1355</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1356</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1357</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1358</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1359</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1360</sup> Memo, RJ Wilson, for Director General to Director, Christchurch, 04/06/75, Christchurch Boys' Home Profile 31437.

<sup>1361</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1362</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1363</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1364</sup> Memo, J Kean, Manager Christchurch Boys' Home to Director, Social Welfare 12/12/72, Christchurch Boys' Home Profile 31437.

<sup>1365</sup> Memo, J Kean, Manager Christchurch Boys' Home to Director, Social Welfare 12/12/72, Christchurch Boys' Home Profile 31437.

<sup>1366</sup> Memo, ER Smith, Principal to Director, 08/10/75, Christchurch Boys' Home Staffing 31437.

<sup>1367</sup> Handwritten note by RJ Wilson, Assistant Director (Social Work), 3/11/75 on Memo, M Lyons, Director (Christchurch) to Director-General, 21/10/75, Christchurch Boys' Home Staffing 31437.

The increase in residents, especially the older age group, in 1976 was attributed to the instructions from Head Office not to resist receiving boys of an older age group to the Home.<sup>1368</sup> It was also noted by the Assistant Director that there was an increased usage of the Institution as a whole and it had consistently been running at or over maximum capacity.<sup>1369</sup>

The number of admissions to the Home from 1978 to 1981 increased from 175 to 241 admissions.<sup>1370</sup> Admission numbers dropped to 188 in both 1982 and 1983,<sup>1371</sup> but increased again and admissions were at their highest in 1985 with 273 boys admitted to the Home.<sup>1372</sup>

In 1978 sixty-one percent of admissions to the Home were on remand, 6% on warrant, 18% were State Wards and 15% were temporary admissions.<sup>1373</sup> From 1979 to 1982 the number of residents admitted on remand increased from 31 to 37%,<sup>1374</sup> but decreased over the next two years to a low of 19% in 1984.<sup>1375</sup> There was a steady decrease in the number of residents admitted on warrant with 32% of admissions admitted on warrant in 1979 compared with 19% in 1984.<sup>1376</sup> This decreasing trend was also evident with temporary admission dropping from 14% in 1979 to 2% in 1984.<sup>1377</sup> The number of State Wards admitted each year fluctuated with no trend evident. From 1979 to 1984 the percentage ranged from 20% to 38%.<sup>1378</sup> The number of residents admitted through arrest was about 3% from 1979 to 1982,<sup>1379</sup> but increased to 13% in 1983 and to 28% in 1984.<sup>1380</sup> Section 11 agreements accounted for the smallest proportion of residents admitted to the Home, but an increasing trend was evident with 0.5% (1 resident) being admitted in 1979 compared with 5% (13 residents) in 1984.<sup>1381</sup>

The age range of residents admitted to the Home was from ten years old (possibly below this on occasions, as some Annual Reports stated ten or below,) to 17 years of age.<sup>1382</sup> Over half of the residents between 1981 and 1983 were aged 14 to 15 years old with a slight decrease in 1984. In 1981 and 1982, one quarter of residents were aged between 12 and 13 years, but this dropped in 1983 and again in 1984 to

<sup>1368</sup> Memo, RJ Wilson, Assistant Director to Director, 08/10/76, Christchurch Boys Home Secure 31437.

<sup>1369</sup> Memo, RJ Wilson, Assistant Director to Director, 08/10/76, Christchurch Boys Home Secure 31437.

<sup>1370</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437; Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1371</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259; Annual Report 1983, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1372</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1373</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1374</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437; Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1375</sup> Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1376</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437; Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1377</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437; Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1378</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437; Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1379</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437; Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1380</sup> Annual Report 1983, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259; Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1381</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437; Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1382</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437; Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

16%. Admissions of 16 to 17 year olds increased from 6% in 1982 to 22% in 1983 and again to 38% in 1984.<sup>1383</sup>

The number of European residents in the Home ranged from 65% to 70% throughout 1980 to 1984 with Polynesian residents accounting for the remainder of the admissions.<sup>1384</sup>

The number of readmissions to the home increased from 45% to 57% during 1981 and 1984.<sup>1385</sup>

The average number of residents in the Home decreased from 28 in 1979 to 19 in 1984.<sup>1386</sup> In 1979, the average number of residents was over 25 for eight months of the year.<sup>1387</sup> The number of days over the official maximum capacity of 24 varied greatly during 1980 to 1984. In 1980 the Home exceeded the maximum capacity for 48 days. This increased to 91 in 1981, was 82 days in 1982 and 58 days in 1984. The Home was never over the maximum capacity in 1983.<sup>1388</sup>

Admissions to the home in 1978 consisted predominately of boys who were placed in social welfare custody on remand from the Court.<sup>1389</sup> The Acting Principal felt that this was, "... in accordance with recent trends in the short term function for institutions where the majority of young people entering these institutions do so on warrant, arrest or remand."<sup>1390</sup>

In 1982 the Principal felt that effective social work was limited because, "Without an admission and discharge date determined the turnover of residents is always unpredictable, the group is of a mixed status and there is no admission criteria of the type of problems the staff are best equipped to help."<sup>1391</sup>

Increasing numbers of disturbed non-offending boys were being admitted to the Home in 1982 and it was felt the specialist assessment and specific social work skills were critical if the Home was to be seen as a short-term "treatment" centre.<sup>1392</sup>

The Principal remarked that there was "tremendous admissions pressure" in 1984 and that the staff had to work with some very difficult cases.<sup>1393</sup>

The introduction of the Criminal Justice Act 1985 allowed for an older age group (16 to 19 year olds) to be admitted to the Home. This created difficulties for staff, "... in managing, supervision and maintaining a relaxed and congenial environment."<sup>1394</sup>

In 1985 the Head Teacher said, when commenting on the lower school numbers, that the total number of boys accepted to the institution was, "kept at a lesser number due to low staff moral in the Residential Institution."<sup>1395</sup>

<sup>1383</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259; Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1384</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259; Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1385</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259; Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1386</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437; Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1387</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1388</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259; Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1389</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1390</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1391</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1392</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1393</sup> Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1394</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

## Length of stay

There is no information on length of stay prior to 1980.

The length of stay at Christchurch Boys' Home varied each year from 1980 to 1984 with no pattern emerging. The average length of stay was at its highest in 1982 and 1983 when it was 6.3 weeks. The lowest average length of stay was 4.2 weeks in 1984.<sup>1396</sup>

During 1979 to 1983 approximately three-quarters of residents from the Institution were discharged to a community placement including home or a foster/family home placement. This decreased in 1984 to just over 50%. During the period from 1979 to 1983, 10 to 14% of discharge placements were to a Social Welfare institution. This also decreased in 1984 to 8%. Other placements made were to Special Schools, private institutions, mental hospitals, the Justice Department or other (not defined). These remained consistent over the 1979 to 1984 period except for the area classified as other which increased to 36% of discharges in 1984.<sup>1397</sup>

Placement decisions for residents were based on the, "... consensus opinion of the staff of the Boys' Home and the School, the Specialist and the Social Worker," with the desirable placement being a return to their home district.<sup>1398</sup> It was recognised that some residents needed a longer term of training than that offered by Christchurch Boys' Home and when this was necessary, submissions were made via Head Office for a transfer to one of the four long-term institutions (Beck House, Holdsworth, Hokio and Kohitere).<sup>1399</sup>

The Principal commented that one of the main concerns of 1981 was the increasing length of stay of some of the residents – so much so that it was considered to be, "... almost becoming a long term institution."<sup>1400</sup> One boy had been in the institution for over nine months.<sup>1401</sup>

## Programmes and care

There is no information held on the Christchurch Boys' Home files in relation to programmes and care pre 1978, although the 1958 Field Officers Manual notes at J.80 the general approach to work with children in Boys and Girls Homes.

The Boys' Home School initiated many programmes in the Home, details of which can be found under the School Programmes section of this profile.

In 1978 the programmes for the residents at Christchurch Boys' Home were redesigned to include the Half Way and Top Groups Idea (groups not defined in

<sup>1395</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1396</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259; Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1397</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437; Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1398</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1399</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1400</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1401</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

records).<sup>1402</sup> Unsupervised outings and activities were organised and sporting activities increased with the assistance of sporting personalities.<sup>1403</sup> "A weekly team leader from each caseload completes a work sheet each day for the Boys in his team."<sup>1404</sup>

As part of the schooling programme in 1978 each resident had an individual programme organised which included academic work and other skills including leather work, handcrafts and painting were included in the programme.<sup>1405</sup>

In 1978 the Acting Principal felt that the boys' self image improved with new clothes and a hairdresser had to be organised to cut and style the boys' hair.<sup>1406</sup>

In 1979 the atmosphere of the Home was described as "relaxed and happy and very much conducive to boys happiness and good assessment situations."<sup>1407</sup>

The appointment of the Principal, Mr Zygadlo in 1979 saw changes to the programme. An important part of this programme was to actively engage the residents in activity groups to occupy their available time, although the residents were allowed to spend their leisure time as they wished.<sup>1408</sup> These activities included sports, swimming, skateboarding, going to the beach and barbecues in the summer and (weather permitting) in the winter. The staff became totally involved in the activities.<sup>1409</sup> Recreation and leisure activities continued and in 1980 the Principal commented that they occurred far more regularly than was anticipated. He felt this was due to "more communication with the local authorities which naturally led to invitations to us and vice versa."<sup>1410</sup>

Hobbies and interest groups were added to the programme in 1979, including cooking, pottery and woodwork.<sup>1411</sup> Residents who were interested were able to learn Maori from one of the house staff.<sup>1412</sup> Other areas such as leatherwork and macramé enabled boys to develop skills as well as interests.<sup>1413</sup>

The staff and resident relations were considered by the Principal to be very good in 1979 and there were several Sunday afternoons of staff versus resident contests including rugby, soccer and treasure hunts.<sup>1414</sup> "It was from these encounters that I feel most value of the entire year was gained."<sup>1415</sup>

There were eight camps and some day outings taken in 1980 and these continued in the ensuing years.<sup>1416</sup>

The emphasis of the programme at the Home was on providing residents with a, "... safe, structured environment with clear behavioural limits and expectations."<sup>1417</sup> However this was considered to be only situational and it was felt that if this teaching

<sup>1402</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1403</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1404</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1405</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1406</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1407</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1408</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1409</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1410</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1411</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1412</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1413</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1414</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1415</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437; Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1416</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1417</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

and support was offered in the family environment, "... much of what is achieved with individuals at the Boys' Home would remain intact on discharge."<sup>1418</sup>

In 1982 the Principal felt that confusion existed as to the role of the staff in the Home and whether they were just to focus on behaviour management or whether they were to treat the behaviour as indicative of a more complex problem. It was felt that behavioural control was the predominant focus because staff-to-resident ratios and training input were such that, "alternatives to that former view are limited."<sup>1419</sup>

Movies were screened weekly in 1982<sup>1420</sup> and during winter in 1982, two outside rugby clubs had several residents participate in their weekly games on a regular basis.<sup>1421</sup> This continued into 1984 but also included local soccer clubs.<sup>1422</sup>

Residents who had reached a good behaviour status at the Home were able to go to outside activities such as the movies or local swimming pool, often depending on the residents' own budget skills.<sup>1423</sup>

The privileges system was re-developed in 1983 in line with the Residential Code of Practice because staff found that the previous system lacked flexibility of rewards.<sup>1424</sup> The results of this change were the overcoming of defects in the original system and the change in staff expectations of residents which, "... raised the overall consciousness of Staff members and ... improved professional standards."<sup>1425</sup>

The New Brighton and Bishopdale community groups would regularly come to the Home and involve a few boys in their programmes.<sup>1426</sup>

## Work and training

There was no information available about work and training in the years preceding 1980.

In 1980 the Head teacher stated vocations were discussed with boys on an informal basis and those who were uncertain of their future plans were given the "Looking Ahead" booklet published by the Department of Labour to read. Those who had more definite ideas about a vocation were given more extensive information from the Vocational Guidance Section of the Department of Labour.<sup>1427</sup> Apart from job skills and interview techniques and a few other areas that were taught at the school, vocation training was mainly informal.<sup>1428</sup> Vocational tests were purchased in 1982 to use with the more sophisticated pupils.<sup>1429</sup>

<sup>1418</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1419</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1420</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1421</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1422</sup> Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1423</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1424</sup> Annual Report 1983, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1425</sup> Annual Report 1983, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1426</sup> Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1427</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

<sup>1428</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1429</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.



There were two work experience places in the community in 1980 at a garage and an auto-electrician.<sup>1430</sup>

As part of the pre-discharge programme residents (mainly non-school) assisted in activities such as assisting in the garden and kitchen, doing minor repairs around the Home, as well as repairing and ironing clothing.<sup>1431</sup>

## Resident-to-resident issues

There is no information held on the Christchurch Boys' Home files about resident to resident issues.

## Health and medication

There is no information on file preceding 1979 apart from the limited information available from 1966.

In 1966 Mr Lyons (designation unknown) arranged for a Medical Officer to visit the Home once a week to carry out routine examinations of the residents rather than the practice of a housemaster taking residents to an outside doctor.<sup>1432</sup>

In 1966 an Assistant Psychologist spent regular time at the Home each week getting to know the residents and testing them when considered necessary.<sup>1433</sup>

The psychologist visited the classroom frequently in 1979 in order to gain a more comprehensive view of the residents,<sup>1434</sup> but due to work pressures, the teachers took more of this responsibility for assessment so that the psychologist could be more effective.<sup>1435</sup> In 1980 the psychologist visited the Home once a week for approximately five hours. The Principal felt that this needed to be increased because there was often a long wait time of up to five weeks for a boy to be seen.<sup>1436</sup>

In 1980 it was noted that there were two visiting psychiatrists available to assess residents whenever they were needed.<sup>1437</sup> This had reduced to one in 1981.<sup>1438</sup>

The Principal considered that the, "... Medical scene for 1980 was a very full and rewarding one for both staff and boys."<sup>1439</sup> All residents were given a full medical examination when admitted to the Home and any defects were investigated and followed up if necessary with specialist appointments.<sup>1440</sup> All boys who attended

<sup>1430</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

<sup>1431</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1432</sup> Extract from Report by Mr Manchester, 25-29/07/66. Christchurch Boys Home Profile 31437.

<sup>1433</sup> Extract from Report by Mr Manchester, 25-29/07/66. Christchurch Boys Home Profile 31437.

<sup>1434</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1435</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1436</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1437</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1438</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1439</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1440</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

camps had to be given clearance by the doctor.<sup>1441</sup> Residents who had absconded or who were being discharged to a national institution also had to have a thorough medical check.<sup>1442</sup>

The Principal also commented in 1980 that "boys will be boys," and a number of hours were spent at the outpatients clinic for suspected fractures.<sup>1443</sup>

In 1981 the educational psychologist was, "... drawn from whatever school (sic) the resident was previously attending prior to admission. It is felt that the service is good, but delays do occur where a resident may have to wait some time."<sup>1444</sup>

A psychotherapist was available to the Home who offered group therapy sessions as well as individual counselling.<sup>1445</sup>

The Principal remarked in 1982 that specialist consultations were becoming a more essential part of the intervention at the Home but that it was, "... unfortunate that specialist skills are not extended into intensive therapeutic intervention for individuals for without it many boys continue to return for several admissions."<sup>1446</sup>

In 1982 a Clinical Psychologist visited the Home to see the residents and also came once a week as part of a training programme for staff. The Principal hoped that this would be developed further over the next few years.<sup>1447</sup>

In 1983 the Principal remarked that consultation with the District Health Nurse was rewarding and she also recommended certain agencies to help implement a Health Education programme.<sup>1448</sup>

In 1983 the Principal encountered problems with the doctor's willingness to, "... either follow medical treatment prescribed by the visiting Psychiatrist or to issue certificates when a boy needs to be in Sunnyside for observation or when the Boys' Home has no facility, man power and expertise to deal with very emotionally disturbed boys."<sup>1449</sup>

There was a change in the Boys' Home Medical Officer in 1984 and the much younger doctor was considered to be, "... more open to suggestions and perhaps more thorough with our boys' examinations."<sup>1450</sup>

In 1984 the Principal had a meeting with the Departmental District Psychologist and the Psychological Services Division to establish a better system of servicing the needs of the Home. The psychologist came to the Boys' Home once a week and also participated with other specialists in training secure staff. The Principal considered this to be, "excellent and very few delays are experienced."<sup>1451</sup>

A nurse was employed at the Home for ten hours a week in 1985 and the District Health Nurse visited the Home monthly to check the hearing and vision of the residents.<sup>1452</sup>

<sup>1441</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1442</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1443</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1444</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1445</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1446</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1447</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1448</sup> Annual Report 1983, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1449</sup> Annual Report 1983, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1450</sup> Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1451</sup> Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1452</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

## Psychiatric hospital placement

There is no information held on file in relation to psychiatric hospital placement.

Problems were experienced by the Principal in 1983 in regard to the doctor's willingness to carry out the medical treatment prescribed by the visiting psychiatrist, to issue certificates when a resident needed to be in Sunnyside for observation or when the Home lacked the facilities, man power and expertise to deal with very emotionally disturbed boys.<sup>1453</sup>

## Staffing

### Staffing Organisation

An undated document, but circa 1985 notes that the staffing function at Christchurch Boys' Home was separated into three categories: Operations, Supervision and Management.<sup>1454</sup> The operations staff were those involved in the day-to-day contact with the residents. The shift leaders were residential social workers or experienced assistant residential social workers and they were, "... responsible for the organisation and programming of their shift and for the direct supervision of their co-worker(s) on the shift."<sup>1455</sup> The supervisors, usually senior residential social workers, were in charge of direct oversight and control of the operations and staff involved. They were responsible for, "... ensuring the effective functioning of the whole Institution during their shift."<sup>1456</sup> The Managers were responsible for planning and oversight of programmes and organising staff.<sup>1457</sup>

The Principal, ER Smith, made a request to the Director (Christchurch) for double night cover in 1975 due to the increasing number of boys in the Home as well as their age, size and drug involvement. It was felt they were a threat to staff who were working alone.<sup>1458</sup> The Director (Christchurch) commented on this request for double night cover and stated that there were times when the institution was over-staffed and that the numbers of residents was not large and due to this and the tone of the Institution, he felt that it was not, "... ready for double night cover for secure room supervision."<sup>1459</sup>

<sup>1453</sup> Annual Report 1983, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1454</sup> Extract, Christchurch Boys' Home (undated, source unknown), Christchurch Boys' Home Profile F5000000902913.

<sup>1455</sup> Extract, Christchurch Boys' Home (undated, source unknown), Christchurch Boys' Home Profile F5000000902913.

<sup>1456</sup> Extract, Christchurch Boys' Home (undated, source unknown), Christchurch Boys' Home Profile F5000000902913.

<sup>1457</sup> Extract on Christchurch Boys' Home (undated, source unknown), Christchurch Boys' Home Profile F5000000902913.

<sup>1458</sup> Memo, ER Smith, Principal to Director, 08/10/75, Christchurch Boys' Home Staffing 31437.

<sup>1459</sup> Memo, M Lyons, Director (Christchurch) to Director-General, 21/10/75, Christchurch Boys' Home Staffing 31437.

A third staff member was employed for the night shift in 1978 because of the high number of residents and the pressures on these staff.<sup>1460</sup> This meant that there were two night staff on duty every night.<sup>1461</sup>

A new gardener was appointed to the Boys' Home in 1978.<sup>1462</sup>

Both the Principal and Assistant Principal acquired positions outside of the Boys' home at the end of 1978,<sup>1463</sup> and a new Principal, B Zygadlo, was appointed at the beginning of 1979.<sup>1464</sup>

At the beginning of 1979 the permanent staffing ceiling was 19, eight of whom were in acting positions due to vacancies created by staff movements the previous year.<sup>1465</sup> By the end of 1979, all but one of these positions was filled by permanent staff.<sup>1466</sup>

There were 17 permanent staff at the beginning of 1980 and one wage worker in an acting capacity. There were also six staff who were employed in a holiday or relieving capacity.<sup>1467</sup> By the end of 1980 there were a total of 19 permanent staff, one supernumerary staff and a social work student on placement for three months.<sup>1468</sup>

In 1980 it was noted that a lot of the administrative work was completed by the Principal with some completed by the Assistant Principal.<sup>1469</sup> Clerical services were provided by the Administration section of the District Office and while there were limitations to this remote service, they were considered to provide good service.<sup>1470</sup> In 1981 the clerical services were still performed mainly by the Principal and he felt that it was time to look at introducing a clerical assistant to the Home.<sup>1471</sup> The Director stated that some part time assistance would be considered when staffing would allow it.<sup>1472</sup> A full time clerical staff member was appointed in 1983 which meant that the Principal and Assistant Principal had more time to spend with other staff and the residents.<sup>1473</sup>

Three C.A.A staff were employed to run an art class, a cottage industry and a pottery class in 1980.<sup>1474</sup> The fee for service instructors in 1981 included carpentry/woodcraft, pottery, art, gymnastics and physical health building, guitar and music lessons and cooking.<sup>1475</sup> Added to this in 1982 was a Christian learning instructor.<sup>1476</sup>

<sup>1460</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1461</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1462</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1463</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1464</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1465</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1466</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1467</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1468</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1469</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1470</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1471</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1472</sup> Handwritten memo on Annual Report 1981, from T Comer Director to Director-General, 29/04/82, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1473</sup> Annual Report 1983, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259; Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1474</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1475</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1476</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

There were 19 permanent staff, ten relief staff, four supernumerary positions and a social work student on a three month placement at the Home in 1982.<sup>1477</sup>

Throughout 1982, six people were employed by the Department of Labour for varying time period for the Work Skills Development programme.<sup>1478</sup>

Residential staff began to do some of the work previously performed by field social workers in 1982 including, taking boys to shops and making arrangements for home leave.<sup>1479</sup>

Three new residential social worker positions were created and two appointments to these positions made in 1984 and two staff were appointed to the newly created senior positions.<sup>1480</sup>

In the latter part of 1984 almost one third of staff were relievers due to internal and external promotions.<sup>1481</sup>

There was a continuing staff shortage in 1985, and at one stage there were approximately eight relievers who had never had any institutional experience.<sup>1482</sup> The Principal stated that this and the high staff turnover put an, "... enormous pressure on the permanent staff and created a number of problems for the management," but that the Home operated well due to the dedication of all the staff.<sup>1483</sup> By the end of 1985 nearly half the staff were new to their appointments, but they were from a younger age group and were better qualified and possessed social skills in other areas such as Psychiatric Care.<sup>1484</sup>

An improved casework system was designed in 1985 to ensure that each team had an equal share of work.<sup>1485</sup>

In 1986 a new management team was created in the Home headed by the new Principal, Mr D Hutchinson.<sup>1486</sup>

## Training and Supervision

The Principal of the Home was responsible to the Director, Christchurch, through the Assistant Director, Social Work. All staff were employed by the Department of Social Welfare except for the school teachers who were employed by the education Department.<sup>1487</sup>

Case discussions were held in 1966 and the substance of the discussions was recorded and sent to the Home and placed on the resident's personal file. The records were not sent to contributing districts but Mr Manchester (designation unknown) commented that regular comment of this kind would be desirable.<sup>1488</sup> Comprehensive progress reports were not often completed due to lack of time and

<sup>1477</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1478</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1479</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1480</sup> Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1481</sup> Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1482</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1483</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1484</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1485</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1486</sup> Audit Report: MP Doolan, Director Residential Services and M Honeyman, Internal Auditor 06/08/87, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000002572661.

<sup>1487</sup> Extract, Christchurch Boys' Home (undated, source unknown), Christchurch Boys' Home Profile F5000000902913.

<sup>1488</sup> Extract from Report by Mr Manchester, 25-29/07/66. Christchurch Boys Home Profile 31437.

Mr Manchester asked, "... if more brief, but more regular, reports could be prepared along the lines adopted in some other Boys' Homes."<sup>1489</sup>

In 1978 residential social workers were given caseloads and written reports were due on a monthly basis. The assistant residential social workers were also asked to complete monthly reports.<sup>1490</sup>

Internal staff training was held on a Thursday afternoon and was directed by the staff members to facilitate their needs.<sup>1491</sup> Staff from the District Office as well as various other guest speakers provided information for these meetings.<sup>1492</sup> "The use of the Regional Staff Training officer and the Counsellor at the District Office to take our Residential Social Workers and their Assistants in casework and counselling studies was discussed for 1979."<sup>1493</sup> In 1982 the Clinical Psychologist ran the staff training sessions at the Home each week.<sup>1494</sup>

Several staff completed the Residential Care Association first year course in 1978 and it was hoped they would take the advanced course in 1979. Two staff were accepted for the Certificate in Social Work Course for 1979.<sup>1495</sup> This external staff training continued in the ensuing years of the Home except in 1984 when some of the staff external training courses were not completed due to the "volatile and very unsettled" mood of the Home.<sup>1496</sup>

The staff at the institution were divided into two groups for supervision. The first group consisted of the night supervisors, assistant residential social workers and kitchen staff and supervision sessions were held weekly with the Assistant Principal. The supervision of the second group, which consisted of residential social workers, supervisors and assistant supervisors, was irregular but they had at least one hour of supervision with the Principal every three weeks.<sup>1497</sup>

Eleven staff attended external training courses during 1980.<sup>1498</sup>

Management were said to regularly visit all areas of the Institution in 1985 to monitor the programmes and progress of staff and boys.<sup>1499</sup>

The Audit Report of 1986 certified that the Boys' Home was complying with the Children and Young Persons (Residential Care) Regulations of 1986, but also identified the need to give some attention to the planned induction of new staff to the Institution.<sup>1500</sup>

### Specific Concerns

A Child Welfare Officer was concerned about the staffing of the Home in 1940. When the Home was visited, both dormitories were considered to be extremely dirty

<sup>1489</sup> Extract from Report by Mr Manchester, 25-29/07/66. Christchurch Boys Home Profile 31437.

<sup>1490</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1491</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1492</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1493</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1494</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1495</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1496</sup> Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1497</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1498</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1499</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1500</sup> Audit Report: MP Doolan, Director Residential Services and M Honeyman, Internal Auditor 06/08/87, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000002572661.

and the beds were out of line.<sup>1501</sup> The residents had also woken up earlier than any staff member and had lit a fire in the dining-room without any of the staff being aware.<sup>1502</sup> There was also concern about the [REDACTED] who had "no real grip" on the residents and had to be spoken to about punctuality and disregarding instructions. He had allowed residents to visit relatives without consulting a child welfare officer, and continued to do so even when told not to.<sup>1503</sup> There was considered to be a lack of harmony between staff members in 1940 and that the residents, "... sensed this with unfortunate disciplinary results."<sup>1504</sup>

A visit was made to the Home as a result of these concerns expressed by a child welfare officer and it was found that the main fault was with the staff. "Co-operation is non-existent, brought about by incompetency (sic), the lack of ability to organise or to adapt themselves to the work ... thus losing any chance of securing the confidence of those they are intended to control."<sup>1505</sup> The institution was found to be dirty with no system to keep the place in order. The residents were considered to be, "... thoroughly out of control, insolent, disobedient, defiant and destructive."<sup>1506</sup> There were many other issues in relation to shortage of clothing, use of resources, residents and staff.<sup>1507</sup>

In [REDACTED] there was an investigation into allegations of assault made by a resident of the Home against [REDACTED]. The allegations were that [REDACTED] made the resident do 30 minutes of punishment exercises and when he got tired and refused to do them, he was taken to the Acting Principal who told him off and sent him back to the gymnasium. The resident was "bopped" on the top of his head by [REDACTED] and slapped across the face with the back of his hand after making a remark to [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] also attempted to punch him in the stomach because he had stopped. The resident said that none of the blows were hard or hurt, but he told his parents about it as they asked what happened to him for running away.<sup>1508</sup> Investigation into the incident found that [REDACTED] felt there was no harm in pushing boys to the limits and as he does push ups with his knuckles on the floor he considered it fine to ask the boys to do the same.<sup>1509</sup> The slapping of the face was found not to have happened and the punch to the stomach was considered to be a possible feint.<sup>1510</sup> There was no evidence that [REDACTED] was excessive with his physical contact with any of the residents. It

<sup>1501</sup> Memo, TMR Jones, Child Welfare Officer to Superintendent [REDACTED], Christchurch Boys' Home Staffing 31437.

<sup>1502</sup> Memo, TMR Jones, Child Welfare Officer to Superintendent [REDACTED], Christchurch Boys' Home Staffing 31437.

<sup>1503</sup> Memo, TMR Jones, Child Welfare Officer to Superintendent [REDACTED], Christchurch Boys' Home Staffing 31437.

<sup>1504</sup> Memo, TMR Jones, Child Welfare Officer to Superintendent [REDACTED], Christchurch Boys' Home Staffing 31437.

<sup>1505</sup> Memo, HG Giles, Boys' Welfare Officer to Superintendent, [REDACTED], Christchurch Boys' Home Staffing 31437.

<sup>1506</sup> Memo, HG Giles, Boys' Welfare Officer to Superintendent, [REDACTED], Christchurch Boys' Home Staffing 31437.

<sup>1507</sup> Memo, HG Giles, Boys' Welfare Officer to Superintendent, [REDACTED], Christchurch Boys' Home Staffing 31437. For more information about this and the individual staff at the time, please see this memo.

was found that [REDACTED] erred through misdirection and it was unjust to have his record marked with a reprimand.<sup>1511</sup>

In 1979 the Principal was concerned at the number of after hour Duty Social Work calls that were being received by the Boys' Home and by the Principal.<sup>1512</sup> The Principal considered that these calls were encroaching on staff time with the residents.<sup>1513</sup>

A report by a student teacher who had been on placement at the Boys' Home School in 1979 stated that he felt there was too much emphasis on confrontation from some people, "... in the sense of you have got to squash them and show them who is boss."<sup>1514</sup> He felt that it was apparent that the resident's used the school as a "haven or refuge" and that they had little respect for certain staff.<sup>1515</sup>

In [REDACTED] there were incidents involving two staff, [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]. The files mention that these affected absconding levels, the relationship between the school and the Home and the relations between staff in the Home.<sup>1516</sup> There is no reference on the files as to what the incidents involved, but there was a State Services Commission hearing for both staff members. [REDACTED] was suspended and then reinstated to the status quo where the Principal said he did his best to fit in at the Institution and have a good relationship with most staff. [REDACTED] was dismissed and then returned as a residential social worker. This increased tension, suspicion and gossip in the Home and there were "anti-feelings of attitudes to personnel who gave evidence against him ... [as well as] Persistent under-currents of suspicion..."<sup>1517</sup>

The Principal commented that the episode with [REDACTED] was still with the institution, with the two people involved not speaking to each other – but that otherwise it was largely forgotten.<sup>1518</sup>

In 1986 the Visiting Committee raised the concern of staff turnover and the time taken to make appointments of staff. Staff morale was also said to be suffering due to the lack of open communication and accord between certain staff members.<sup>1519</sup>

An Audit Report in [REDACTED] stated that Christchurch Boys' Home had previously presented the Department of Social Welfare with many difficulties. "A longish period of indifferent management, longstanding divisions and tensions in the staff group, some child management practices which seemed impervious to departmental intervention, and a history of difficulty in attracting or retaining competent and qualified staff."<sup>1520</sup> To combat these problems, a new management team, headed by the new Principal, [REDACTED], was appointed to, "... build a new senior

<sup>1512</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1513</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1514</sup> Report, Bruce Walker, Student Teacher to B Zygadlo, Principal, 18/07/79, Christchurch Boys' Home Profile 31437.

<sup>1515</sup> Report, Bruce Walker, Student Teacher to B Zygadlo, Principal, 18/07/79, Christchurch Boys' Home Profile 31437.

<sup>1516</sup> Annual Report [REDACTED] Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1517</sup> Annual Report [REDACTED] Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1518</sup> Annual Report [REDACTED] Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1519</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report 1986, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000006661405.



team ... to rebuild the basic grade team and to reshape the residential programme to reflect modern realities and understandings."<sup>1521</sup>

## Schooling

### School Structure

Many difficulties became apparent in 1979. These included the shortage of room for 15 boys and two teachers because of the size of the one classroom, the difference in style of the teachers (including standards of discipline and general approach to the boys), and the shortage of equipment and storage space.<sup>1522</sup>

A three bay classroom and a bay for a resource room were under construction in 1979 to combat the shortage of room and storage space.<sup>1523</sup> The purpose of the resource room was to build up resources to enable the school to deal with any need the boys had.<sup>1524</sup> It was recognised by the Principal that this would take some time, "... because at the beginning of the year, our resources were practically nil."<sup>1525</sup> Throughout 1980 the school resources were built up in all subject areas.<sup>1526</sup>

The second classroom and resource room were completed at the start of 1980.<sup>1527</sup> A proposal was made in 1980 for a multi-purpose room to be added to the school in order to have an extra room for things like the options programme and to create a library as the Head Teacher had allocated a considerable amount for the purchase of hard cover books.<sup>1528</sup>

A multi-purpose room was approved for the School in 1981 by the Education Department and was hoped to be completed early 1982.<sup>1529</sup> This was not completed by the end of 1982 and the Head Teacher had no written confirmation that it would be constructed in the near future.<sup>1530</sup> He found this frustrating as the library could not be developed and there was no storage space available or an area for residents to work in isolation.<sup>1531</sup>

There were three classrooms in the school in 1984.<sup>1532</sup>

The multi-purpose room was completed in November 1983 and full use of it was made in 1984.<sup>1533</sup>

<sup>1522</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1523</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1524</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1525</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1526</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

<sup>1527</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

<sup>1528</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

<sup>1529</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1530</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1531</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1532</sup> Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1533</sup> Annual Report 1983, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259; Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

Equipment continued to be purchased for the school in 1983 and it was hoped to gain a computer system for the school.<sup>1534</sup>

The school was to close at the end of 1987 and from the beginning of the third term of that year, boys were gradually moved to Kingslea while those attending outside schools continued to do so.<sup>1535</sup>

### School Staff

The school at Christchurch Boys' Home was administered by the Boys' Home Principal but staffed by the Department of Education with the senior teacher responsible to the Inspector of Special Education.<sup>1536</sup>

In 1977 the Assistant Director received copies of correspondence from the Head Teacher to the District Senior Inspector of Schools requesting a second teacher at the school. This was considered urgent and the District Senior Inspector authorised an immediate increase in the teaching establishment.<sup>1537</sup>

1978 began with two teachers and a part time remedial reading teacher as the "present teacher" was overseas at the beginning of that year.<sup>1538</sup>

The schooling situation in 1979 consisted of a two teacher unit which catered for 16 to 20 boys with class sizes not usually exceeding 9 boys.<sup>1539</sup>

There was a major disagreement between the two teachers at the beginning of the second term in 1979. The head teacher's position was disestablished, so he was moved to a smaller room in the institution to allow the difficulties between the teachers to be eased.<sup>1540</sup>

A student teacher also came to the school in the second and third term and a close relationship developed with the Teachers College overcoming the school's previous poor reputation.<sup>1541</sup>

The school had 15 teacher aide hours allocated which allowed the teacher to be free to work more effectively with his pupils.<sup>1542</sup>

A student teacher on placement at the Boys' Home School in 1979 felt that the resident's used the school as a "haven".<sup>1543</sup>

In 1980 the staff in the school consisted of the Head Teacher, a basic scale teacher, two teacher aides and a clerical assistant.<sup>1544</sup>

A part time woodwork teacher was added to the school programme in 1981,<sup>1545</sup> and the clerical assistant's duties were taken up by one of the teacher's aides.<sup>1546</sup>

<sup>1534</sup> Annual Report 1983, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1535</sup> Minutes of Combined Meeting, Kingslea School and Christchurch Boys' Home School Management Committees, 13/08/87, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000006028216.

<sup>1536</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1537</sup> Memo, RJ Wilson, Assistant Director (Social Work) to Director-General, 15/12/77, Christchurch Boys' Home Education 31437.

<sup>1538</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1539</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1540</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1541</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1542</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1543</sup> Report, Bruce Walker, Student Teacher to B Zygadlo, Principal, 18/07/79, Christchurch Boys' Home Profile 31437. For more information about these concerns see Staffing Concern.

<sup>1544</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

Meetings were held each term with the Advisory Committee who the Head Teacher considered to be "extremely supportive".<sup>1547</sup> The Head Teacher believed that it was due to this Committee that the issue of the extra classroom was concluded.<sup>1548</sup>

In 1984 the basic grade teacher, who had been at the school for over five years, gained employment elsewhere.<sup>1549</sup>

In 1984 the school staff consisted of the Head Teacher, the Assistant Teacher, two relievers, a woodwork instructor, a pottery instructor and three ancillary assistants.<sup>1550</sup>

In 1985 a Special Need Unit Ancillary Assistant was employed as part of the school and implemented a work programme in the secure unit.

## Student Profile

The age range of residents admitted to the school was from 10 years to 16 years of age. This remained reasonably constant over the period 1979 to 1985.<sup>1551</sup>

The number of residents who attended the Boys' Home School in 1979 and 1980 was in the mid 80's. This increased to approximately 100 in 1981 and 1982 and decreased to 66 in 1983. It increased slightly in 1984 to 75 admissions, but dropped again in 1985 to 62 admission.<sup>1552</sup> There was a lower number of admissions to the Institution in 1985 and an increase in the number of residents aged between 16 to 19 years.<sup>1553</sup>

There was no reason why a resident should not continue at his community school upon entering the Boys' Home and contact with the previous school was expected.<sup>1554</sup> A number of residents attended schools outside the Home in 1978, with the number reaching 11 at one stage.<sup>1555</sup>

Those residents 15 years or older who chose to attend school or whose casework goals included schooling were able to enrol at the Boys' Home School.<sup>1556</sup> However, the Head Teacher felt that peer pressure discouraged some of the older boys from attending school and that there was, "... some status attached to be a work boy as opposed to being a school boy."<sup>1557</sup>

---

<sup>1545</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1546</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1547</sup> Annual Report 1983, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1548</sup> Annual Report 1983, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1549</sup> Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1550</sup> Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1551</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437; Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1552</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437; Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1553</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1554</sup> Christchurch Boys' Home Scheme, GH Daniel, Head Teacher, undated, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004606308.

<sup>1555</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1556</sup> Christchurch Boys' Home Scheme, GH Daniel, Head Teacher, undated, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004606308.

<sup>1557</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

When discharge placement of a resident was known, the school programmes were to be designed to prepare the student for that placement.<sup>1558</sup> Any relevant reports or records were to be forwarded to the future school when appropriate.<sup>1559</sup>

In 1979 the Principal commented on the calibre of the boys who attended the school saying, "... 90% ... will be retarded in reading skills between 3 – 4 years, they are the under achievers in normal schools, the probable drop outs from school, and usually totally devoid of any worthwhile motivation towards school work."<sup>1560</sup>

The Head Teacher remarked that 1984 was a difficult year due to the, "... changing nature of ... clients."<sup>1561</sup>

In 1985 the school uniform for the residents changed from a full school uniform to mufti clothing from the waist down.<sup>1562</sup>

There was a change in policy in 1985 which allowed State Wards to be admitted to the Christchurch Boys' Home School on an exceptional basis.<sup>1563</sup>

The Head Teacher commented that the residents in 1985, "... appeared to be more unstable, aggressive, and anti-authority which meant more individual attention was necessary."<sup>1564</sup>

### Admission/Assessment

Due to the lack of formal assessments, changes to the assessment of students were made in 1979 in order to give the teacher and the pupil a clearer idea about the resident's strengths and weaknesses.<sup>1565</sup> These assessments consisted of three stages, the first being an initial verbal report given to the residential social worker usually in the boy's first week to ascertain how he was settling into the school. The next stage consisted of written progress reports gained by using assessment surveys and observations. The third stage were placement reports to accompany the residential social workers report to the Court and included information on attendance, class level, general assessment, academic level, interests and recommendations.<sup>1566</sup>

That same year, the "haphazard" approach of admissions to the school was replaced with discussions taking place in the week before the resident was admitted. This allowed for a programme to be arranged for the boy as soon as he started school.<sup>1567</sup>

The 1980 audit report noted that on entry to the Boys' Home School, each boy was subjected to a survey to ascertain his academic ability as well as more specialised testing such as the Otis I.Q. test.<sup>1568</sup> These tests were done in order to create

<sup>1558</sup> Christchurch Boys' Home Scheme, GH Daniel, Head Teacher, undated, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004606308.

<sup>1559</sup> Christchurch Boys' Home Scheme, GH Daniel, Head Teacher, undated, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004606308.

<sup>1560</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1561</sup> Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1562</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1563</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1564</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1565</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1566</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

<sup>1567</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1568</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

individual programmes for the boys and to assist in recommendations for placements on discharge.<sup>1569</sup>

The Head Teacher had contact with outside schools during 1980 mainly in re-enrolling residents who were returning to their home district.<sup>1570</sup>

The assessment surveys were modified in 1982 which meant that the maths survey focussed on more basic areas and other areas which had not previously assessed, such as attitudes to school and work, were included.<sup>1571</sup>

In 1983 written progress reports on residents in the School were given one month after a boy's entry to the school. This was because many residential social workers were not requesting school reports when writing progress/placement reports.<sup>1572</sup>

## School Programme

In 1978 each boy had an individual programme organised and progress comments were kept.<sup>1573</sup> Academic work increased and new skills including leather work, handcrafts and painting were included in the programme.<sup>1574</sup>

In 1979 the majority of boys went to school in the larger classroom and several changes were noted including a more relaxed atmosphere with fewer behavioural difficulties and the teacher became more involved in counselling and socialisation skills. A token economy system was instituted where the boys were able to earn points to use for certain activities or to purchase posters amongst other things.<sup>1575</sup> This system became known as the behaviour modification programme in 1980.<sup>1576</sup>

The improvement in self discipline of the residents allowed a work exploration scheme to be initiated on completion of set school work and good behaviour, but it had to be contained to the local community to hinder the temptations involved when taking the bus to other parts of the city.<sup>1577</sup>

The school programme changed in 1979 from a "previously aimless existence" to having remedial aspects as well as emphasis placed on social skills, work habits and improving self concepts.<sup>1578</sup>

In 1979 there was a meeting between the Home and the School to resolve the problems that had existed for "so long". The main problems were the lack of control from one teacher, the need for more classroom facilities and the outdated mode of teaching, for example, standing in front of the class directing lessons.<sup>1579</sup> The atmosphere of the school changed to become more relaxed and student directed studies were encouraged; social, vocational and work skills were to take a dominant

<sup>1569</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

<sup>1570</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

<sup>1571</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1572</sup> Annual Report 1983, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1573</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1574</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1575</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1576</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259. Please see this report for more detail.

<sup>1577</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1578</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1579</sup> Memo, B Zygadlo, Principal to Assistant Director (Social Work), 19/09/79, Christchurch Boys' Home Education 31437.

role in the programme and screening tests were established to formulate individual programmes for residents.<sup>1580</sup>

In 1979 hobbies and interest groups became part of the programme.<sup>1581</sup> Pottery was taught weekly by the Matron and those residents who were interested were able to learn Maori from one of the house staff.<sup>1582</sup> Other things like string pictures, leatherwork and macramé enabled boys to develop skills as well as interests.<sup>1583</sup> It was hoped to develop these areas further in 1980.<sup>1584</sup>

In 1979 a student teacher was placed on section at Christchurch Boys' Home. He was impressed by the, "relaxed nature of the classroom, and the emphasis placed upon socialisation and discussion rather than confrontation and a structured academic remedial programme." He commented on the lack of staff and resources.<sup>1585</sup> This student teacher also commented that the, "... emphasis on organised sports and activities" was unfortunate and the resident's showed a resentment towards this part of the programme.<sup>1586</sup>

The individual programme for each boy often consisted of remedial work covering the basic subject areas.<sup>1587</sup> There was a social sciences programme run three times a week which covered science and social studies subjects.<sup>1588</sup>

The Head Teacher tried to implement an Options programme into the school where local people were invited to come and bring a skill or interest to share with the boys. This met with limited success because the Principal found that it was difficult to encourage people to become involved.<sup>1589</sup>

Physical Education including organised games was held for up to thirty minutes each morning in order to, "... develop physical skills, improve social relations, and as an initial settling and 'letting off steam' period entering the more formal aspects of school life."<sup>1590</sup>

Mini units of school work were also developed in 1980 for individuals who showed an interest in a certain area or who functioned better alone. These units consisted of areas such as mammals, how to use a dictionary, a guide to using the atlas and many others.<sup>1591</sup>

<sup>1580</sup> Memo, B Zygadlo, Principal to Assistant Director (Social Work), 19/09/79, Christchurch Boys' Home Education 31437.

<sup>1581</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1582</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1583</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1584</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1585</sup> Report, Bruce Walker, Student Teacher to B Zygadlo, Principal, 18/07/79, Christchurch Boys' Home Profile 31437.

<sup>1586</sup> Report, Bruce Walker, Student Teacher to B Zygadlo, Principal, 18/07/79, Christchurch Boys' Home Profile 31437.

<sup>1587</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

<sup>1588</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

<sup>1589</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

<sup>1590</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

<sup>1591</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

In 1980 the Boys' Home School implemented a Social Skills Programme into the school programme on a weekly basis to cover things such as budgeting, form filling, basic sex education, flatting and the law among others.<sup>1592</sup>

Part of the school programme included school outings for which the Social Welfare vehicle was available.<sup>1593</sup> These outings were considered an important part of social development and included visits to museums and factories as well as outings of a more casual nature.<sup>1594</sup>

Two school camps were held for the first time in 1980 at the Glenroy Baptist Camp. Twelve boys went each time and were involved in the organisation of the camp.<sup>1595</sup> These camps continued in the following years.<sup>1596</sup>

The Head Teacher wanted to develop a Social Skills programme for those boys in the Home who did not attend school (15 year olds plus) and for attendance to be compulsory.<sup>1597</sup> The Head Teacher also wanted a school assessment of all residents admitted to the Home regardless of their age to enable boys to re-enrol in school if they desired.<sup>1598</sup>

A Maori studies programme was to be implemented into the School in 1981 as it was considered by the Head Teacher that there was a real need for such a programme.<sup>1599</sup> This programme was not implemented in 1981 due to lack of itinerant staffing.<sup>1600</sup>

During 1981 a religious instruction programme was added attached to the Social Skills programme. The programme was then extended to include all residents at the Home.<sup>1601</sup>

The Head Teacher wanted to establish a Morals and Development programme in 1982 as well as an optional Maori studies programme and a music instruction and appreciation programme.<sup>1602</sup>

There were problems with the Social Skills programme in 1982 including a lack of effort by residential staff and the change in break times for the residential staff. The Head Teacher intended to redevelop this programme in 1983 to make it more effective.<sup>1603</sup>

The Maori programme was established in 1982 and the Maori Women's Welfare League came to the school weekly for afternoons with the residents. It was an

<sup>1592</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

<sup>1593</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

<sup>1594</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

<sup>1595</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

<sup>1596</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

<sup>1597</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

<sup>1598</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

<sup>1599</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

<sup>1600</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1601</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1602</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1603</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

optional programme and provided, "... incentive, entertainment and skill development, and encourages the boys to learn more about the Maori culture."<sup>1604</sup>

The physical education programme developed in 1981 began to be slowly phased out in 1982. This was because of the development of staff skills which meant the residents were more relaxed and required less physical activity.<sup>1605</sup> Other physical activities outside of the school environment were continued.<sup>1606</sup>

An application was made in 1982 for an Apple II Education System in order to expand the School's programme into the "microprocessor area".<sup>1607</sup>

There were problems with the Living Skills programme and keeping it running in 1983. The age range of residents in the programme meant that it was often too advanced or too juvenile for the group and there was a lack of interest from the residential social workers.<sup>1608</sup>

There were many visitors to the school under the Living Skills programme including people from the police, post office, health nurse, youth line and a vocational guidance.<sup>1609</sup>

The Maori programme that was set up to begin in 1984 did not occur and was hoped to happen in 1985.<sup>1610</sup>

The Maori studies programme in 1985 focused on basic language instruction but also included Kowhaiwhai rafter patterns and videos of a relevant nature.<sup>1611</sup> The Head Teacher commented that the school was investigating ways to make Taha Maori a "practical yet unobtrusive" part of the school, such as the addition to the letterhead of the school.<sup>1612</sup>

The physical education programme did not occur in 1985 due to the varying levels of interests from residents, the recreation and sports activities offered from the Institution and the Head Teacher's view as to what an appropriate programme was.<sup>1613</sup>

A scheme for Christchurch Boys' Home School existed around the mid 1980's (undated document) and included policy on the role of the school, admission and withdrawal procedures, psychological reports, discipline and the school programme amongst other things.<sup>1614</sup>

The Audit Report in 1986 noted that while the quality of the programme offered at the Boys' Home was not at issue there was still, "... some way to go yet in meeting the education/vocational programme quantity standard set by the regulations."<sup>1615</sup>

The integration of Christchurch Boys' Home School pupils to Kingslea School began in 1987 with two boys moving over to Kingslea School during the day.<sup>1616</sup>

<sup>1604</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1605</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1606</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1607</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1608</sup> Annual Report 1983, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1609</sup> Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1610</sup> Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1611</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1612</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1613</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1614</sup> Christchurch Boys' Home Scheme, GH Daniel Head Teacher, undated, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004606308. For more detail about the scheme and the policies outlined, see the file.

<sup>1615</sup> Audit Report: MP Doolan, Director Residential Services and M Honeyman, Internal Auditor 06/08/87, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000002572661.



## Institution and School Relationship

In 1979 the Principal commented that an, "... exceptional and possible (sic) unique (sic) institution-school relationship has developed. Consistent standards of behaviour and discipline are administered by both sides who are working closely together to try and achieve the best for the boy concerned."<sup>1617</sup> Previously the school and institution did not mix and the boys were able to play them off against one another. The changes meant that each part took an active interest in both the school and institutional areas with residential social workers visiting the school and vice versa.<sup>1618</sup> This relationship continued in 1981.<sup>1619</sup>

Privacy Act s  
29(1)(a) Affairs  
of another

The Head Teacher stated that he valued the relationship he had with the Principal and that they both had a common cause – the boys.<sup>1620</sup> He felt that this relationship assisted the success of the school.<sup>1621</sup>

The Principal commented in 1982 that the relationship between the Home and School became strained during [REDACTED] episode.<sup>1622</sup> The Head Teacher agreed that the relationship was not the same, and that communication was poor.<sup>1623</sup> He also stated that a weekly meeting of the senior staff which was suggested for the preceding two years was finally implemented.<sup>1624</sup>

The Head Teacher remarked that the communication between the Home and the School were greatly improved in 1983. The residential staff began to be seen regularly at the school and the, "... flow of general information about the boys has improved dramatically thanks to a new system of filing ... This system has meant that all information relevant to the school is forwarded."<sup>1625</sup>

The Head Teacher commented in 1984 that while the overall communication between the school and residential staff was excellent, the communication between the Principal and Head Teacher was lacking due to the presence of relievers in the second two terms of the school year.<sup>1626</sup>

The communication between the Home and School was considered by the Head Teacher to be above average in 1985.<sup>1627</sup>

## Absconding

There is no information on absconding prior to 1978.

<sup>1616</sup> Letter, DH Martin, Head Teacher (Acting) Christchurch Boys' Home to Ms H Cunningham, Director, Social Work Services, re: Christchurch Boys' Home/Kingslea Girls' School Integration, 01/10/87, Christchurch Boys' Home Education, F5000006028216.

<sup>1617</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1618</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1619</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1620</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

<sup>1621</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

<sup>1623</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1624</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1625</sup> Annual Report 1983, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1626</sup> Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1627</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

Privacy Act s 29(1)(a) Affairs of another

In 1978 there were 173 abscondings.<sup>1628</sup> This dropped dramatically in 1979 to 56 incidents of absconding. This reduction in absconding was attributed to, "... more static staff, better staff training and excellent relationships between boys and staff, and much better assessment, better activities programme and specialist help..."<sup>1629</sup> Absconding incidents decreased to 23 in 1981.<sup>1630</sup> Abscondings increased in 1982, "... during [redacted] and [redacted] incidents and what followed after."<sup>1631</sup> In 1983 the number of absconding incidents had risen to 68 and there was again a major increase again in 1984 to 159 incidents of absconding. This remained high in 1985.<sup>1632</sup>

In 1979 a large number of absconders were older boys who were on remand from the Court. The Acting Principal felt that other than holding these boys in secure for the length of their stay, there were few alternatives to keeping them contained in the Home.<sup>1633</sup>

Concern was also held in 1979 over the use of secure as punishment for absconders just because they had absconded.<sup>1634</sup>

The Principal could see no trend to the abscondings in 1980. "On looking across the board, one sees that ages vary from eleven to sixteen years, Maori and Pakeha, solo or in groups of two or more, and time was no obstacle."<sup>1635</sup>

The Principal considered that the Police attitude changed in 1980 from, "... sarcasm and total lack of sympathy towards our cause ... to one of helpfulness and more understanding."<sup>1636</sup>

In response to a letter regarding secure care and absconding in 1988, Vaughan Milner for the Regional Director stated that while absconding is treated as a serious event, its prevention, "... is normally approached through developing relationships and programmes which enable children ... to develop other behaviour patterns and skills. A pre-occupation with preventing absconding is often an ineffective strategy and counter-productive."<sup>1637</sup>

## Secure care

There is no information prior to 1972 relating to secure care.

<sup>1628</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437. It is not clear from the report whether this statistic was from the number of incidents of absconding or the number of residents who absconded.

<sup>1629</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1630</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1631</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259. For more about these incidents, see the staffing section.

<sup>1632</sup> Annual Report 1983, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259; Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1633</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1634</sup> Memo, T Ball, Director Residential Services and an Officer Solicitor to Director-General, 12/01/79, Christchurch Boys' Home Incidents 31437. For more information, see the secure and staffing section of the Profile.

<sup>1635</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1636</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1637</sup> Memo, Vaughan Milner, for Regional Director to Director-General, 09/03/88, Christchurch Boys' Home Secure F5000006028216.

## Structure/Staff

In 1972 the Manager of the Boys' Home, Mr J Kean, stated that the two rooms of the secure block were seldom used because they were too far away from the dormitories and there were insufficient male staff to provide cover for this area. It was considered to be a, "... more solitary confinement block than anything else."<sup>1638</sup>

A request for double night cover was made in 1975 due to the increase in older, bigger residents involved with drugs who were held in secure until court appearances as they were an absconding risk.<sup>1639</sup> Some of the residents had made weapons from objects torn from the secure walls and ceilings.<sup>1640</sup> The Principal stressed the importance of night staff not opening the secure doors to residents alone, but he felt that this was sometimes extremely inconvenient and that the staff sometimes became complacent.<sup>1641</sup> The Director (Christchurch) did not think that this cover was necessary at that time.<sup>1642</sup>

Two beds were available in the secure facility in 1979, but there were times when temporary sleeping accommodation had to be used because more secure beds were needed.<sup>1643</sup>

The secure unit was closed down in 1979 for renovations and the addition of three two-bed units and an exercise yard.<sup>1644</sup> This meant that there was little, if any, use of the secure unit this year. "We hope to make a 1980 resolution to hold out as long as we can not to put boys in secure. This, however, may be wishful thinking."<sup>1645</sup>

The extension to the secure unit was constructed in 1980, but the staff and Principal felt that unless more staff were available specifically for secure, it would be impossible to operate the secure unit for the benefit of the boys and the same view was held into 1981.<sup>1646</sup>

Secure unit use was still low in 1982, and the Principal was still requesting additional staff to be allocated to the unit in order to establish a constructive programme in secure.<sup>1647</sup> The Principal wanted to be able to use the secure unit as a, "Reception Centre and Time Out, with diningroom (sic) provided and only one bed in each unit."<sup>1648</sup>

In 1983 a request was made to the Minister of Social Welfare to upgrade the secure wing at Christchurch Boys' Home following the "New Horizons" review and Archbishop Johnston's report.<sup>1649</sup> The secure wing was considered to be, "... very unsatisfactory, presenting a forbidding and prison-like environment. Construction is mainly in concrete block, the rooms contain two fixed heavy steel beds and concrete

<sup>1638</sup> Memo, J Kean, Manager Christchurch Boys' Home to Director, Social Welfare 12/12/72, Christchurch Boys' Home Profile 31437.

<sup>1639</sup> Memo, ER Smith, Principal to Director, 08/10/75, Christchurch Boys' Home Staffing 31437.

<sup>1640</sup> Memo, ER Smith, Principal to Director, 08/10/75, Christchurch Boys' Home Staffing 31437.

<sup>1641</sup> Memo, ER Smith, Principal to Director, 08/10/75, Christchurch Boys' Home Staffing 31437.

<sup>1642</sup> Memo, M Lyons, Director (Christchurch) to Director-General, 21/10/75, Christchurch Boys' Home Staffing 31437.

<sup>1643</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1644</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1645</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1646</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1647</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1648</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1649</sup> T J Sanger, for Director-General to Minister of Social Welfare, 23/03/83, Christchurch Boys' Home Secure F5000006028228.

fitments, toilets in the rooms provide no privacy, and there are no separate rooms for eating meals or indoor recreation."<sup>1650</sup>

The Principal remarked on the vast improvement the renovations and redecoration made to the secure unit with things such as only one bed being in each cell and floor mats being provided.<sup>1651</sup> However he still wanted additional staff to allocate to that unit in order to provide a constructive secure programme.<sup>1652</sup> A handwritten note next to this comment states that, "He now has 3 staff for the Secure unit coverage."<sup>1653</sup>

In 1985 the staff in the Special Needs Unit were predominantly relievers with no previous experience in this unit. The Principal commented that while the team in the unit were, "... safe and reliable, we look forward to the position being filled by a trained and experienced Residential Social Worker."<sup>1654</sup>

A Special Needs Unit ancillary staff member was appointed as part of the school in 1985.<sup>1655</sup>

## Operation/Programme

Overcrowding in the secure unit at the Home was noted by RJ Wilson, Assistant Director (Social Work) in 1976. In 8 out of 9 months during 1976, the unit was over its two limit capacity and the additional numbers were catered for by a mattress on the floor of the secure bedrooms at night.<sup>1656</sup> He commented that the staff ensure the residents in secure were adequately exercised and were frequently out of the unit under supervision, but at peak periods they had to be locked up.<sup>1657</sup> The rooms were small and ventilation was not good.<sup>1658</sup> It was commented that the proposal for an extension to the secure unit had been present for a number of years and that a local architect had been commissioned to carry out the work.<sup>1659</sup>

The Assistant Director considered the increase in the use of secure in 1976 was due to the instruction from Head Office that there was to be no resistance to receiving older residents.<sup>1660</sup>

The secure unit was predominantly used for new admissions to the home, abscondings, as a time out area, for disruptive and violent residents and for holding boys overnight who were going to another institution.<sup>1661</sup>

The Acting Principal stated in 1978 that, "A feature of the use of secure was the number of older boys in the 15 and 16 age bracket who were remanded into social welfare custody while awaiting probation reports and sentence in the Magistrates Court. A number of these boys were facing serious charges and could not be contained in the house, thus necessitating they be kept in secure. This placed a

<sup>1650</sup> TJ Sanger, for Director-General to Minister of Social Welfare, 23/03/83, Christchurch Boys' Home Secure F5000006028228.

<sup>1651</sup> Annual Report 1983, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1652</sup> Annual Report 1983, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1653</sup> Handwritten note by unknown author on the Annual Report 1983, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259, page 7.

<sup>1654</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1655</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1656</sup> Memo, RJ Wilson, Assistant Director to Director, 08/10/76, Christchurch Boys Home Secure 31437.

<sup>1657</sup> Memo, RJ Wilson, Assistant Director to Director, 08/10/76, Christchurch Boys Home Secure 31437.

<sup>1658</sup> Memo, RJ Wilson, Assistant Director to Director, 08/10/76, Christchurch Boys Home Secure 31437.

<sup>1659</sup> Memo, RJ Wilson, Assistant Director to Director, 08/10/76, Christchurch Boys Home Secure 31437.

<sup>1660</sup> Memo, RJ Wilson, Assistant Director to Director, 08/10/76, Christchurch Boys Home Secure 31437.

<sup>1661</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

certain amount of strain on the staff especially when there were two or more boys in secure."<sup>1662</sup>

An investigation in 1979 into a complaint against a staff member led to concern about the use of secure care for absconders. It was felt that it was, "... undesirable that staff should have any reason to conclude that a boy is automatically placed in Secure simply because he is rated as having absconded and it is equally undesirable that a boy should remain in the Secure Unit simply because a particular officer who has the authority to decide his release is off duty. Even more so if he was placed there out of reasons of convenience in the first place."<sup>1663</sup>

The Head Teacher wanted to develop a full individualised programme in 1981 for boys who spent time in secure. He stated that, "... this need is very rare but could prove useful if needed."<sup>1664</sup>

The residents in secure were provided with books and games.<sup>1665</sup>

The secure unit was "non-operative" in 1980 to 1981 which meant there was no programme and no staff spare to carry out a programme. The majority of residents placed in secure during this time were returned absconders. Due to high levels of residents in the Institution, the priority for staff was secure was to do half hourly checks on those in secure and give them exercise.<sup>1666</sup>

In 1980 the length of stay in secure varied from half an hour to four days.<sup>1667</sup> The Principal commented that, "In a sense, Secure in the Boys' Home has been used for reasons of time and purposes where flexibility in duties has often occurred."<sup>1668</sup> He further commented that the Boys' Home philosophy in relation to secure was to, "... avoid, if possible, admission to Secure creating an impression on new admissions of belonging, thereby displacing any thought within the boys' minds of anxiety and tension."<sup>1669</sup>

The Head Teacher noted in 1981 that no secure programmes had been implemented as there had been no need to do so.<sup>1670</sup>

Between the years 1982 and 1984 the Secure unit appeared to change its name to the Special Needs Unit. The philosophy of the Special Needs Unit in 1984 was, "To give children on a low ratio basis of Staff to client, a secure, safe and structured environment in which to cope with, and learn different methods of handling their problems... To make a child's introduction to Residential Care smoother ... through the use of an induction programme... To give children a safe and secure haven in which to spend time away from there problems... For containment of children that cannot be contained in the Open Institution and need to be contained for reasons of

<sup>1662</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1663</sup> Memo, T Ball, Director Residential Services and an Officer Solicitor to Director-General, 12/01/79, Christchurch Boys' Home Incidents 31437. For more on the allegation, please see the staffing section of this report or the incident section of the file.

<sup>1664</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

<sup>1665</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1666</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1667</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1668</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1669</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1670</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

safety and expedience.”<sup>1671</sup> The Principal confirmed that all boys were not admitted through the secure unit as a routine.<sup>1672</sup>

The Special Need Unit facilities were considered inadequate by the Principal in 1985, especially with the introduction of the Criminal Justice Act. This was because residents were being prematurely discharged from the Unit in order to accommodate the need of older disturbed boys on remand.<sup>1673</sup>

A new policy and practice for the Special Needs Unit was developed in 1985 to deal with the needs of the residents and minimise the purely custodial cases.<sup>1674</sup>

In 1985 a box of starter kits, which included word and maths puzzles and activities that could be completed with little guidance, were created to be given to the residents in this Unit every morning. It enabled the teacher to be able to check individuals and prepare a more personal educational programme.<sup>1675</sup> It was decided not to use a structured points incentive programme for school work as this needed to be applied consistently and it was felt that until the Unit was permanently staffed this consistency would not be achieved.<sup>1676</sup> Individual incentive programmes were preferable.<sup>1677</sup>

In early 1988, the Principal passed comment on a letter from someone about the use of secure care for absconders – the letter focussed on one incident where a resident had absconded. The Principal remarked that there were no grounds to have this resident in secure prior to his absconding. “To have a young man return from Christmas leave with his parents and placed directly in to a Secure Care environment would be a nonsense and probably unlawful.”<sup>1678</sup>

## Discipline

There is no information on discipline held on the files before mid-1980.

In the Christchurch Boys’ Home Scheme outlining school policies, there was a discipline category which stated that corporal punishment was not used, but “Time Out” procedures were able to be used, which meant admission to the Special Needs Unit for a certain period of time.<sup>1679</sup>

In 1986, Senior Management of the Home wrote guidelines about the punishment for residents who absconded. If a resident absconded but returned himself on a voluntary basis, he was to be placed off privileges and then have to gain enough points to be discharged from this status. The maximum time on Off Privileges was

<sup>1671</sup> Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys’ Home Reports F5000004605259. The 1984 Annual Report does not mention a secure unit, but uses the term Special Needs Unit. It seems to be that the secure unit became the Special Needs Unit and this is presumed to be so for the purposes of this Report.

<sup>1672</sup> Handwritten note by Mike Doolan on Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys’ Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1673</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys’ Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1674</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys’ Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1675</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys’ Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1676</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys’ Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1677</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys’ Home Reports F5000004605259. Please see this Annual report for more on the incentives and the programme in secure.

<sup>1678</sup> Memo, David Hutchinson, Principal to Regional Director, 24/02/88, Christchurch Boys’ Home Secure F5000006028216.

<sup>1679</sup> Christchurch Boys’ Home Scheme, GH Daniel Head Teacher, undated, Christchurch Boys’ Home Education F5000004606308.

four days.<sup>1680</sup> If an absconder was returned by police or a social worker, he was to be placed in the Special Needs Unit and on his release still had some restrictions on privileges.. If there was no room in the Special Needs Unit or the resident had to be realised from this Unit early, then he was placed on the Off Privileges system, but had to gain more points than that of a voluntarily returned absconder.<sup>1681</sup>

A resident who was on Off Privileges was not allowed to attend either their community school or the Boys' Home School in order to be consistent with all the residents on Off Privileges.<sup>1682</sup>

## Physical punishment

There was no information about physical punishment on the file apart from what has been recorded in this section.

An investigation into a complaint by resident [REDACTED] against a staff member led to concern about the use of physical exercise as punishment. It was felt that physical exercise as a punishment was, "... undesirable because of it resulting in negative reinforcement of the boy's low motivation towards physical exercise and possible accompanying poor self image."<sup>1683</sup> It was also considered to be hazardous unless by a trained instructor in relation to determination of real signs of stress.<sup>1684</sup> [REDACTED] led the physical training at the direction of [REDACTED]. The following is a quote from the report of [REDACTED] "... [REDACTED] commenced exercises with a light jog around the perimeter of gym, increasing speed after 5 laps. This was continued for another 5 laps until he was asked to sprint a further 10 laps, returning to a light jog. In completion of this class of training, [REDACTED] was asked to stand at attention, thereby inhaling air after which he again completed sprinting. Following this I instructed [REDACTED] to do 50 press-ups; on completion [REDACTED] was ordered to run around gym. By this time [REDACTED] was starting to feel slightly exhausted and refused to progress further. However, after informing [REDACTED] he will be marched into the principal's office, and dealt with the utmost severeness only to continue exercises later. Without question, [REDACTED] decided he would carry out exercises as required. A continuation of running was imposed on [REDACTED] reluctantly he progressed until exhausted; immediately I advised him to stand at attention again to retrieve his breathing... [REDACTED] then commenced exercise (running), whereby after completing 2 laps he was instructed to hop around gym on right leg managing 3 laps and not 5 as advised..." [REDACTED] then got angry but completed some more laps after being kicked in the backside, then got angry and was taken to the Principal. He returned from the Principal and had to complete his physical training. His training was completed approximately thirty minutes after it began.<sup>1685</sup> An investigation into this incident found that [REDACTED]

<sup>1680</sup> Boys Home Procedures, Senior Management, February 1986, Christchurch Boys' Home F5000000902913.

<sup>1681</sup> Boys Home Procedures, Senior Management, February 1986, Christchurch Boys' Home F5000000902913.

<sup>1682</sup> Boys Home Procedures, Senior Management, February 1986, Christchurch Boys' Home F5000000902913.

[REDACTED] felt there was no harm in pushing boys to the limits and as he does push ups with his knuckles on the floor he considered it fine to ask the boys to do the same.<sup>1686</sup>

Corporal punishment was abolished in Christchurch Boys' Home during 1981 and it was felt that this, coupled with the minimal use of the secure unit "brought boys and staff more together and cemented the relationships more."<sup>1687</sup>

## **Drugs, alcohol, and tattoos**

In 1975, the Principal was concerned over the number of residents being admitted to the institution for crimes committed under the influence of drugs.<sup>1688</sup> He said that the main drug used was marijuana, but that there were increases in the use of LSD, cocaine and heroin among others.<sup>1689</sup> The Director (Christchurch) commented that vigilance must be applied when dealing with drugs, but also with alcohol as well. He felt that treatment programmes for drugs were not really explained in the Departmental literature but that there was a "worthwhile service" provided by the National Society of Alcoholism and Drug Addiction in Christchurch and he was to check and make sure it was being used to the best advantage.<sup>1690</sup>

In 1983 the Principal commented that residents were, "... still inclined to try their hand at tattooing, also ear piercing with drawing pins, causing infection in most cases."<sup>1691</sup>

## **Smoking**

There was negligible information on file in relation to smoking apart from a cigarette smoking policy at the Home in 1986. The minimum age for smoking was 15 and was to be confined to the smokers room.<sup>1692</sup>

## **Contact with field social workers**

There was negligible information held on the files about contact with field social workers prior to 1976.

[REDACTED]

<sup>1687</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1688</sup> Memo, ER Smith, Principal to Director, 08/10/75, Christchurch Boys' Home Staffing 31437.

<sup>1689</sup> Memo, ER Smith, Principal to Director, 08/10/75, Christchurch Boys' Home Staffing 31437.

<sup>1690</sup> Memo, M Lyons, Director (Christchurch) to Director-General, 21/10/75, Christchurch Boys' Home Staffing 31437.

<sup>1691</sup> Annual Report 1983, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1692</sup> Cigarette Smoking, (unnamed document), 00/01/86, Christchurch Boys' Home Drugs F5000000902913. For more on the policy, see the file.



In 1976 the Assistant Director stated that he visited the Boys' Home regularly each week to, "... personally satisfy myself that all the young people detained are required to be there."<sup>1693</sup>

It was noted in 1980 that field social workers were constant visitors to the Home and the Principal was pleased with the way that residential social workers and field social workers, "... work together and discuss boys' cases for the benefit of these boys."<sup>1694</sup>

Field social workers regularly visited the Home in 1981, when their schedules allowed for it.

The Head teacher commented in 1982 on the lack of visits to the school by field social workers.<sup>1695</sup>

## Contact with community

There is no information held on the Christchurch Boys' Home files about contact with the community before 1978.

A Maori Culture Group used the gym for rehearsals on a Sunday in 1978 and "most of the boys enjoyed the group."<sup>1696</sup>

There was some involvement with local rugby clubs with some coaches taking some of the residents to their training sessions as well as Rugby League games being played on the Boys' Home grounds.<sup>1697</sup>

In 1979 the Principal commented that the Boys' Home was actively involved within the community and that numerous activities were organised. These included camping, outings, and sporting activities.<sup>1698</sup>

There was community involvement with the School in 1980 through work experience placements and an options programme where local community members were invited to the school to share skills and interests with the residents.<sup>1699</sup> The head teacher stated that there was limited success with this options programme but that there would be a concentrated effort in 1981 to encourage greater community involvement.<sup>1700</sup>

During 1981 the residents of the Home were involved in the community by assisting with community projects, doing odd jobs for some of the older community members, and participating in games.<sup>1701</sup>

Community involvement was maintained in 1982 but with sports club participation decreasing.<sup>1702</sup> Resident involvement with the Maori community increased with

<sup>1693</sup> Memo, RJ Wilson, Assistant Director to Director, 08/10/76, Christchurch Boys Home Secure 31437.

<sup>1694</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1695</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1696</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1697</sup> Annual Report 1978, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1698</sup> Annual Report 1979, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports 31437.

<sup>1699</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

<sup>1700</sup> GH Daniel, Christchurch Boys Home School, 17/12/80, Christchurch Boys' Home Education F5000004605259.

<sup>1701</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1702</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

visits to Marae and regular cultural pursuits.<sup>1703</sup> Residents also continued to take part in community projects such as collecting money for different organisations.<sup>1704</sup>

Community involvement with the school continued to be minimal in 1982.<sup>1705</sup>

In 1982 there were many visitors to the school under the Living Skills programme including people from the police, post office, health nurse, youth line and a vocational guidance.<sup>1706</sup>

## Visiting committees

There is no information about visiting committees prior to 1980 and only one reference to grievance procedures in 1986.

In 1980 the Principal commented that some members of the visiting committee visited more frequently than others. They were invited and usually attended functions held at the Boys' Home. However the Principal was disappointed that there was only one full meeting with the visiting committee in 1980.<sup>1707</sup>

The Principal was "delighted" with the three new visiting committee members appointed in 1981. The Chairman was said to have put "a new life and spirit" into the visiting committee.<sup>1708</sup> One day a month was reserved on a permanent basis for a meeting between the Boys' Home and the committee.<sup>1709</sup>

In the 1982 Annual Report the Principal extended his thanks to the Chairman of the visiting committee and said that his, "... advice and suggestions were always welcome and in most cases implemented."<sup>1710</sup>

In 1985 one of the visiting committee members was appointed as an assistant residential social worker in Christchurch Boys' Home and her position on the visiting committee was not replaced.<sup>1711</sup>

In the 1986 Audit Report it was noted that the Chairman of the Visiting Committee considered that previous involvement of the Department was inadequate in relation to information about significant events.<sup>1712</sup> It was remarked that communications between the Boys' Home and the Committee were now full and comprehensive in comparison to the previous administration.<sup>1713</sup>

As an outcome of the Children and Young Persons (Residential Care) Regulations 1986, "A well developed and explicit grievance procedure for residents" was developed with notices up around the Home with directions about how to make a

<sup>1703</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1704</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1705</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1706</sup> Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1707</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1708</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1709</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1710</sup> Annual Report 1982, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1711</sup> Annual Report 1985, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1712</sup> Audit Report: MP Doolan, Director Residential Services and M Honeyman, Internal Auditor 06/08/87, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000002572661.

<sup>1713</sup> Audit Report: MP Doolan, Director Residential Services and M Honeyman, Internal Auditor 06/08/87, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000002572661.

complaint.<sup>1714</sup> The auditors found that there was a need for a register in relation to how these procedures were managed rather than just recording the information on the residents' or staff files.<sup>1715</sup>

The 1986 Visiting Committees Annual Reports noted that the Christchurch Boys' Home committee visited on the first Tuesday of every month and "... individuals on many other occasions." Extra visits were made by the Chairman during periods of stress and low staff morale.<sup>1716</sup>

## Contact with families

There were three ways that home leave was granted from Christchurch Boys' Home. The first was as part of the caseload programme where a boy had previously been admitted to the Home. The residential social worker would discuss with the field social worker whether such a placement was viable as part of the structured programme for that resident. This leave could commence on the first weekend after being readmitted unless there was a breakdown in the home situation or the response at the Boys' Home was lacking.<sup>1717</sup> Home leave was also part of the privilege system. A resident was eligible for one day's home leave after three weeks and between three and six weeks was eligible for weekend leave.<sup>1718</sup> There were also special circumstances when home leave could be granted to a resident. These were if the boy was being transferred to a long-term training institution, or if the resident is on a temporary status, or in public or school holidays.<sup>1719</sup> The Principal noted that home leave was always subject to the resident's attitude and behaviour within the Boys' Home.<sup>1720</sup>

There was an increase in the number of parents visiting their children in 1980.<sup>1721</sup>

During 1981 the standard visiting hours for parents were on a Wednesday night and it was commented by the Principal that on some nights there was, "... barely room for a spare seat."<sup>1722</sup> Alternative arrangements were able to be made for those parents who could not visit during the regular evening.<sup>1723</sup>

The problems of limited space to accommodate all visitors and lack of privacy were rectified in 1984 with the completion of the new administration block.<sup>1724</sup>

<sup>1714</sup> Audit Report: MP Doolan, Director Residential Services and M Honeyman, Internal Auditor 06/08/87, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000002572661.

<sup>1715</sup> Audit Report: MP Doolan, Director Residential Services and M Honeyman, Internal Auditor 06/08/87, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000002572661.

<sup>1716</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report 1986, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000006661405.

<sup>1717</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1718</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259. For more description about home leave under the Privilege system, please see page 13 of the Annual Report.

<sup>1719</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1720</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1721</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1722</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1723</sup> Annual Report 1981, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1724</sup> Annual Report 1984, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

## Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements

A pre-discharge programme was initiated for each resident as soon as they were admitted to the Home, regardless of the reason for admission.<sup>1725</sup> This programme was usually carried out with the necessary persons involved, such as field social workers, parents, psychologists, residential social workers and the child. The needs and deficiencies of the child were evaluated and the feelings of the social workers instilled on the child after discussing his future placement with him. "All this is carried out tentatively and often sub-consciously to the child, often him thinking it was his idea where in fact all we did was plant the seed."<sup>1726</sup>

Further to this placement programme, four other areas were focussed on. The first was employment. If it was considered that the resident would be seeking employment in the near future, the resident was to attend the Social Skills programme which included things like job interview skills and tax document completion.<sup>1727</sup>

The second area other than placement was that of whether the resident would require additional schooling after placement. If this was so, the school staff would place the child at an outside school ensuring that it was within his capabilities.<sup>1728</sup>

The third and fourth areas of concern were the social skills of the child and his ability to relate to peers and adults. The social skills were covered generally throughout the everyday operation of the Home and included things like table manners, hygiene and budgeting skills. The ability to relate to others was considered difficult because although there was stability and trust within the Home, the behaviour of adults and peers outside the Home could not be predicted or controlled.<sup>1729</sup>

Other factors that contributed towards discharge were working with the gardener, assisting kitchen staff, carrying out minor repair work around the institution, and learning to iron and mend clothing. The Principal felt that all this, "...lends to the boys gaining discipline in an employment role, and gives insight into the ways of flatting and caring for themselves in the near future."<sup>1730</sup>

<sup>1725</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1726</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1727</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1728</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1729</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

<sup>1730</sup> Annual Report 1980, Christchurch Boys' Home Reports F5000004605259.

Chapter  
**6**

# Dunedin Boys' Home

## Physical description

Dunedin Boys' Home, located at Lookout Point, Dunedin was one of the smaller institutions in New Zealand.<sup>1731</sup> There is little information on file about the Home prior to 1977, but its operation dates back to at least 1938.

In 1967 the interior of the home was considered to look somewhat drab and the recreation room was bare, but redecoration was to await the major alterations that were planned.<sup>1732</sup> The purchase of a television was suggested as the Home was the only one in the country without one.<sup>1733</sup> The boys rooms were considered to be rather bare and purchase of a desk or dressing table for the rooms recommended.<sup>1734</sup>

The need for more accommodation was presented in 1977. The toilet facilities for both staff and residents were regarded as inadequate.<sup>1735</sup> The general furnishing was inferior, and there were not enough chairs for each bedroom so it was considered pointless having desks.<sup>1736</sup> A recommendation was made to increase the bed space and for a feasibility study on the whole institution to be carried out by the Ministry of Works.<sup>1737</sup>

The Principal commented in 1978 that, "Over the years, more and more of the building has been made over to bed space..."<sup>1738</sup>

The bed capacity in 1978 was 21, plus four in secure.<sup>1739</sup> This was considered inadequate by the Principal as it did not meet the demands of the region on occasions. This meant that other facilities in the Home were lacking and fell, "... below the level necessary for effective operation."<sup>1740</sup> For example, the recreation areas were too small for high numbers of residents and work areas were inadequate.<sup>1741</sup> The Ministry of Works and Development prepared a detailed study which resulted in plans for improvements. These improvements were supported by

<sup>1731</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1732</sup> Extract from report of BM Manchester 13-17/03/67 & 17-21/04/67, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27221.

<sup>1733</sup> Extract from report of BM Manchester 13-17/03/67 & 17-21/04/67, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27221.

<sup>1734</sup> Extract from report of BM Manchester 13-17/03/67 & 17-21/04/67, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27221.

<sup>1735</sup> Memo, Mr Scott (designation unknown) to Mr Ball (designation unknown) 26/09/77, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27221.

<sup>1736</sup> Memo, Mr Scott (designation unknown) to Mr Ball (designation unknown) 26/09/77, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27221.

<sup>1737</sup> Memo, Mr Scott (designation unknown) to Mr Ball (designation unknown) 26/09/77, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27221.

<sup>1738</sup> Annual Report 1978, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1739</sup> Annual Report 1978, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1740</sup> Annual Report 1978, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1741</sup> Annual Report 1978, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

the Principal, who considered they would do much for the boys coming into care.<sup>1742</sup> Final approval for this rebuilding had not been granted by the end of 1979.<sup>1743</sup>

With the continued overcrowding in 1979, the secure area was used for general bed space on a few occasions.<sup>1744</sup>

There were continued delays in 1980 concerning an upgrade of the Home, but an attempt was made to upgrade the secure area in 1980.<sup>1745</sup>

In 1981, refurbishing of the Home was started, and although there were no major improvements or rebuilding authorised, there was the prospect of an improved environment.<sup>1746</sup>

The construction of a confidence course on the Boys' Home property began in 1982.<sup>1747</sup>

Most renovations of the Home were completed by the end of 1982 apart from the Secure area which required major work.<sup>1748</sup>

The refurbishing programme was finally finished in 1983 with the upgrading of the secure wing and the conversion of the Matron's cottage into an accommodation area for visiting social workers and parents.<sup>1749</sup> But the Principal noted that the grounds and maintenance needed work.<sup>1750</sup>

The administration area was upgraded in 1985.<sup>1751</sup>

The visiting committee chairman commented in 1986 that as part of the rebuilding programme, the new gymnasium would be large enough to contain a full size basketball court.<sup>1752</sup>

## Resident profile

Dunedin Boys' Home was a regional institution to provide for, "... the reception and short-term care of those 12-16 year old boys who are in the custody of the Department and for whom a community living situation is impracticable for the time being."<sup>1753</sup> It served an area that did not feel many of the pressures that the larger centres felt.<sup>1754</sup>

There is limited information available prior to 1973.

<sup>1742</sup> Annual Report 1978, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1743</sup> Annual Report 1979, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1744</sup> Annual Report 1979, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1745</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1746</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1747</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1748</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1749</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1750</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1751</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1752</sup> Visiting Committee Report, RW Harley, Chairperson, 25/06/87, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports F5000002670197.

<sup>1753</sup> Excerpt about the roles and functions of Dunedin Boys' Home, undated, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile F5000002368864.

<sup>1754</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

In 1938 there were usually ten to fifteen boys in residence in the Home.<sup>1755</sup>

In 1955 the Superintendent commented on the low numbers of residents in the Home which had been the position for some time and stated that boys from other areas will be admitted to relieve pressures from those institutions.<sup>1756</sup>

In 1958 the Home provided for, "... up to 20 boys of ages ranging from 9 to 18 years. It provides for their temporary care until permanent provision is made for them and in some cases for longer periods of training."<sup>1757</sup> The Home often catered for young boys on remand from the court and sometimes ship deserters.<sup>1758</sup>

The capacity of the Home in 1967 was 16 beds, and this increased to 18 in 1977 with 4 secure beds.<sup>1759</sup>

Instructions were given in 1973 that Social Welfare, "... should not decline to take children into our care who would otherwise be held in Police custody."<sup>1760</sup> In 1973 Mr Kirby (for Director) commented on children held in police custody stating that it had happened on a number of occasions for older boys who obviously intended to abscond and due to the lack of secure facilities within the Home.<sup>1761</sup>

The need for additional accommodation in 1973 was highlighted by the use of a room away from staff quarters and supervision as makeshift accommodation when it was needed.<sup>1762</sup>

Over 1973 to 1974 the Institution regularly had to accommodate over 20 residents and the establishment of two new staffing positions was suggested to provide more supervision.<sup>1763</sup>

The catchment area for admissions ran from Ashburton in the North to Stewart Island in the south and Haast on the Westcoast, but most boys from Timaru went to Christchurch.<sup>1764</sup>

The average number of residents in the Home from 1963 to 1966 was 13.<sup>1765</sup> In 1979 the average number of residents at any one time was 20 in 1979 and this had decreased to 14 in 1983.<sup>1766</sup>

The number of residents admitted to the Home from 1978 to 1980 was approximately 110 per year. This increased to 140 in 1981 and 1982 but decreased in 1983 and 1984 to what it had previously been, which was considered to be a

<sup>1755</sup> Memo, Caversham Boys' Home, Dunedin, 00/02/38, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 13470.

<sup>1756</sup> Memo, CE Peek, Superintendent to DCWO, Dunedin 24/02/55, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27221.

<sup>1757</sup> Memo, CE Peek, for Director of Education 05/11/58, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 13470.

<sup>1758</sup> Memo, CE Peek, for Director of Education 05/11/58, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 13470.

<sup>1759</sup> Extract from report of BM Manchester 13-17/03/67 & 17-21/04/67, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27221; Memo, Mr Scott (designation unknown) to Mr Ball (designation unknown) 26/09/77, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27221.

<sup>1760</sup> Memo, IJD MacKay, Director-General to Director Dunedin and others, 13/04/73, Dunedin Boys' Home Admissions 27221.

<sup>1761</sup> Memo. TD Kirby, for Director to Director-General 18/04/73, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile F5000005423980.

<sup>1762</sup> Memo. TD Kirby, for Director to Director-General 18/04/73, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile F5000005423980.

<sup>1763</sup> Review of Establishment, Boys' Home, Dunedin, RJ Wilson, Inspector, (undated circa 1974), Dunedin Boys' Home Profile F5000005243980.

<sup>1764</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1765</sup> Extract from Report of Mr Manchester, 13-17/03/67 and 17-21/04/67, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27221.

<sup>1766</sup> Annual Report 1979, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221; Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

possible response to staffing shortages.<sup>1767</sup> The Principal, KJ McCullough, stated in 1978 that the high numbers and strain of facilities was continuing as in previous years.<sup>1768</sup> This overcrowding continued in 1979.<sup>1769</sup> In 1982 the Principal tried to limit the number of admissions to the Home due to the rebuilding programme, but admissions remained similar to 1981 and the Home was near to full for most of the year.<sup>1770</sup>

In contrast to many North Island residences, the majority of residents in the Home were European. This increased from 56% in 1981 to 71% in 1985.<sup>1771</sup> Over this period the number of Maori residents decreased from 39% to 14% and the number of Pacific Island residents increased from 5% to 15%.<sup>1772</sup>

The age range of the residents in the Institution was from 10 to 17 years, but in 1982 there were two younger boys admitted to the Home.<sup>1773</sup> The majority of residents were aged between 14 and 16 years old.<sup>1774</sup>

The reason for admission to the Home varied from remand, police or social welfare complaint to a breakdown in a boy's previous placement. In 1981, 30% of admissions were through arrest, 25% on police complaint, 25% on remand, 6% on social welfare complaint and 18% due to a breakdown in previous placement.<sup>1775</sup> In 1983, 32% of admissions were on Police warrant, 25% were on social welfare warrant and 22% were temporary admissions.<sup>1776</sup> There is no more information available about reasons for admissions.

All admissions to the Home were through the open institution unless there were good reasons to the contrary or police arrests admitted through the night.<sup>1777</sup>

The number of residents in the Home often exceeded the bed capacity in 1977.<sup>1778</sup> The recreation room was used for additional bed accommodation. The Home's staff had rearranged storage and had one four-bed dormitory, two two-bed rooms, nine single rooms and one with three beds allowing for a total of 20. If the recreation space was remodelled it was said to be able to provide up to six beds which meant the Boys' Home could cope with 26 residents which was not considered excessive in relation to the catchment district.<sup>1779</sup>

The Principal commented in 1978 that, as was happening elsewhere in the country, Dunedin Boys' Home was experiencing difficulties with the type of boys admitted to the Home.<sup>1780</sup> There was an increase in the number of residents with emotional and

<sup>1767</sup> Annual Report 1978, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221; Annual Report 1984, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1768</sup> Annual Report 1978, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1769</sup> Annual Report 1979, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1770</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1771</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197; Annual Report 1985; Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1772</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197; Annual Report 1985; Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1773</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1774</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197; Annual Report 1985; Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1775</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1776</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1777</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1778</sup> Memo, Mr Scott (designation unknown) to Mr Ball (designation unknown) 26/09/77, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27221.

<sup>1779</sup> Memo, Mr Scott (designation unknown) to Mr Ball (designation unknown) 26/09/77, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27221.

<sup>1780</sup> Annual Report 1978, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.



other psychiatric problems.<sup>1781</sup> In spite of this the morale among the residents was said to be predominantly positive and reflected, "... the approach of the staff in their dealings with their clients."<sup>1782</sup>

There was an increase in older and more sophisticated inmates being admitted to the Home in 1979.<sup>1783</sup> A more violent trend was evident that reflected the national pattern.<sup>1784</sup> These types of residents were not admitted during 1981.<sup>1785</sup> In 1982 the Director instructed social workers, "... to make known to the Police and the Court the other provisions for disposition of these cases, e.g., bail etc., to try and reduce the number of older, more sophisticated boys admitted during the night."<sup>1786</sup>

In 1979, due to the increased numbers in the Dunedin Boys' Home and the decreased numbers in the Girls' Home, approval was given for admission of boys to the Dunedin Girls' Home as part of a pilot scheme for a mixed institution.<sup>1787</sup>

Due to a psychiatric unit catering for intensive treatment of adolescents, many residents (from out of town) were sent to Dunedin Boys' Home so they could attend this unit. Approximately 20-25% of residents were receiving treatment at this unit at any one time.<sup>1788</sup>

The goals and aims of the Institution which had guided the development of the Home for many years were codified in the Code of Practice in 1983.<sup>1789</sup>

In 1984 the Principal said that the number of admissions from Dunedin for less than 48 hours (which amounted to half of the admissions from Dunedin) needed to be questioned. He considered that they were probably just a convenience for the police and not within the spirit of the Children and Young Persons Act 1974.<sup>1790</sup>

In 1984 the Principal classified the groups catered for at the Home and their effectiveness.<sup>1791</sup> These included shelter cases, remand and assessment residents, "unfosterables" and others.<sup>1792</sup>

There was a decline in the use of the Dunedin Institutions in 1985 as future planning was, "... directed towards replacing both these institutions with one joint facility."<sup>1793</sup>

The Principal commented on the challenge of adapting to the Criminal Justice Act 1985 and the problems this created for staff in adapting to a role they were not accustomed to.<sup>1794</sup>

A fifteen year old charged with murder was held at the Home for seven months in 1985 which the Principal said initially created a feeling of tension.<sup>1795</sup>

<sup>1781</sup> Annual Report 1978, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1782</sup> Annual Report 1978, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1783</sup> Annual Report 1979, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1784</sup> Annual Report 1979, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1785</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1786</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1787</sup> Memo, illegible author, Director to Director-General 13/12/79, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27221.

<sup>1788</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197

<sup>1789</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1790</sup> Annual Report 1984, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1791</sup> Paper on Groups Catered for at Dunedin Boys' Home, K McCullough, Principal, Dunedin Boys' Home (undated circa 1984), Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27220.

<sup>1792</sup> Paper on Groups Catered for at Dunedin Boys' Home, K McCullough, Principal, Dunedin Boys' Home (undated circa 1984), Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27220. For more on these groups, see the paper.

<sup>1793</sup> Memo, MP Doolan, Director, Residential Services to Director-General, Dunedin Boys' Home Admissions F5000002186501.

<sup>1794</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

The Visiting Committee was concerned about the increase in violent crimes committed by younger children in 1987.<sup>1796</sup> The Minister of Social Welfare appreciated the concern and the strain this placed on the staff and stated that it was of great concern to the Department and was being kept in mind with the reorganisation of adolescent services.<sup>1797</sup>

In 1987 the Internal Audit report noted that the Dunedin Boys' home was a short stay institution but that this would change with the merge with the Girls' Home to create, "... an all purpose Residential resource centre serving the southern part of the South Island."<sup>1798</sup>

This Audit report also noted that occupancy rates had been very high to the extent that alternative care arrangements were sought for some residents to make space for new admissions.<sup>1799</sup>

The Principal advised the Department that numbers in the Home had reached a critical level in mid 1987 with 24 boys in residence when there was only a bed capacity of 18.<sup>1800</sup> It was causing serious overcrowding and asked if community placements for some residents could be made earlier than planned.<sup>1801</sup>

The Audit Report of 1988 stated that the Home provided a short term remand and assessment programme for boys aged up to 17.<sup>1802</sup>

It is uncertain when the Home closed, but it had become "Lookout Point" Residential Care facility by 1990.<sup>1803</sup> Information suggests that this facility closed with the opening of the Elliot Street Residential Facility in 1991.

## Length of stay

There is limited information available about length of stay for residents prior to 1979.

It was noted in 1967 that some boys were in residence at the Home for 12 months or longer if it was considered that they were benefiting from their stay.<sup>1804</sup>

The statistics available in relation to discharge placement show that the majority of residents were discharged home from 1978 to 1980, and the other placements were

<sup>1795</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1796</sup> Visiting Committee Report, RW Harley, Chairperson, 25/06/87, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports F5000002670197.

<sup>1797</sup> Letter, Michael Cullen, Minister of Social Welfare to Mr RW Harley, Chairman, Visiting Committee Dunedin (undated circa 1987), Dunedin Boys' Home Profile F5000006661405.

<sup>1798</sup> Audit Report: JA Blair, Assistant Director Residential Services and GM Honeyman, Internal Auditor 25/09/87, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports F5000005243986.

<sup>1799</sup> Audit Report: JA Blair, Assistant Director Residential Services and GM Honeyman, Internal Auditor 25/09/87, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports F5000005243986.

<sup>1800</sup> Memo, KJ McCullough, Principal to Regional Director, Southern Regional Office, 09/07/87, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile F5000002670198.

<sup>1801</sup> Memo, KJ McCullough, Principal to Regional Director, Southern Regional Office, 09/07/87, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile F5000002670198.

<sup>1802</sup> Audit Report: Milton Honeyman, Internal Auditor and Peter Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor (Residential) 12/09/88, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000005243986.

<sup>1803</sup> Internal Audit Report on Dunedin Resource Centre, GM Honeyman and JSD Wallis 11-13/07/90, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports F5000005243986.

<sup>1804</sup> Extract from report of BM Manchester 13-17/03/67 & 17-21/04/67, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27221.

to foster or family homes, another institution, psychiatric care or to the justice department.<sup>1805</sup>

From 1980 to 1982, approximately a quarter of residents stayed at the Home for less than 48 hours. This increased to about one-third in 1982 and 1983 but was at 25% for both 1984 and 1985. The number of residents who stayed between 48 hours and one week increased from 7% to 24% during 1980 to 1984 and decreased to 18% in 1985. Those who stayed at the Home between one week and a month varied from 16% to 23%, but no trend was evident. Those in residence between one and three months dropped from 27% in 1980 to 8% in 1982 and had increased again to approximately 25% for 1983 to 1985. The number of residents who stayed between three to six months decreased from 16% in 1980 to 10% in 1985. The number of residents who stayed over 6 months ranged from 1% to 11% during 1980 to 1985 but with a possible declining trend being evident.<sup>1806</sup>

In 1979 difficulties continued in relation to placement of residents, meaning that often the residents stayed longer than necessary.<sup>1807</sup> In 1980 the Principal commented that the nature of the programmes run in the home which focused on the individual meant that many of the boys stayed for longer than expected of a "short-term" institution and it was his view that the need of the client rather than the designation of the institution should determine the length of stay.<sup>1808</sup>

It was noted in 1980 that some of the residents who came to the Home were part of an intensive treatment programme that lasted longer than three months. These residents made up a "good percentage" of the longer staying residents as most treatment programmes lasted over three months.<sup>1809</sup>

In 1981 the Principal was concerned about some of the longer stay residents whom he considered had not been placed due to inability to find a placement rather than a need to stay in residential care.<sup>1810</sup>

The problems with residents staying for periods longer than necessary was not a problem in 1982 and the Principal attributed this to, "... the new policy of admissions and discharges whereby admissions are only approved for good social work reasons and a finite task is agreed to at the time. Previously the institution had to accept whatever decision the staff in the District involved made."<sup>1811</sup>

The problem with residents staying longer than necessary was occasionally experienced in 1983 and 1984.<sup>1812</sup>

There was one boy who was in residence for five months while awaiting a court hearing in relation to a serious assault charge and he was then sentenced to 9 months in youth prison.<sup>1813</sup>

In 1985 there was a slight increase in the number of residents staying over six months due to the planned medium term programmes.<sup>1814</sup>

<sup>1805</sup> Annual Report 1978, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221; Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1806</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197; Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1807</sup> Annual Report 1979, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1808</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1809</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1810</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1811</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1812</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197; Annual Report 1984, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1813</sup> Annual Report 1984, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

The significantly longer length of stay at Dunedin Boys' and Dunedin Girls' Home was said to warrant further investigation in 1985.<sup>1815</sup> There is no record that this was investigated further.

There was a shortage of foster placements in 1985 which resulted in a few residents staying longer at the Home rather than for the benefit of the resident.<sup>1816</sup>

## Programmes and care

There is negligible information held on Dunedin Boys' Home files in relation to programmes and care pre 1978.

In 1967 Mr Manchester (designation unknown) commented that the home seemed to run quietly and well with a minimum number of rules and regulations.<sup>1817</sup>

In 1971 the Principals of both the Dunedin Homes had difficulty requesting material for their Homes. This matter was taken up with the Senior Clerk and the District Child Welfare Officer and a monthly meeting for requesting supplies was organised.<sup>1818</sup>

The Principal noted in 1978 that the staff tried to maintain a, "... positive programme tailored to meet individual needs" to cater for the increasing number of emotionally or psychiatrically disturbed residents.<sup>1819</sup> He further reported that visitors to the home were of the view that this had some degree of success and there was a general improvement in behaviours and attitudes in most cases.<sup>1820</sup>

A review of the role of the Institutions in Dunedin in 1979 resulted in a trial of "co-educational" institutions. Boys were placed in Dunedin Girls' Home but due to building restrictions no girls had been placed at Dunedin Boys' Home.<sup>1821</sup>

There was no particular model of social work practice followed at Dunedin Boys' Home, because the staff adopted an "eclectic approach" which included aspects of behaviour modification, reality therapy and group work as well as psychiatric care when thought necessary.<sup>1822</sup> Dunedin Boys' Home worked on the premise that every boy who entered the Home should gain some benefit from the experience.<sup>1823</sup>

In 1980 working with families as a unit increased in frequency.<sup>1824</sup> A Physical Education and Recreation Instructor was employed for two nights a week when staffing levels were low because of the inability to find a remedial teacher. Another person also came to the home to concentrate on craft and cultural activities. Boys

<sup>1814</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1815</sup> Memo, MP Doolan, Director, Residential Services to Director-General, Dunedin Boys' Home Admissions F5000002186501.

<sup>1816</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1817</sup> Extract from report of BM Manchester 13-17/03/67 & 17-21/04/67, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27221.

<sup>1818</sup> Extract from Report of PS Bygate, Inspector 29-30/04/71, Dunedin Boys' Home Staffing 27221.

<sup>1819</sup> Annual Report 1978, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1820</sup> Annual Report 1978, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1821</sup> Annual Report 1979, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1822</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1823</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1824</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197

who were interested were encouraged to learn basic cooking and baking skills from the Cook.<sup>1825</sup>

Staff organised sports events regularly and arranged for individual residents to join outside groups or clubs. Part of the programme was "free time" where the residents were encouraged to use their time constructively and organise their own activities.<sup>1826</sup> Several camps were organised where the boys learned about the countryside. Mr English, Residential Social Worker, also taught regular groups outdoor skills such as climbing. Films were also shown on a Sunday night and education movies shown periodically.<sup>1827</sup>

The Principal commented in 1981 that the Home had, "... been able to avoid the imposition of a rigid discipline on the boys in care, but rather to seek to develop in them the motivation to discipline their own behaviour."<sup>1828</sup> The Principal also stated that the programme emphasis was on the individual and that social work staff were expected to create a programme for each boy on their caseload to aim for their earliest return to the community.<sup>1829</sup>

In 1981 the Principal commented that, "The advent of 'Planning for Children in Care' has increased the workload for staff, but has been greeted most enthusiastically by them."<sup>1830</sup>

During 1981 a homework support and remedial education fee for service instructor was added to the programme and the physical education instructor continued.<sup>1831</sup>

During 1982 the Principal said there was an improvement in the planning of recreation and leisure activities which increased staff awareness of the need to plan ahead.<sup>1832</sup>

The Principal was concerned in 1982 over the lack of a constructive programme available for those residents who were not in school or outside work training and requested the employment of a fulltime instructor to organise and supervise a programme for these residents.<sup>1833</sup>

A long term programme was established in 1982 for one resident who could not be found a suitable placement either in the community or in another institution.<sup>1834</sup> This programme continued and he also received regular schooling for the first time in many years.<sup>1835</sup> He had to be withdrawn from the school and was placed in Cherry Farm.<sup>1836</sup>

A hobbies workshop was established in 1982 and was to be used in 1983 to also provide manual training.<sup>1837</sup> The manual training class was run in 1983 for four hours per week.<sup>1838</sup>

<sup>1825</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197

<sup>1826</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197

<sup>1827</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197

<sup>1828</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1829</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1830</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1831</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1832</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1833</sup> Memo, KJ McCullough, Principal to Director-General 16/07/82, Dunedin Boys Home Education F5000005243980.

<sup>1834</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1835</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1836</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1837</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1838</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

A community skills programme was implemented for four hours a week in 1982, as was a work programme to upgrade Camp Sutton. This camp was also used as a venue for outdoor skills training which was run by a volunteer.<sup>1839</sup>

The upgrade of Camp Sutton continued in 1983 and it was used much more often despite difficulties in staff coverage. The Principal commented that the home was seeing, "... so many benefits accruing to the boys that we are committed to continuing the programme despite the problems involved."<sup>1840</sup> Camps were run during all the school holidays and on long weekends. Short camps were also held once a month as part of the assessment programme to ascertain responses to different environments and the development of skills.<sup>1841</sup>

A pre-admission assessment was developed in late 1983 as an informal process due to concerns about residents knowing the reason for their admission, social work staff being unsure of their role and contracts regarding parent and child were unclear.<sup>1842</sup> This assessment included a meeting between the parents, the field social worker, the residential social worker and the boy in question. At this meeting certain things like alternatives to admission or the plan for admission were discussed. This assessment proved beneficial for a number of reasons including that the boy and his family felt listened to, there were no hidden agendas and a more realistic assessment as to length of stay could be made.<sup>1843</sup> This informal assessment was not carried out in 1984 due to staff sickness but its implementation was recommended by the residential social worker.<sup>1844</sup>

In 1985 the Principal commented that whenever a resident was at the Home, "...a specific programme was developed designed to meet his particular needs."<sup>1845</sup>

A behavioural management programme based on token economy was in operation at the Home in 1985.<sup>1846</sup> The Principal commented that this was frequently reviewed and psychologists and other advisors were utilised in this programme.<sup>1847</sup>

A programme of care was set up specifically for the boy who was remanded on a murder charge in 1985.<sup>1848</sup>

A social skills programme was introduced in 1985 and was said to make a major contribution to the work of the staff.<sup>1849</sup>

Recreation and leisure activities continued much the same in 1985 with Camp Sutton being used to full capacity and the general programme run at the Home to assist residents in using their spare time constructively.<sup>1850</sup>

The 1988 internal audit commented that the Home was, "... providing a good nurturing programme which is controlled and orientated to behavioural

<sup>1839</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1840</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1841</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1842</sup> Memo, JA Fallon, Residential Social Worker to Principal, Dunedin Boys' Home 03/09/84, Dunedin Boys' Home Admissions 27220.

<sup>1843</sup> Memo, JA Fallon, Residential Social Worker to Principal, Dunedin Boys' Home 03/09/84, Dunedin Boys' Home Admissions 27220.

<sup>1844</sup> Memo, JA Fallon, Residential Social Worker to Principal, Dunedin Boys' Home 03/09/84, Dunedin Boys' Home Admissions 27220.

<sup>1845</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1846</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1847</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1848</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1849</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1850</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

management.<sup>1851</sup> A Boys Programme Appraisal was completed which looked at different areas of the institution and what action steps could be taken to assist in establishing the new Resource Centre.<sup>1852</sup>

## Work and training

There is no information on file preceding 1980 apart from limited information from 1967.

A community member raised an issue about a resident working in the garden instead of going to school and that perhaps the saving of wages through getting residents to do the work was the reason the department considered it justified. The response from the District Child Welfare Officer was that this resident was only working in the garden as he was awaiting placement in a school and it was school holidays. It was also noted that there was a horticulturalist employed at the Home but that some general tuition was also given in gardening and horticulture.<sup>1853</sup>

The staff ratio in 1980 prevented a full-time work training programme although there were various work projects. The Principal considered that this was an area where more could be done.<sup>1854</sup> This continued in 1981 but it was noted that Fee for Service hours could be allocated to overcome this problem.<sup>1855</sup>

In 1980 the unemployment rate was high but the staff still found work for those residents who really wanted it. It was noted that it was increasingly difficult to motivate residents to work when their peers in the community were happy on the unemployment benefit.<sup>1856</sup>

A work programme for residents who were not at school was initiated in 1982 due to the increase in Fee for Service staff.<sup>1857</sup> Some work experience placements for residents were also found in the community.<sup>1858</sup> This involved up to four boys a day and involved work around the Home and in the community.<sup>1859</sup>

The Boys' on work training in 1985 assisted in the maintenance of two primary schools by repairing and painting the playground equipment.<sup>1860</sup>

## Resident-to-resident issues

There are only a few resident to resident issues contained on the files.

<sup>1851</sup> Audit Report: Milton Honeyman, Internal Auditor and Peter Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor (Residential) 12/09/88, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000005243986.

<sup>1852</sup> Audit Report: Milton Honeyman, Internal Auditor and Peter Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor (Residential) 12/09/88, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000005243986. For more detail see the audit report.

<sup>1853</sup> *Evening Star* newspaper column, undated (circa June 1967), Dunedin Boys' Home Education 27221.

<sup>1854</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197

<sup>1855</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1856</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197

<sup>1857</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1858</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1859</sup> Memo, KJ McCullough, Principal to Director-General 16/07/82, Dunedin Boys Home Staffing F5000005243980.

<sup>1860</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

The Manager of the Boys' Home noted in 1971 that one of the residents at the Home made claims about an exceptional amount of tormenting from the other residents. It was considered that this was, "fairly correct as his babish [sic] ways and tendency to burst into tears certainly make him susceptible to unkind comments."<sup>1861</sup>

In 1979 it was recorded that one resident had been forcing some of the younger boys to answer to his many demands.<sup>1862</sup>

In 1985 the visiting committee investigated an assault complaint made by one resident against another.<sup>1863</sup> There are no further details or an outcome held on file relating to this investigation.

Any complaints made to the visiting committee by residents were, "...thoroughly investigated by the Principal and findings relayed to the Committee."<sup>1864</sup>

The Internal Audit inspection commented that while there was a good understanding of the rights of young people to be heard, there was a lack of a formal system to ensure that a grievance has been fully explored and fairly dealt with.<sup>1865</sup> The Principal needed to set up a comprehensive system to meet with the regulations.<sup>1866</sup> "While the boys spoken to were aware that a grievance could be taken to senior staff or the Visiting Committee, staff in general expressed concern regarding their ability to convey the content of the Regulations to the boys."<sup>1867</sup> It was thought that this would be addressed with the rewrite of the comic book.<sup>1868</sup>

In [REDACTED] a resident made a complaint to a staff member about being sexually abused by another resident. This was investigated by the social worker and the police were contacted. While the investigations were taking place the alleged offender and the victim were separated with the offender being placed in secure. The allegations were confirmed by the police and it came to light that the offender had sexually abused other residents as well.<sup>1869</sup> The Regional Director read the note about this spate of sexual assaults and considered, "... that the staff have satisfactorily investigated the various incidents. It is not clear what other follow-up work has occurred."<sup>1870</sup> It was recognised that incidents of sexual assault were damaging for both residents, and it was considered essential that the Group Care Practice developed to minimise the occurrence of assault.<sup>1871</sup> The Acting Principal was told to check that the supervision of residents was adequate and to examine the training

<sup>1861</sup> Memo, BP Maher, Manager to DCWO Dunedin 20/05/71, Dunedin Boys' Home Complaints 27221.

<sup>1862</sup> Memo, Miss J Curran, for Director to Director-General 24/12/79, Dunedin Boys' Home Incidents F5000005243980.

<sup>1863</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1864</sup> Visiting Committee Report, RW Harley, Chairperson, 25/06/87, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports F5000002670197.

<sup>1865</sup> Audit Report: JA Blair, Assistant Director Residential Services and GM Honeyman, Internal Auditor 25/09/87, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports F5000005243986.

<sup>1866</sup> Audit Report: JA Blair, Assistant Director Residential Services and GM Honeyman, Internal Auditor 25/09/87, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports F5000005243986.

<sup>1867</sup> Audit Report: JA Blair, Assistant Director Residential Services and GM Honeyman, Internal Auditor 25/09/87, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports F5000005243986.

<sup>1868</sup> Audit Report: JA Blair, Assistant Director Residential Services and GM Honeyman, Internal Auditor 25/09/87, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports F5000005243986. The comic book was used to introduce boys to the rules and operation of the home.

<sup>1870</sup> Memo, V Milner, for Regional Director to Acting Principal [REDACTED] Dunedin Boys' Home Incidents F5000003461271.

<sup>1871</sup> Memo, V Milner, for Regional Director to Acting Principal [REDACTED] Dunedin Boys' Home Incidents F5000003461271.



needs of staff in relation to dealing with sexually abused children.<sup>1872</sup> Some interim response was expected, but there is nothing on the files to show whether this occurred.

## Health and medication

There is negligible information on the Dunedin Boys' Home files prior to 1978.

In 1978 the Psychological Services of the Department of Education were considered to be continuing to provide a first class referral service, and every boy was assessed within a short time of admission.<sup>1873</sup> There was a reduction in the time the Psychological Services had available in 1979, but assessments were still obtained for the necessary cases.<sup>1874</sup> This was still the case in 1980, but the Principal noted that a requested report was always forthcoming and assessments were at their same high standard.<sup>1875</sup>

A consultative service with the Psychology Department was set up by Dr Allan Fraser in 1979.<sup>1876</sup>

The general medical services were of a high standard in 1978. The general practitioner visited the Boys' Home twice a week for routine examinations, but was also available outside these times.<sup>1877</sup> In 1980 each boy was examined by the General Practitioner on admission to the Home and he made specialist referrals when deemed necessary.<sup>1878</sup>

There was a medical room at the Home which was being brought up to standard in 1980 and was equipped to deal with minor ailments.<sup>1879</sup> New equipment for the medical room in 1982 allowed for the General Practitioner to carry out more treatment at the Home rather than escorting residents to his surgery.<sup>1880</sup>

There was difficulty in obtaining psychiatric assessment and treatment in 1978.<sup>1881</sup> This changed in 1979 with an improvement in the quality and availability of the psychiatric services from the Department of Psychological Medicine.<sup>1882</sup>

The Department of Psychological Medicine was still used in 1980 for psychiatric opinion and treatment. There were reservations about this facility as there were no in-patient facilities and the staff had to transfer the boys to and from there daily, and the staff at the unit were unable to cope with some of the behaviour of the boys and they frequently had to be withdrawn from the programme for a time which often caused erratic treatment.<sup>1883</sup> The Principal remarked that this programme was the only one in the southern South Island that catered for adolescents intensively and that some boys were sent to Dunedin Boys' Home just so they could receive

<sup>1872</sup> Memo, V Milner, for Regional Director to Acting Principal [REDACTED], Dunedin Boys' Home Incidents F5000003461271.

<sup>1873</sup> Annual Report 1978, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1874</sup> Annual Report 1979, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221

<sup>1875</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197

<sup>1876</sup> Annual Report 1979, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1877</sup> Annual Report 1978, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1878</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197

<sup>1879</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197

<sup>1880</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1881</sup> Annual Report 1978, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1882</sup> Annual Report 1979, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1883</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197

treatment at that unit.<sup>1884</sup> An unknown author stated that this was an undesirable situation that should not be occurring.<sup>1885</sup> This concern continued in 1981 and the unit was not considered to be achieving positive results for those residents who attended. Most of the residents were excluded or withdrawn from the programme.<sup>1886</sup> There was a decrease in the referrals to Dunedin Boys' Home for treatment in the unit. In 1983 the Principal stated that, "We have continued to work with the Out-Patient section of the Department of Psychological Medicine and have found them very helpful and co-operative."<sup>1887</sup> This opinion continued into 1984.<sup>1888</sup>

The Principal commented that there were still difficulties experienced in gaining placements at Cherry Farm Hospital even when referrals had been made and the quality of service is also a cause of concern.<sup>1889</sup> This continued in 1980 and the only admissions Cherry Farm would take were through remand.<sup>1890</sup> A better relationship with Cherry Farm developed in 1984 due to working with them in their treatment of an inmate.<sup>1891</sup>

In 1981 Mrs Lyn Jenner of Psychological Services commenced working with the Home four hours a week. She was involved in the assessment programme as well as staff training.<sup>1892</sup>

The Principal raised concern about the vetting process of admission to the Boys' Home in relation to one resident who was admitted in an acute state of schizophrenia and only when he became critical was he admitted to Cherry Farm.<sup>1893</sup>

In 1982 a trainee psychologist was used to help implement a programme for the long-term residents.<sup>1894</sup>

A review the input from Psychological Services was planned in 1984.<sup>1895</sup>

## Psychiatric hospital placement

There is no information on file in relation to psychiatric hospital placement other than that referred to above.

## Staffing

There is limited information on the Dunedin Boys' Home files about staffing preceding 1973.

- <sup>1884</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197  
<sup>1885</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197  
<sup>1886</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.  
<sup>1887</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.  
<sup>1888</sup> Annual Report 1984, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.  
<sup>1889</sup> Annual Report 1979, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.  
<sup>1890</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197  
<sup>1891</sup> Annual Report 1984, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.  
<sup>1892</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.  
<sup>1893</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.  
<sup>1894</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.  
<sup>1895</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

## Staffing Organisation

The response to concerns in 1958 that the Boys' Home was overstaffed was that due to the nature of the residents, continuous supervision was necessary and staffing levels were based on this need. It was also noted that a Home of this kind did not have stable working conditions due to often working over full capacity with difficult residents, so there were times with less numbers of residents and staffing could be considered generous, but other times for the Home to operate effectively, the staff had to work overtime.<sup>1896</sup>

The need for supervision in the Home was prominent in 1973 with criticisms about the lack of supervision being made public in the papers by a Magistrate in Dunedin in relation to a group of residents absconding from the Home.<sup>1897</sup> Extra night supervision was required for the safety of the residents including the danger of fires, suicide and assaults sexual or otherwise, and for the protection of the community.<sup>1898</sup> Two night staff positions were established in 1973 as a result of this.<sup>1899</sup>

In 1974 three staff provided day supervision at the Home, the manager and two housemasters.<sup>1900</sup>

RJ Wilson, Inspector, stated in 1974 that Dunedin Boys' home had always been understaffed but due to the low number of residents and the low grading of the manager, no action had previously been taken. He recommended that due to increasing numbers of residents that the unfilled gardening instructor and attendant position be disestablished and that the positions of an assistant manager and a housemaster be introduced.<sup>1901</sup>

In 1974 a member of the public wrote to the Minister of Justice praising Dunedin Boys' Home. "It amazes me that a staff could be found who are all completely dedicated to serving the welfare of the boys and interested in each one personally. The manager aims at having the boys lead a happy, healthy, full and interesting life controlled by a wise and understanding discipline."<sup>1902</sup>

In 1975 the staff establishment totalled 14.<sup>1903</sup> There was no Assistant Principal position within this establishment which was considered unsatisfactory as it meant that a housemaster had to assume control of the Institution in the Principal's absence.<sup>1904</sup> There were two housemasters, one full time night watch attendant, one part-time night watch attendant and three secure attendants. The recommendation was to establish the position of Assistant Principal, a further housemaster position and disestablish the part-time night watch position.<sup>1905</sup> This

<sup>1896</sup> Memo, CE Peek, for Director of Education 05/11/58, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 13470.

<sup>1897</sup> Note for File, AL Mitchell 11/05/73, Dunedin Boys' Home Supervision F5000005243980.

<sup>1898</sup> Memo, AL Mitchell, Acting A/D Institution Services to Assistant Director-General, Administration 18/05/73, Dunedin Boys' Home Supervision F50000054243980.

<sup>1899</sup> Minute Sheet, Return of Night Duty Staff, illegible author, 15/05/73, Dunedin Boys' Home Supervision F5000005243980.

<sup>1900</sup> Memo, W McCarroll, Chief Executive Officer to the Director, Social Work 00/02/74, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile F5000005423980.

<sup>1901</sup> Review of Establishment, Boys' Home, Dunedin, RJ Wilson, Inspector, (undated circa 1974), Dunedin Boys' Home Profile F5000005243980.

<sup>1902</sup> Letter, Agnes Blackie, Retired Senior Physics Lecturer, Otago University to Dr Finlay, Minister of Justice 09/02/74, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27221.

<sup>1903</sup> Memo, W McCarroll, CEO to the Director, Social Work 14/01/75, Dunedin Boys' Home Staffing F5000005243980.

<sup>1904</sup> Memo, W McCarroll, CEO to the Director, Social Work 14/01/75, Dunedin Boys' Home Staffing F5000005243980.

<sup>1905</sup> Memo, W McCarroll, CEO to The Director, Social Work 14/01/75, Dunedin Boys' Home Staffing F5000005243980.

was approved.<sup>1906</sup> The position of an Assistant housemaster as a permanent reliever at the Home was recommended and approved in 1975.<sup>1907</sup>

Recommendation for the appointment of another night watchman for the Home was considered urgent in early 1977 as it was believed that housemasters should not be required to cover this position.<sup>1908</sup> This was agreed to by the Department of Social Welfare in late 1977.<sup>1909</sup>

In 1978 the Principal remarked that Dunedin Boys' Home had been fortunate to have a stable, experienced staff over the previous years.<sup>1910</sup>

During most of 1978 two of the three residential social worker's positions were relieved by assistant residential social workers. The staff in this class were not considered to be as experienced as the Principal wished.<sup>1911</sup>

1978 was the first time there were females in the position of assistant residential social workers and this was said by the Principal to have a good effect on the residents.

A second night attendant was employed for two months during 1978. The Principal commented that this was a great benefit in coping with a difficult situation and it uplifted staff morale and there was a greater feeling of security amongst the residents.<sup>1912</sup>

Several trainees came to the Home for observation periods in 1978, but there were problems such as communication and inability to relate to the course content.<sup>1913</sup>

In 1979, the Principal commented that even with the national increases in fee for service payments, this had not enabled the Boys' Home to attract part-time staff, even though there was a distinct need for several part-time remedial teachers.<sup>1914</sup>

There were acute shortages of trained staff at times in 1979. There were delays in making staff appointments, so relievers were employed to ease the situation. The Principal commented that the main difficulty was a shortage of suitable personnel available.<sup>1915</sup> On two occasions, employment had to be terminated at short notice.<sup>1916</sup> There is no further information regarding why this employment had to be terminated.

In early 1979 there was provision for only one Night Supervisor to be on duty at the Home unless there were high numbers or difficult residents. This was considered insufficient by the Principal and recommendation for the employment of two workers from a government employment scheme to provide additional night supervision was

<sup>1906</sup> Handwritten note by unknown author, 16/01/75 on Memo, W McCarroll, CEO to The Director, Social Work 14/01/75, Dunedin Boys' Home Staffing F5000005243980.

<sup>1907</sup> Handwritten note by unknown author, 26/02/75 on Memo, W McCarroll, CEO to The Director, Social Work 25/02/75, Dunedin Boys' Home Staffing F5000005243980.

<sup>1908</sup> Memo, JJ Terris for General Secretary to the Secretary, State Services Commission 29/03/77, Dunedin Boys' Home Staffing F5000005243980.

<sup>1909</sup> Memo, JJW Bailey, for Secretary to the General Secretary 04/10/77, Dunedin Boys' Home Staffing F5000005423980.

<sup>1910</sup> Annual Report 1978, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1911</sup> Annual Report 1978, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1912</sup> Annual Report 1978, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1913</sup> Annual Report 1978, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1914</sup> Annual Report 1978, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1915</sup> Annual Report 1979, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1916</sup> Annual Report 1979, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

made.<sup>1917</sup> In late 1979 the need for double night cover was considered to be urgent to avoid injury to staff and reduce high stress because of the older and more sophisticated inmates being admitted and also the problem with prowlers on the property.<sup>1918</sup>

Double night cover was gained in 1980 as the result of a threat of industrial action. The staffing established remained at 16<sup>1919</sup> through the disestablishment of a position of one of the domestic staff who also helped with clerical duties, but head office approved part-time clerical assistance to combat this. The Principal stated that it allowed him and the Assistant Principal to devote more time to appropriate tasks such as planning and supervision.<sup>1920</sup>

This restructuring in 1980 meant that there was a reduction in staff for supervision and other duties three days a week.<sup>1921</sup>

An assistant residential social worker resigned in 1980 and the position had not been filled by April 1981.<sup>1922</sup> A relieving staff member was employed throughout 1980 to help cover this and this person was considered able to fit quickly into any vacancy that arose which maintained a level of continuity at the Home.<sup>1923</sup>

The request for double night cover was made in 1980 due to potential threats from a resident.<sup>1924</sup> This was approved to be reviewed after one month.<sup>1925</sup>

The Principal commented in 1980 that he, "... endeavoured to involve all staff in working with the boys in care regardless of their particular occupation group." It was planned to recommend non-social work staff for training courses in social work skills as part of their general development.<sup>1926</sup> By the end of 1981 the integration of all staff in working with the boys had been completed. This meant that while night and domestic staff were not involved in casework, they were involved in activities around the Institution and on various camps.<sup>1927</sup>

There were two Fee for Service staff who worked a total of 16 hours a week in 1981.<sup>1928</sup> Mr NG Stevens (inspector) proposed the increased use of Fee for Service staff in order to overcome some of the staff ratio problems.<sup>1929</sup>

The reorganisation of the domestic service in 1982 as part of the Principal's policy to integrate all staff in the social work task allowed for a more cohesive approach and staff resources were utilised more effectively.<sup>1930</sup>

The Principal was concerned in 1982 over the inability to, "... achieve [sic] a fully professional standard in the casework aspect of the work done by Residential and

<sup>1917</sup> Memo, TM Comer, Director to Director-General 21/03/79, Dunedin Boys' Home Staffing F5000005423980.

<sup>1918</sup> Annual Report 1979, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1919</sup> Memo, RJ McInteer, for Director-General to the Director, Dunedin 20/08/80, Dunedin Boys' Home Staffing F5000005243980.

<sup>1920</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1921</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1922</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1923</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197

<sup>1924</sup> Memo, KJ McCullough, Principal to Director, Dunedin 02/05/80, Dunedin Boys' Home Supervision F5000005243980.

<sup>1925</sup> Memo, Director to Director-General 06/05/80, Dunedin Boys' Home Supervision 06/05/80, Dunedin Boys' Home Supervision F5000005243980.

<sup>1926</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1927</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1928</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1929</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1930</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

Assistant Residential Social Workers" due to the diversity of task the staff had to undertake. A major part of this was the inability to run a constructive programme for the residents not attending school or outside work. Request was made for a full-time instructor to be appointed whose would be responsible for organising and supervising a full-time work programme for those boys.<sup>1931</sup>

The Home was also allocated 25 hours Fee for Service time to allow staff to implement appropriate programmes for the boy in long term residence. The Principal felt that this person proved to be a great asset to the Home.<sup>1932</sup> A further 4 hours Fee for Service was used to provide a community skills programme.<sup>1933</sup> These Fee for Service hours continued in 1983 as well as 12.5 hours for a homework tutor.<sup>1934</sup>

A submission made for a part time grounds man in 1983<sup>1935</sup> was approved in 1984.<sup>1936</sup>

The Principal remarked that there were lengthy staff absences in 1984 due to injury, illness or vacancies.<sup>1937</sup> From March to September almost 50% of permanent staff were off work.<sup>1938</sup> Relievers were found and Kingslea staff assisted during this time.<sup>1939</sup>

Several relieving staff were employed in 1985 to cater specifically for a programme that was set up for the resident on remand on a murder charge.<sup>1940</sup>

The Principal commented in 1985 that while the half time clerical support was efficient, it would be vastly improved if the position was full time.<sup>1941</sup>

In 1985 a Senior Residential Social Worker position was established at the Boys' Home and the Assistant Principal position was disestablished.<sup>1942</sup> Approval for a second senior residential social work position was gained and the position filled during the year, which enabled several new programmes to be set up and it increased supervision.<sup>1943</sup>

The visiting committee commented that Mr K McCullough, Principal impressed them, "... with his sincerity, his very caring attitude towards the boys, his firm control of all aspects of the Home, and through Inservice and leadership makes every effort to obtain top performance from his staff."<sup>1944</sup>

The staff in 1987 were considered to have had a long association with the institution and a wealth of experience.<sup>1945</sup> The visiting committee found in 1987 that staff were

<sup>1931</sup> Memo, KJ McCullough, Principal to Director-General 16/07/82, Dunedin Boys Home Staffing F5000005243980.

<sup>1932</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1933</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1934</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1935</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1936</sup> Annual Report 1984, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1937</sup> Annual Report 1984, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1938</sup> Annual Report 1984, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1939</sup> Annual Report 1984, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1940</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1941</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1942</sup> Memo, Olwen Taylor, Advisory Officer to Assistant Director-General (Social Work) and others 23/05/85, Dunedin Boys' Home Staffing F5000005243980.

<sup>1943</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1944</sup> Visiting Committee Report, RW Harley, Chairperson, 25/06/87, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports F5000002670197.

<sup>1945</sup> Audit Report: JA Blair, Assistant Director Residential Services and GM Honeyman, Internal Auditor 25/09/87, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports F5000005243986.

on the whole, "... dedicated and show a deep interest in the boys and make every effort to create the right climate for their rehabilitation."<sup>1946</sup>

The increased recording that was required under the Regulations introduced in late 1986 was considered to have its advantages and was less onerous than was expected.<sup>1947</sup>

## Training and Supervision

Internal staff training continued in 1979.<sup>1948</sup> Training activities were reduced in 1980 due to the restructuring and smaller number of staff on shifts, but the Principal was working towards a schedule that would allow the same amount of training as had previously occurred.<sup>1949</sup>

Two staff attended courses in Levin in 1979.<sup>1950</sup> In 1980 the majority of the staff attended external courses.<sup>1951</sup> Most staff were nominated to go on training courses in 1981, but not all managed to attend. The Principal commented that, "There is a noticeable increase in both motivation and skills as a result of this policy."<sup>1952</sup> The external training through residential courses and local courses run by other agencies continued to occur in 1983.<sup>1953</sup>

In 1980 the assistant residential social workers had a small caseload and worked under the direct supervision of the residential social worker with whom they shared a shift.<sup>1954</sup> In 1981 this changed and the assistant residential social workers had a caseload independent of the residential social workers and were supervised by the Assistant Principal.

Staff supervision was carried out individually and in a group on a regular basis. There were weekly staff meetings with separate meetings for the social work and domestic staff. Individual supervision meetings had previously happened once a week, but by 1980 were reduced to two in three weeks due to staffing restructure.<sup>1955</sup> There was an "open door" policy which allowed for informal supervision.<sup>1956</sup>

The Home attempted to prepare all staff for responsibility at the next level by giving them some duties belonging to those in that level under supervision.<sup>1957</sup>

In 1981 the night attendant's roster was changed to give them one day shift in three weeks and they were asked to carry out a wider range of work.<sup>1958</sup>

A National Code of Practice began to be developed in 1982 in which all staff were involved in.<sup>1959</sup>

<sup>1946</sup> Visiting Committee Report, RW Harley, Chairperson, 25/06/87, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports F5000002670197.

<sup>1947</sup> Audit Report: JA Blair, Assistant Director Residential Services and GM Honeyman, Internal Auditor 25/09/87, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports F5000005243986.

<sup>1948</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1949</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1950</sup> Annual Report 1979, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1951</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1952</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1953</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1954</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1955</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1956</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1957</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1958</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1959</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

The approach to training in 1983 was by way of seminars. This was considered by the Principal to be a more positive approach as a wider group could be involved and positive results were seen in the performance of staff.<sup>1960</sup>

The formal training programme was curtailed in 1984 due to the need for "on the job" training for new staff and relievers, but courses were still attended if they were able to be.<sup>1961</sup>

Comment was made in 1984 over the lack of properly trained staff in the Dunedin Institutions.<sup>1962</sup> It was considered that the management, "... should be trained professional social workers with energy, skill and the ability to facilitate and oversee the implementation of an effective social work service."<sup>1963</sup> Those at assistant or residential social work level were said to need to have professional competence but still retain the ability to interact with the young people they work with.<sup>1964</sup> It was felt that the institutions in Dunedin were not getting people with good qualifications and that there was a need for a minimum qualification level for new staff being appointed in order provide the care necessary.<sup>1965</sup>

A formal staff development programme was established in 1985.<sup>1966</sup>

A major team building exercise was the main focus of staff training in 1985, but some seminars covering a variety of topics were held.<sup>1967</sup>

The "Care Profile" was considered to be of great value in 1985 and the Principal stated that the staff, "... found that to implement this process we needed to devote a lot of time in the preparatory stages if we were to maximise its full potential."<sup>1968</sup>

The internal report of 1987 noted that because the Assistant Principal had a large amount of clerical work to do, "... an unusually high social work supervision workload is being placed in the Senior Residential Social Worker."<sup>1969</sup>

### Concerns with staff and specific incidents

Privacy Act s 29(1)(a) Affairs of another

An unknown author stated in 1950 that the Housemasters needed to record in more detail the incidents of the day involving the residents.<sup>1970</sup>

A visit to the Home in [REDACTED] showed that [REDACTED] Manager, was not operating the officially approved timetable for staff but one he had created which benefited himself. He was told to revert to the authorised timetable.<sup>1971</sup> This was considered to be an example of, "... [REDACTED] taking the law into his own hands and is one of the probable reasons he had created difficulties for himself with his own staff and that in district office."<sup>1972</sup>

<sup>1960</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1961</sup> Annual Report 1984, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1962</sup> Paper from P Campbell, Principal, Dunedin Girls' Home 09/11/84, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27220.

<sup>1963</sup> Paper from P Campbell, Principal, Dunedin Girls' Home 09/11/84, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27220.

<sup>1964</sup> Paper from P Campbell, Principal, Dunedin Girls' Home 09/11/84, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27220.

<sup>1965</sup> Paper from P Campbell, Principal, Dunedin Girls' Home 09/11/84, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27220.

<sup>1966</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1967</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1968</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1969</sup> Audit Report: JA Blair, Assistant Director Residential Services and GM Honeyman, Internal Auditor

25/09/87, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports F5000005243986.

<sup>1970</sup> Note on file, unknown author 24/02/50, Dunedin Boys' Home Staffing 13470.



In [redacted] a resident reported to a housemaster that [redacted] [redacted] had made indecent suggestions to him. The resident was interviewed by the Manager and [redacted] transferred to the Girls' Home while investigations took place. The Police were contacted to make enquiries. The Manager had some doubts about the resident's truthfulness but [redacted] admitted touching the resident indecently. Charges were laid and [redacted] was dismissed from employment and the information recorded for future protection.<sup>1973</sup>

In 1978 a former resident claiming to be high on LSD came to the Home late at night with a sawn-off .303 rifle. This was aimed at the staff member on duty and then another staff member when he later arrived at the boys' request. The police were contacted and the boy spoke to a lawyer. The two staff spent some time calming the boy and were able to get the gun off him.<sup>1974</sup>

A complaint was made by a resident's father as to his treatment by a staff member in 1980.<sup>1975</sup> The Principal was made aware of these allegations and satisfied himself that they were without substance.<sup>1976</sup>

## Schooling

There is very little information held on the Dunedin Boys' Home files relating to schooling prior to 1978.

In 1945 the school was off site and some distance away from the Home.<sup>1977</sup>

In 1967 concern about schooling of residents was raised by a community member who had seen a resident of the Home working in the garden and not attending school. This matter was addressed and it was noted that there was a definite instruction about school attendance unless the resident is only in the Home for a day or so.<sup>1978</sup> The resident in question was awaiting admission to a local school and it was the school holidays.<sup>1979</sup>

A part-time remedial teaching position was approved for Dunedin Boys' Home in 1970, but had not yet been appointed at the time of the memo.<sup>1980</sup>

The Principal commented in 1978 that there was, "... a distinct need for several part-time remedial teachers as there is no resident teacher attached to the Home."<sup>1981</sup> A remedial teacher was employed for ten hours a week in 1979, but had to resign due to ill-health and no suitable replacement could be found.<sup>1982</sup> The Principal stated that this pointed to the need for the appointment of a permanent teacher to meet the needs of the local institutions.<sup>1983</sup> An unknown author stated that when this remedial

<sup>1974</sup> Memo, V Milner and S Donohue to Principal 12/01/78, Dunedin Boys' Home Incidents 27221.

<sup>1976</sup> Minute Sheet, KJ McCullough 01/09/80, Dunedin Boys' Home Complaints F5000000935060.

<sup>1977</sup> Memo, District Child Welfare Officer to Superintendent 16/05/45, Dunedin Boys' Home Discipline 13470.

<sup>1978</sup> Evening star newspaper column, undated (circa June 1967), Dunedin Boys' Home Education 27221.

<sup>1979</sup> Evening star newspaper column, undated (circa June 1967), Dunedin Boys' Home Education 27221.

<sup>1980</sup> Memo, PA Silva, Psychologist to SEA Breach, District Senior Inspector of Schools, Department of Education 27/11/70, Dunedin Boys' Home Education F5000000673297.

<sup>1981</sup> Annual Report 1978, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1982</sup> Annual Report 1979, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1983</sup> Annual Report 1979, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

teacher was appointed, Dunedin could not produce evidence to support a teacher in each home, but were asked to give a proposal for a combined school.<sup>1984</sup> A part-time remedial teacher had still not been found in 1980.<sup>1985</sup>

There was an improvement in the relationship between Dunedin Boys' Home and the local secondary schools in 1979.<sup>1986</sup>

A pattern developed in 1980 whereby the majority of residents were of secondary school age, but there were difficulties in gaining acceptance for them in the local schools.<sup>1987</sup> The Principal stated that he looked forward to the day when Dunedin Boys' Home had a classroom and a permanent teaching position was established.<sup>1988</sup>

Progress was made in 1981 to set up a classroom to serve the needs of both the Dunedin Boys' and Girls' Home.<sup>1989</sup> A senior Teacher's College student was also employed on a Fee for Service basis at the Home to assist the residents with homework supervision and remedial work.<sup>1990</sup>

A departmental classroom was established in 1982 on the Dunedin Girls' Home grounds. It alleviated the serious concern over those residents who were unable to attend community schools as they were able to attend this class.<sup>1991</sup> It was called Highcliff High School.<sup>1992</sup> The curriculum of the school was, "... broadly based and keyed to the needs of our youngsters."<sup>1993</sup>

There was close liaison between the Home and the school at all levels which consisted of weekly management meetings and caseworkers visiting the school at least twice a week if they had clients there.<sup>1994</sup> In 1983 the Principal commented that although effort was made to promote a close working relationship between the Home and the school, the physical distance at times caused problems.<sup>1995</sup>

The Home worked more closely with the teacher of Highcliff High School to overcome some of the problems created by the physical distance between the Home and School. This involved regular visits and camps at Sutton.<sup>1996</sup>

Manual classes for the school were held twice weekly in the Boys' Home workshop.<sup>1997</sup>

1985 was considered an extremely positive year regarding the relationship between the Home and the school, but the Principal did note that the teacher felt isolated and there was a need for support from the Home and the Department of Education as well.<sup>1998</sup>

<sup>1984</sup> Handwritten note on page 2, Annual Report 1979, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1985</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1986</sup> Annual Report 1979, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>1987</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197

<sup>1988</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1989</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1990</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1991</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1992</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1993</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1994</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1995</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1996</sup> Annual Report 1984, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1997</sup> Annual Report 1984, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>1998</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

In 1985 there was a teacher and a teacher's aide.<sup>1999</sup>

The visiting committee hoped that 1987 would secure more teaching staff, especially for the secure unit.<sup>2000</sup>

## Absconding

The District Child Welfare Officer requested that when a boy absconded from the Boys' Home, the senior staff member on duty was to give notification and the details of the absconding in writing. Parents and home districts were to be notified the same day the absconding happened unless the resident was returned within a matter of hours.<sup>2001</sup>

The overcrowding of the Institution and the delays in placements resulted in a higher number of abscondings in the latter part of 1979.<sup>2002</sup>

There were 70 absconding incidents in 1980 and this was a major concern as it appeared that most were boys who had been in residence for a long time or had been readmitted to the Home.<sup>2003</sup>

The Principal reiterated the concern from the Principal's conference about the inability to deal with the absconding problem due to the older and more sophisticated boys being admitted who had already been through the institutional system.<sup>2004</sup> Relationships with police became strained during this time, but improved after discussion with them about the difficulties in coping with these residents in an open institution.<sup>2005</sup>

The absconding rate returned to a low level in 1981 (there are no figures for this year) and the Principal considered this was due to the fact that the older, more sophisticated group were not admitted to the Home and with the re-introduction of corporal punishment.<sup>2006</sup>

The number of incidents of absconding totalled 15 in 1982.

The higher level of absconding in 1983 was attributed to a small number of residents who had been in the Home for a very long time and were overdue for placement in the community.<sup>2007</sup>

The number of absconding incidents in 1984 was 26 and this increased in 1985 to 41 incidents.<sup>2008</sup>

<sup>1999</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2000</sup> Visiting Committee Report, RW Harley, Chairperson, 25/06/87, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports F5000002670197.

<sup>2001</sup> Memo, TD Kirby, DCWO to Manager, Dunedin Boys' Home 22/03/71, Dunedin Boys' Home Absconding F500000673295.

<sup>2002</sup> Annual Report 1979, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>2003</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2004</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2005</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2006</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2007</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2008</sup> Report 1984, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197; Report 1984, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

The Principal noted in 1984 that, "It appears that the boys generally do not consider absconding until something triggers them to do so, frequently an unsettled new boy."<sup>2009</sup>

In 1985 the Principal remarked that absconding was viewed as commonplace among residents.<sup>2010</sup>

## Secure care

There is no information in relation to secure care held on files prior to 1970 and there is negligible information about these facilities between 1973 and 1980.

It was noted in 1970 that the delays over the Boys' Home building programme resulted in "making do" with the secure facilities which were the same as recorded in 1962.<sup>2011</sup> One room at the Home was being used as an admission area, and the Acting District Child Welfare Officer requested that this room be inspected to examine what safety measures would be needed for the room to be used as a secure area.<sup>2012</sup>

The need for secure facilities at the Boys' Home was considered essential in 1973. Other than use of Police custody, there were no secure facilities available for difficult boys.<sup>2013</sup>

The construction of secure facilities to hold up to four residents was under way in 1974 to be ready for use at the end of March.<sup>2014</sup> Three additional attendants were recommended to be established to staff the unit.<sup>2015</sup> The proposal was that the unit be staffed from 6am to 10pm and then half hourly checks were to be made by the night supervisor.<sup>2016</sup> This proposal was approved.<sup>2017</sup>

In 1973 the proposed day-to-day duties in the secure area for when it was opened in 1974 involved a one hour exercise period, five hours of supervised lessons or work around the Home depending on the age of the residents, and recreation.<sup>2018</sup> It was to be staffed from 6:30am to 9:30am at a minimum and half hour nightly checks were envisaged to be made. Three attendants to cover this were recommended to be established.<sup>2019</sup> This was recommended to the Director-General.<sup>2020</sup>

<sup>2009</sup> Annual Report 1984, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2010</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2011</sup> Memo, EH Dudley, Acting District Child Welfare Officer to District Commissioner of Works 30/12/70, Dunedin Boys' Home Secure F500000925973.

<sup>2012</sup> Memo, EH Dudley, Acting District Child Welfare Officer to District Commissioner of Works 30/12/70, Dunedin Boys' Home Secure F500000925973.

<sup>2013</sup> Memo, TD Kirby, for Director to Director-General 18/04/73, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile F5000005423980.

<sup>2014</sup> Memo, W McCarroll, Chief Executive Officer to The Director, Social Work 00/02/74, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile F5000005423980.

<sup>2015</sup> Memo, W McCarroll, Chief Executive Officer to The Director, Social Work 00/02/74, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile F5000005423980.

<sup>2016</sup> Memo, W McCarroll, Chief Executive Officer to The Director, Social Work 00/02/74, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile F5000005423980.

<sup>2017</sup> Handwritten note by illegible author on Memo, W McCarroll, Chief Executive Officer to The Director, Social Work 00/02/74, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile F5000005423980.

<sup>2018</sup> Proposed day to day duties attached to Memo, KJ McCullough, Manager to The Director, Dunedin 04/12/73, Dunedin Boys' Home Secure F5000005423980.

<sup>2019</sup> Memo, KJ McCullough, Manager to The Director, Dunedin 04/12/73, Dunedin Boys' Home Secure F5000005423980.

In 1976 a staff member was assaulted by a resident in secure because he failed to follow standing instructions regarding the opening of the secure unit without back-up staff.<sup>2021</sup>

The secure unit was not used as an admission area unless in compelling circumstances. Those admitted to secure were usually returned absconders or those who were at risk from self-injury or were a risk to others through violent behaviour.<sup>2022</sup> It was not used as a form of punishment.<sup>2023</sup>

The staffing ratio and physical limitations of the secure unit meant that it was not a therapeutic situation, which the Principal considered would be good for some residents.<sup>2024</sup>

The secure unit was also a major area of concern in 1980. It was considered by the Principal to be inadequate for anything other than short-term admission and until recent renovations (after a resident managed to break out of the unit) had not been capable of containing anyone completely intent on escaping.<sup>2025</sup> More work was needed regarding general security of the building, but there had been no financial approval.<sup>2026</sup> There was no prospect of major expenditure to upgrade the secure unit in 1981, but some minor alterations were to be made. These were to improve the conditions for the residents but would not overcome the defects in the unit design and the less than ideal staff ratio.<sup>2027</sup>

The length of stay in secure was limited to 48 hours unless the circumstances required a longer stay.<sup>2028</sup>

The majority of admissions to secure in 1981 and 1982 were made by Police during the night.<sup>2029</sup> The number of direct admissions to the secure unit in 1982 was considered by the Principal to be disproportionately high due to the high number of residents admitted by Police when only night attendants were on duty.<sup>2030</sup>

In 1982 no teacher was able to visit the residents held in secure due to the staffing situation not allowing the unit to be staffed full time when it was in use.<sup>2031</sup>

It was noted that following the Johnson report, all secure admissions had to be approved by the Principal or his deputy and this would begin in 1983.<sup>2032</sup>

The severe physical limitations of the secure unit were not rectified in 1982 but the "cage" surrounding the area had been removed. Plans were made to upgrade the unit in early 1983,<sup>2033</sup> but the Principal commented that as with other smaller

---

<sup>2020</sup> Memo, TD Kirby, Director to Director-General 14/12/73, Dunedin Boys' Home Secure F5000005423980.

<sup>2021</sup> Memo, KJ McCullough, Principal to Director, Dunedin 18/09/76, Dunedin Boys' Home Secure 27221.

<sup>2022</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2023</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2024</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2025</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2026</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2027</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2028</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2029</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197; Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2030</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2031</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2032</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2033</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

institutions, "... our staffing situation does not allow for us to staff the unit full time when it is in use."<sup>2034</sup>

As a result of the policy of secure admissions needing the approval from a senior officer, the number of residents admitted through secure dropped from the 40s in the three preceding years to<sup>2035</sup> 17 in 1983.<sup>2036</sup> The Principal commented that this placed an added burden on himself and the Assistant Principal but there was no alternative.<sup>2037</sup> The night attendant's began to settle the boys in the Home and the local police also became more selective when seeking an admission to the Home.<sup>2038</sup>

The secure renovations were completed in 1983 with the addition of a recreation room and the upgrading of the toilet/bathroom area.<sup>2039</sup>

The use of the secure unit continued to be at a low level in 1983 with only one resident remaining in secure custody for more than 3 days.<sup>2040</sup>

The Principal commented on the number of admissions to secure in 1984 being higher than he would have liked, but said that on examination they were mainly fifteen year old boys with a history at the Home.<sup>2041</sup> The admissions to secure from the Institution in 1984 were because of violent behaviour, absconding and two for drug abuse who were "seriously at risk".<sup>2042</sup>

Only two boys were held in secure for more than 72 hours in 1984 and this because one was awaiting transfer to Kohitere and was a serial absconder and the other was being held at the Home for 5 months pending a court appearance for a serious assault charge.<sup>2043</sup>

The use of secure increased in 1985.<sup>2044</sup> The Principal commented that this increased use highlighted the inadequacies of the unit and that provision would have to be made to build a new unit to cope with the increase usage and remand periods.<sup>2045</sup> There were also 25 direct admissions to the secure unit who came under the Police arrest categories of the Criminal Justice Act.<sup>2046</sup>

In 1985 one boy was held in the secure unit of the Home for seven months because he was charged with murder and attempted murder.<sup>2047</sup> During this time there was often two others in the secure unit which meant that there was, "... no room for emergency situations or violent outbursts."<sup>2048</sup> There occasionally had to be a double up of boys in a room in order to accommodate them or a boy had to be released into an open institution sooner than planned because of this problem.<sup>2049</sup>

<sup>2034</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2035</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197; Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2036</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2037</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2038</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2039</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2040</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2041</sup> Annual Report 1984, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2042</sup> Annual Report 1984, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2043</sup> Annual Report 1984, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2044</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2045</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2046</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2047</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2048</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2049</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

The secure unit was also used as a time-out room in 1985, but this was also hindered by the lack of space.<sup>2050</sup>

Thirty-six admissions to the secure unit from the open institution in 1985 were for violent behaviour, drug or solvent abuse and also those residents in need of self protection.<sup>2051</sup> Other admissions were for repeat absconders or those absconders who were not in a fit emotional or physical state to be returned to the open institution.<sup>2052</sup>

The Visiting Committee were concerned over the number of boys placed in the Secure Unit at the Home during 1986-1987. They stated that this was caused by boys who had committed more violent crimes being placed at the Home.<sup>2053</sup> But the Visiting Committee was impressed with the high standard of care given to residents in the Secure Unit.<sup>2054</sup>

The Internal Audit in 1988 found that no philosophy about secure care existed in the Home, "... so the understanding of secure care use was variable and confused and tended possibly to be over-used as a control measure, without other options being considered carefully."<sup>2055</sup> It was also found that policies were vague and did not clearly outline procedures on admission, discharge and appeals amongst other things. The programmes were considered to be, "poorly developed, implemented, recorded, or documented."<sup>2056</sup> There was poor integration from Secure to the open institutions and vice versa as well as a lack of appropriate training on secure care.<sup>2057</sup> Recommendations for local and institution management action included fixing these problems.<sup>2058</sup> There was no further information held on file about whether these recommendations were implemented.

## Discipline

There was negligible information on file about discipline other than the use of secure and physical punishment.

The District Child Welfare Officer informed Dunedin Boys' Home in 1945 that putting the residents to bed as punishment was to cease.<sup>2059</sup>

In 1985, admissions to the secure unit from the open institution were for those with violent behaviour, drug or solvent abuse, repeat absconders, or those absconders

<sup>2050</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2051</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2052</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2053</sup> Visiting Committee Report, RW Harley, Chairperson, 25/06/87, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports F5000002670197.

<sup>2054</sup> Visiting Committee Report, RW Harley, Chairperson, 25/06/87, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports F5000002670197.

<sup>2055</sup> Audit Report: Milton Honeyman, Internal Auditor and Peter Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor (Residential) 12/09/88, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000005243986.

<sup>2056</sup> Audit Report: Milton Honeyman, Internal Auditor and Peter Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor (Residential) 12/09/88, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000005243986.

<sup>2057</sup> Audit Report: Milton Honeyman, Internal Auditor and Peter Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor (Residential) 12/09/88, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000005243986.

<sup>2058</sup> Audit Report: Milton Honeyman, Internal Auditor and Peter Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor (Residential) 12/09/88, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000005243986.

<sup>2059</sup> Memo, illegible author, District Child Welfare Officer to Matron, Dunedin Boys' Home 17/04/45, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27220.

who were not considered to be in a physically or emotionally fit state.<sup>2060</sup> In 1988 the Internal Audit found that there was no philosophy about the use of secure care and that it was possibly over-used as a control measure.<sup>2061</sup>

## Physical punishment

The District Child Welfare Officer informed Dunedin Boys' Home in 1945 that he would not delegate his authority to corporally punish a boy and that he would attend to these cases personally, but would try and prevent the use of corporal punishment by using other means of punishment.<sup>2062</sup>

The Acting Superintendent sent out a circular memorandum to all districts in 1946 asking for punishment returns to be completed and sent in as some had not been forwarded.<sup>2063</sup>

A punishment return for June and July 1956 recorded six boys receiving the strap (two or three strokes on covered buttocks) for either truanting of cheekiness after repeated warnings.<sup>2064</sup> It was noted by the Superintendent that this was the first punishment return to be received since February 1948 and he commented, "Am I to understand there have been no punishments administered in 8½ years?"<sup>2065</sup>

Mr Manchester (designation unknown) noted in 1965 that there had been no punishment recorded on the punishment returns for three years. He doubted that this was the situation in reality. He also noted that this matter was addressed in 1956, "...when it was found that while punishment had been administered no return had been furnished for eight years."<sup>2066</sup> Mr Manchester asked the Home to comment on whether the situation for the three years between 1962 and 1965 was correct.<sup>2067</sup> This situation was investigated and deemed to be correct<sup>2068</sup> and the Mr Manchester commented that this was a most commendable situation.<sup>2069</sup>

A punishment return for May 1969 showed that one resident had received six strokes of the strap to covered buttocks for picking up and smoking cigarette butts against a background of illegal smoking, chronic lying and a number of other

<sup>2060</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2061</sup> Audit Report: Milton Honeyman, Internal Auditor and Peter Aiono, Senior Internal Auditor (Residential) 12/09/88, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000005243986.

<sup>2062</sup> Memo, illegible author, District Child Welfare Officer to Matron, Dunedin Boys' Home 17/04/45, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27220.

<sup>2063</sup> Memo, CE Peek, Acting Superintendent to All District Child Welfare Officers and Managers of Institutions 10/06/1946, Dunedin Boys' Home Discipline F5000000925973.

<sup>2064</sup> Boys' Home Dunedin Punishment Register June/July 1956, Dunedin Boys' Home Discipline F5000000925973.

<sup>2065</sup> Memo, CE Peek, Superintendent to DCWO Dunedin 08/08/56, Dunedin Boys' Home Discipline F5000000925973.

<sup>2066</sup> Extract from report of BM Manchester 17-21/05/65 & 31/05-04/06/65, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27221.

<sup>2067</sup> Memo, BM Manchester, for Superintendent to DCWO, Dunedin 18/06/65, Dunedin Boys' Home Discipline F5000000925973.

<sup>2068</sup> Memo, EH Dudley, SBWO to DCWO Dunedin 08/07/65, Dunedin Boys' Home Discipline F5000000925973.

<sup>2069</sup> Memo, BM Manchester, for Superintendent to DCWO Dunedin on Memo, EH Dudley, SBWO to DCWO Dunedin 08/07/65, Dunedin Boys' Home Discipline F5000000925973.



incidents.<sup>2070</sup> This was said to be a bit severe for the offence and it was stated that this punishment should not become standard.<sup>2071</sup>

From 1960 to 1969 the corporal punishment returns averaged fewer than three per year.<sup>2072</sup> In 1970, the authority to punish through corporal punishment was withdrawn by the District Child Welfare Officer.<sup>2073</sup>

In 1971 the Superintendent issued a memo that Corporal punishment was only to be administered by, "... the Principal, Assistant Principal, Manager, Assistant Manager, or by an experienced officer acting officially in one of these capacities... Corporal punishment of any kind by any other member of staff is expressly forbidden."<sup>2074</sup>

In 1971 a punishment return was completed by the Manager for an incident where [REDACTED] had given a resident a slap on the legs. The Manager stated that she had been advised not to reprimand children like that but although she acted out of her authority, the punishment was not considered severe in the circumstances.<sup>2075</sup>

Corporal punishment was re-introduced in 1980, "... in a limited number of cases after a period where this was not used to reinforce discipline."<sup>2076</sup> It was used in one incident of five boys' absconding and the Principal commented that, "It is perhaps indicative of the attitudes of the boys currently coming into the Home that some queried the punishment on the grounds that they had not done anything so very wrong."<sup>2077</sup>

## Drugs, alcohol, and tattoos

There is no information held on file about this apart from some information from 1980.

In 1980 tattoo removal was a regular medical request from the residents of the Home. The smaller tattoos were removed by the General Practitioner and the more extensive ones were referred to the Dunedin Public Hospital.<sup>2078</sup>

The Principal made a brief mention in his annual report for 1980 to the problem of coping with an epidemic of solvent sniffing. He stated that the staff at the Home felt,

<sup>2070</sup> Memo, AG Ellis, Acting Manager to DCWO Dunedin 05/05/69, Dunedin Boys' Home Discipline F5000000925973.

<sup>2071</sup> Handwritten note on file by unknown author, 27/05/69 on Memo, AG Ellis, Acting Manager to DCWO Dunedin 05/05/69, Dunedin Boys' Home Discipline F5000000925973.

<sup>2072</sup> Memo, TD Kirby, DCWO to the Superintendent, 08/12/70, Dunedin Boys' Home Discipline F5000000925973.

<sup>2073</sup> Memo, TD Kirby, DCWO to the Superintendent, 08/12/70, Dunedin Boys' Home Discipline F5000000925973.

<sup>2074</sup> Memo, DG Reilly, for Superintendent to All DCWO's and Principals 22/04/71, Dunedin Boys' Home Discipline F5000000925973.

<sup>2075</sup> Memo, BP Maher, Manager to DCWO, Dunedin 01/12/71, Dunedin Boys' Home Discipline F5000000925973.

<sup>2076</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2077</sup> Memo, KJ McCullough to Director, Dunedin 12/09/80, Dunedin Boys' Home Punishment 27221.

<sup>2078</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

"... particularly helpless in dealing with this".<sup>2079</sup> In 1981 the Principal remarked that the high incidence of solvent sniffing had almost disappeared entirely.<sup>2080</sup>

It was noted in 1980 by a residential social worker that when five boys absconded from the Home they were involved in sniffing glue.<sup>2081</sup>

## Smoking

There is limited information held on file regarding smoking.

In a report about an incident of sexual abuse in 1987, the residential social worker made the comment that it happened after the two residents had had a smoke. [REDACTED] There was no mention as to whether this was allowed or not.<sup>2082</sup>

## Contact with field social workers

In 1967 it was considered that field social workers and residential social workers cooperated well in making arrangements for residents and effecting placements.<sup>2083</sup>

During 1979 Head office staff and other social work staff visited Dunedin Boys' Home.<sup>2084</sup> This continued through into 1985.<sup>2085</sup>

The liaison between the Principal of the Boys' Home and the districts was between, "... their team seniors and at casework level direct between the field and residential social workers."<sup>2086</sup> Copies of notes for files and other related information in relation to residents were supplied to their districts as was an interim report after two to four weeks of placement. Other reports were supplied if requested.<sup>2087</sup>

In 1983 with some of the proposed admissions from the Dunedin area, the residential social worker would go with the field social worker to visit the family to contract for the objectives to be achieved when admitted to the Home. The Principal commented that this worked positively and on several occasions resulted in avoiding the residential placement. He considered this a process well worth further development and possibly greater implementation.<sup>2088</sup>

<sup>2079</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2080</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2081</sup> Note for File, Merv English, Residential Social Worker, (undated, September 1980), Dunedin Boys' Home Drugs 27221.

<sup>2083</sup> Extract from report of BM Manchester 13-17/03/67 & 17-21/04/67, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile 27221.

<sup>2084</sup> Annual Report 1979, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>2085</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2086</sup> Memo, KJ McCullough to Director-General 22/08/83, Dunedin Boys' Home Admissions F5000002670197.

<sup>2087</sup> Memo, KJ McCullough to Director-General 22/08/83, Dunedin Boys' Home Admissions F5000002670197.

<sup>2088</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

The 1984 inspection carried out by Mr Doolan and Mr Randall caused a considerable amount of stress to most staff who found the process uncomfortable, but the positive suggestions received were welcomed.<sup>2089</sup>

## Contact with community

Negligible information relating to contact with the community prior to 1978 was found on file.

During 1973 extra night supervision was considered necessary for the safety of the residents and the community and two night staff positions were established to achieve this.<sup>2090</sup>

In 1978 several service and church groups had an interest in the Home, and the residents received a colour television due to such interest.<sup>2091</sup>

In 1980 the good relationship with the Youth for Christ organisation continued with social and recreational activities at the Home.<sup>2092</sup> Camps and other outings for the residents were arranged through this group and other individuals.<sup>2093</sup>

A voluntary helper came in twice a week in 1980 to take the boys for craft work and for visits to places like museums. He wished to continue this in 1981, but on a paid basis.<sup>2094</sup>

The residents organised a disco in 1980 with the Girls' Brigade which they reciprocated.<sup>2095</sup>

In 1980 several staff met with service organisations with a view to a more enlightened approach from the community and involvement in projects established by the Boys' Home.<sup>2096</sup>

Several businesses showed an interest in the Home during 1981 and one result of this was the purchase of two B.M.X. bicycles at half price.<sup>2097</sup>

In 1981 there continued to be regular visitors to the Home including university students.<sup>2098</sup>

Dunedin Boys' Home developed a good relationship with the local Marae in 1982.<sup>2099</sup> Contact with various sporting and recreational groups in the community was maintained and residents were included in various community projects.<sup>2100</sup>

The major effort for 1984 was setting up a Hui termed Whanau Whananga (Family Learning).<sup>2101</sup> This Hui was hosted at the Home for all those connected with Maatua

<sup>2089</sup> Annual Report 1984, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2090</sup> Minute Sheet, Return of Night Duty Staff, illegible author, 15/05/73, Dunedin Boys' Home Supervision F5000005243980. For more information on this, see the Staffing Organisation section.

<sup>2091</sup> Annual Report 1978, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, 27221.

<sup>2092</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2093</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2094</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2095</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2096</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2097</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2098</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2099</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2100</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

Whangai in the Dunedin catchment area. This was to overcome the stigma attached to residential placements and to work out procedures for Maatua Whangai to become more closely involved with the Boys' Home.<sup>2102</sup>

The Boys' Home were involved in the repainting and maintenance of the local hot water swimming pool in 1985 as a special project and in return were allowed free access to the pool at any time.<sup>2103</sup>

In 1985 the Boys' Home "adopted" the Special Class at the local primary school which involved the Home taking them for outings and having them as guests of the Home and other such related activities.<sup>2104</sup>

## Visiting committees

There is no information on file about Visiting Committees prior to 1980.

In 1980 the Visiting Committee was said to have maintained regular contact with the Home.<sup>2105</sup> This contact decreased in 1981 with only two visits during the year. This was attributed to the loss of the Chairman in 1980 and no reappointment to replace his position.<sup>2106</sup> The Visiting Committee was still not at complete at any time in 1982, and were not able to visit as often as hoped. But the Principal remarked that they gave great support with the release of the Human Rights Commission Report.<sup>2107</sup>

A new Visiting Committee was appointed in 1983 and visited the Home at least once a month.<sup>2108</sup> They continued to visit with regularity in 1984. One complaint was made by a resident, but investigation proved it to be malicious.<sup>2109</sup>

The Principal commented in 1985 that the Home was fortunate to have Visiting Committee members who took their task "so seriously". These members investigated a complaint of assault made by one resident against another.<sup>2110</sup>

The Visiting Committee would visit the Home regularly as a group or individually and they would make planned or impromptu visits, or at the request of a resident or the Principal.<sup>2111</sup>

The Visiting Committee continued to visit regularly in 1986 and no concerns were raised.<sup>2112</sup>

<sup>2101</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2102</sup> Annual Report 1984, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2103</sup> Annual Report 1984, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2104</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2105</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2106</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2107</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2108</sup> Annual Report 1983, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2109</sup> Annual Report 1984, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2110</sup> Annual Report 1985, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2111</sup> Visiting Committee Report, RW Harley, Chairperson, 25/06/87, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports F5000002670197.

<sup>2112</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Reports 1986, Dunedin Boys' Home Profile F5000006661405.

## Contact with families

Home leave was granted on a regular basis prior to discharge, especially if a boy had been in residence for a long time.<sup>2113</sup>

The Principal remarked in 1980 that, "Despite encouragement, parents seem most reluctant to visit here at the Home. It is noticeable that much better results follow when a boy's parents visit regularly and as a consequence get to know us and can better appreciate what we are attempting to do."<sup>2114</sup>

## Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements

Home leave was granted on a regular basis as a testing situation to determine how much a resident had learnt during their stay at the Home. Special goals, such as behaviour and communication with parents, were set and the field social worker liaised with both the parents and the Institution.<sup>2115</sup> When it was possible the parents were met with and the goals of the home leave discussed with them.<sup>2116</sup> This meant that the boy was not treated in isolation from his family.<sup>2117</sup>

The Principal commented in 1980 that, "... some sort of part-time care should be looked into also as many of our clients are only at risk in certain situations or at particular times. This may be a more effective use of our facilities."<sup>2118</sup>

When a resident was discharged to another institution, some effort was made to ensure that the resident had a positive frame of reference.<sup>2119</sup> The Principal commented that he was unsure if this was effective.<sup>2120</sup>

In 1981 there was an increasing involvement on working with families as a unit prior to discharge.<sup>2121</sup>

The Principal was concerned in 1983 over the lack of social work support on discharge. "We have a strong feeling that many of the placements that break down occur because of the lack of follow up and support."<sup>2122</sup>

<sup>2113</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2114</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2115</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2116</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2117</sup> Annual Report 1982, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2118</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2119</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2120</sup> Annual Report 1980, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2121</sup> Annual Report 1981, Dunedin Boys' Home Reports, F5000002670197.

<sup>2122</sup> Memo, KJ McCullough to Director-General 22/08/83, Dunedin Boys' Home Admissions F5000002670197.

Chapter

7

# Allendale Girls' Home

## Physical Description

Situated in the Auckland suburb of Mount Albert in a quiet residential area not far from the shopping centre<sup>2123</sup>, Allendale Girls' Home consisted of a large old house and one staff house set in spacious grounds.<sup>2124</sup> One former resident remembers the sweeping drive lined on one side with mandarin trees.<sup>2125</sup>

Allendale was a district girls' home that opened in 1961.<sup>2126</sup> Very little information from the 1960s and 1970s was found on file. Allendale had a capacity of 25 (22 plus 3 secure beds) in 1979<sup>2127</sup> and 26 (23 plus 3 secure beds) in 1982 after the conversion of the sewing room into another bedroom.<sup>2128</sup>

A new classroom was added in 1978. While this provided extra space, it made supervision of the girls more difficult and as a result it was thought that standards within the school dropped markedly.<sup>2129</sup> The accommodation wing was redecorated in bright colours in the late 1970s.<sup>2130</sup>

A new gymnasium was added in 1981, providing more year-round recreation options.<sup>2131</sup> The swimming pool came into operation in 1983 and was frequently used.<sup>2132</sup> In 1984 the kitchen was remodelled over 4 months with all cooking done from one stove in the domestic science room.<sup>2133</sup>

<sup>2123</sup> 'Girls must sleep in corridors' *Herald* 30/9/66, Allendale Profile 31417.

<sup>2124</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale file F5000002185731, p3. The staff house was at that time occupied by the Principal of Bollard.

<sup>2125</sup> <http://www.olfriends.co.nz>, accessed 20/10/06, Allendale Profile

<sup>2126</sup> Department of Education, Annual Report to Parliament 1966 Appendix to the Journals of the House of Representatives of New Zealand. Section E.4, Vol C-H.16 Vol II.

<sup>2127</sup> Department of Social Welfare (1979) *Directory of residential facilities for disturbed children in New Zealand*, DSW, Wellington.

<sup>2128</sup> Annual Report 1982, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2129</sup> Annual Report 1978, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2130</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p2.

<sup>2131</sup> Annual Report 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p5.

<sup>2132</sup> Annual Report 1983, Allendale Reports F5000002386581.

<sup>2133</sup> Annual Report 1984, Allendale Reports F5000002386581.

## Resident profile

In 1966, the average age of girls in Allendale was 14 or 15, but sometimes girls were as young as 11 or as old as 19.<sup>2134</sup> The age range narrowed during the 1980s. The age range during 1980 was 10-15 years,<sup>2135</sup> 10-16 years in 1982,<sup>2136</sup> 10-13 years in 1984.<sup>2137</sup>

Most residents were state wards, and some were picked up by the Police as missing from home or found at the waterfront. Allendale was a short- to mid-term institution after which most girls returned home. Those not returned home went on to long-stay department institutions such as Kingslea, Salisbury or Fareham House.<sup>2138</sup>

There was an increase in admissions of over 50% between 1965 and 1966.<sup>2139</sup> Overcrowding put pressure to discharge girls.<sup>2140</sup> The institution could not control the inflow as many admissions came from the police.<sup>2141</sup> The high number of girls requiring psychological and psychiatric examinations at this time was also noted.<sup>2142</sup> It was also noted that the home was developing into a remand centre.<sup>2143</sup>

A Herald article in September 1966 noted serious overcrowding issues – up to 31 girls resident at Allendale when the capacity was 15.<sup>2144</sup> The article also noted that 5 or 6 girls slept to a room. In 1967, an inspection found 26 girls in residence, with girls sleeping on mattresses on the floor, carpets were worn and facilities generally inadequate, including a lack of toilets, hand basins and beds.<sup>2145</sup> This placed great strain on staff, and led to a number of resignations in the mid-60s.<sup>2146</sup>

Number of girls at Allendale for the first 5 months of 1970 ranged from 23-30. At this time there was concern that along with the increased numbers, the behaviour of the girls was increasing in its severity.<sup>2147</sup> Allendale was said to increasingly undertake a custodial and remand function.<sup>2148</sup>

In 1970 a number of senior staff resigned, and in June the DCWO proposed that Allendale be closed because the resignations of the Matron and Principal were to take effect in August and the positions of Assistant Principal and Sub-Matron were vacant.<sup>2149</sup> The proposal was rejected on the grounds that it would embarrass the government, and because closure was likely to be opposed by the State Services Commission.<sup>2150</sup>

<sup>2134</sup> 'Girls must sleep in corridors' *Herald* 30/9/66, Allendale Profile 31417.

<sup>2135</sup> Annual Report 1980, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2136</sup> Annual Report 1982, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2137</sup> Annual Report 1984, Allendale Reports F5000002386581.

<sup>2138</sup> 'Girls must sleep in corridors' *Herald* 30/9/66, Allendale Profile 31417.

<sup>2139</sup> 'Girls' Home Frequently Crowded' *Auckland Star* 29/9/66, Allendale Profile 31417.

<sup>2140</sup> Inspection Report, July/Aug 1966, Allendale Health 31417.

<sup>2141</sup> Inspection Report, July/Aug 1966, Allendale Health 31417.

<sup>2142</sup> Inspection Report, July/Aug 1966, Allendale Health 31417.

<sup>2143</sup> Inspection Report July/Aug 1966, Allendale Health 31417.

<sup>2144</sup> 'Girls must sleep in corridors' *Herald* 30/9/66, Allendale Profile 31417

<sup>2145</sup> Extract from report of Merv Hayes, May/June 1967, Allendale Profile 31417.

<sup>2146</sup> File note, Girls' Home, Auckland, E Fiest, Senior Inspector, 23/8/66, Allendale Profile 31417.

<sup>2147</sup> Memo, KJ Flint, DCWO to Superintendent 26/6/70, Allendale Profile 31417.

<sup>2148</sup> Memo, KJ Flint, DCWO to Superintendent 26/6/70, Allendale Profile 31417.

<sup>2149</sup> Memo, KJ Flint, DCWO to Superintendent 26/6/70, Allendale Profile 31417.

<sup>2150</sup> Note from DJ Reilly, 9/7/70 on memo, KJ Flint, DCWO to Superintendent 26/6/70, Allendale Profile 31417.

The catchment area for Allendale ran from Kaitaia to Gisborne, although most girls came from the Auckland area.<sup>2151</sup> By 1982 the catchment area had expanded south to Wanganui.<sup>2152</sup> Catchment areas for admission in 1980 were from Kaitaia in the north to Hamilton and Napier in the south.<sup>2153</sup>

Many girls' admissions were preceded by poor school attendance, leading to petty crime and loss of parental control.<sup>2154</sup>

Admissions rose sharply in the early 1970s, with most coming in on police warrants or on remand.<sup>2155</sup>

In 1976, the high rate of return to Allendale (well over 50%) was thought to be due to poor after-placement back up, hasty placement arrangements and the return of girls on trivial matters.<sup>2156</sup>

Almost half of admissions in 1978 were state wards, with most of the remainder being made up of court remands or girls subject to police warrants. A small number of remaining admissions were section 11 (8 out of 124 for the year); social welfare warrant (6) and temporary admissions (5). In 1983, wards and temporary wards made up 75 of 91 admissions and there was a mix of mid- and short-term care, the latter often on transfer to or from other residences.<sup>2157</sup> In 1978 most girls discharged were sent home on a period of social welfare supervision, with some girls transferred to other department institutions.<sup>2158</sup>

The increasing amount of difficult and disturbed girls entering Allendale was noted in respect of admissions during 1978.<sup>2159</sup> Some girls were suicidal on admission; others had a psychiatric background or were repeat absconders or truants, or had long-standing, severe behavioural problems.<sup>2160</sup> This trend continued in 1979, along with more admissions of younger disturbed girls.<sup>2161</sup> Behaviour involving verbal and physical aggression reached "near riot" status at one point in 1979, a year when there were 106 admissions.<sup>2162</sup> The numbers of girls with psychiatric problems increased at the same time that the availability of the visiting psychologist declined.<sup>2163</sup>

Admissions to Allendale often came from Bollard Girls' Home. For example 20 out of 50 admissions came from Bollard in 1981.<sup>2164</sup> Those girls on transfer from Bollard tended to be younger, and some were considered "backward" or with "physical defect".<sup>2165</sup>

The admissions policy in 1980 was to usually admit to the open wing. Girls were seen by a doctor at the earliest opportunity and were encouraged to telephone their

<sup>2151</sup> Annual Report 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2152</sup> Annual Report 1982, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2153</sup> Annual Report 1980, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2154</sup> Annual Report 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2155</sup> File note, Bollard and Allendale roll figures, Allendale Profile, Archives 31436.

<sup>2156</sup> Annual Report 1976, Allendale Reports 31417.

<sup>2157</sup> Annual Report 1983, Allendale Reports F5000002386581.

<sup>2158</sup> Annual Report 1978, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2159</sup> Annual Report 1978, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2160</sup> Annual Report 1978, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2161</sup> Annual Report 1979, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2162</sup> Admissions to DSW institutions 1979-1983, Appendix B, Allendale Profile F5000002186500.

<sup>2163</sup> Annual Report 1979, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2164</sup> Annual Report 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2165</sup> Visit to Allendale 8/9/82, Allendale Secure F5000002185731.



parents.<sup>2166</sup> In addition, a small number of shelter care cases were showered in the secure wing but did not usually stay overnight.<sup>2167</sup>

Over half of all admissions in 1981 were Maori.<sup>2168</sup> This trend continued in 1983 when most admissions were also state wards, with the remainder being admitted under section 11 agreements.<sup>2169</sup>

## Length of stay

In 1966, most girls stayed at Allendale for 3 months.<sup>2170</sup> In 1978, the majority of residents stayed for 3-6 months.<sup>2171</sup> The 1980 Annual Report set a 2-3 school term stay as the ideal length to form good school and social habits.<sup>2172</sup> In about 1980 girls stayed an average of 2-3 school terms.<sup>2173</sup> The Annual Report for 1981 stated that girls stayed for a minimum of one term and a maximum of three terms.<sup>2174</sup> Length of stay in 1982 went from a 1-2 term average to a 2-3 term average, which was thought to be more beneficial.<sup>2175</sup>

Admission patterns showed a change by the late-70s to an increase in very short-term admissions, of less than a week, to 27% of all admissions in 1979, while those of less than 4 weeks comprised 47% of all admissions during that year.<sup>2176</sup> The mix of residents by this time included shelter care cases, guardianship cases and those awaiting transfer to long-term care.<sup>2177</sup>

By 1982 the turnover of residents dropped, reverting to earlier patterns, with most being in extended care for about 3 terms.<sup>2178</sup> The average length of stay was just over 6 months in 1985.<sup>2179</sup>

## Programmes and care

In 1966, as well as school, instruction was given in cooking, cleaning, gardening and general household duties.<sup>2180</sup>

In the mid-1960s, privileges included 3 TV nights per week, outings under supervision, a film once a week and approved visitors on Sundays. Privileges could be removed at any time.<sup>2181</sup> Pocket money was distributed on a merit system.<sup>2182</sup>

<sup>2166</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p4

<sup>2167</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p4.

<sup>2168</sup> Annual Report 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2169</sup> Annual Report 1983, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2170</sup> 'Girls must sleep in corridors' *Herald* 30/9/66, Allendale Profile 31417.

<sup>2171</sup> Annual Report 1978, Allendale Reports F5000002185731

<sup>2172</sup> Annual Report 1980, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2173</sup> Mataora School description, undated, circa 1980 1/14/3, Allendale Profile F5000002388571.

<sup>2174</sup> Annual Report 1981, Allendale file F500000 Annual Report 1985, Allendale Reports

F500000238658102185731.

<sup>2175</sup> Annual Report 1982, Allendale Reports F5000002185731; Admissions to DSW institutions 1979-1983, Appendix G, Allendale Profile F5000002186500.

<sup>2176</sup> Annual Report 1979, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2177</sup> Annual Report 1979, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2178</sup> Visit to Allendale, 8/9/82, Allendale Secure F5000002185731.

<sup>2179</sup> Annual Report 1985, Allendale Reports F5000002386581.

<sup>2180</sup> 'Girls must sleep in corridors' *Herald* 30/9/66, Allendale Profile 31417.

Staff and students raised money in 1978 from the sale of handcrafts and from a concert that was used to buy a pottery kiln, TV and radio for the departmental van.<sup>2183</sup>

In 1978, the philosophy of care was to change attitudes as opposed to changing behaviour. This was based on Dr Glasser's Reality Therapy, the application of this was considered successful, but dependent on effective one-to-one relationships between staff and residents.<sup>2184</sup> The method was also thought to serve as a useful reminder to staff not to revert to inappropriately custodial or behaviourist techniques.<sup>2185</sup> This programme of therapy was altered in 1979, to reflect a change in admissions, when a behaviour modification programme based on a token economy was introduced.<sup>2186</sup>

In the early 80s it was noted that approaches to care altered with changes in Principal and other key staff.<sup>2187</sup> In 1981 there was no formalised points or privileges system, although girls progressed through a series of bedrooms to "privilege rooms".<sup>2188</sup> Work programmes were put in place for punishment.<sup>2189</sup> The cook insisted that girls did not receive pudding unless they ate their main meal.<sup>2190</sup> In 1981 there was no relief cook and so the regular cook prepared freezer meals to cover her leave absences.<sup>2191</sup>

A care philosophy of integrating girls back into the community was expressed in 1980.<sup>2192</sup> This involved placing girls in community schools as soon as possible and involving them in local community activities.<sup>2193</sup> Girls were encouraged to spend weekends at home.<sup>2194</sup> After the first month, home visits were fortnightly during term as well as leave during school holidays and at Christmas. Several girls went on camps over the summer.<sup>2195</sup> In the early 80s, links were forged with the Whangarei District and many holiday opportunities provided in that region.<sup>2196</sup> In 1982 there was a successful camp with 15 girls from Allendale and 6 boys from Wesleydale.<sup>2197</sup>

Activities included a range of out of school activities, and were based on a 3 week cycle in 1980, with the programme displayed so that the girls knew what was being planned. A 1980 Inspection Report expressed concern with the high use of feature films.<sup>2198</sup>

---

<sup>2181</sup> 'Girls must sleep in corridors' *Herald* 30/9/66, Allendale Profile 31417.

<sup>2182</sup> 'Girls must sleep in corridors' *Herald* 30/9/66, Allendale Profile 31417.

<sup>2183</sup> Annual Report 1978, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2184</sup> Annual Report 1978, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2185</sup> Annual Report 1978, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2186</sup> Annual Report 1979, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2187</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p1.

<sup>2188</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p8.

<sup>2189</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p8.

<sup>2190</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p6.

<sup>2191</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p6.

<sup>2192</sup> Annual Report 1980, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2193</sup> Annual Report 1980, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2194</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p5.

<sup>2195</sup> Annual Report 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p5.

<sup>2196</sup> See, for example, Annual Report 1984, Allendale Reports F5000002386581, p3.

<sup>2197</sup> Annual Report 1982, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2198</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p7.

Local church members visited on Monday nights in 1980, with no other formal arrangements made to attend church. Girls were given a choice whether or not to attend the Monday night programme.<sup>2199</sup>

Throughout the early 1980s, there were many local trips to beaches or parks including pipi gathering and fruit picking, trips to MOTAT, movies or to go roller skating or horseriding.<sup>2200</sup> In 1981, activities, both on and off the property, included Church Group, Jazzercise, Pupperty, Pan Pacific, Maori Women's Welfare League, Te Kopu Awards, Drama, Lady Mayoress Committee, Hato Petera, John Waititi Marae, Kokere Centre and Outreach.<sup>2201</sup>

Many recreational activities were available in 1983, including the swimming pool, trampoline, table tennis, indoor basketball, handiwork, mask making, cake decorating and housie.<sup>2202</sup>

## Work and training

Girls at Allendale were predominately school age and therefore the focus was on education rather than work training. However, as outlined elsewhere, training in domestic tasks was given and these also formed part of the recreational programme (sewing, for example). The school component included life skills and elements of preparation for the workforce.

## Resident-to-resident issues

Allegations of sexual contact between girls at Allendale appeared on the front page of the Truth newspaper in 1960, and sexual misbehaviour, including "lesbian tuition" among residents was also alleged in 1966, but no evidence of this conduct was found.<sup>2203</sup>

No other incidents were found on file.

## Health and medication

In 1964, an outbreak of head lice was treated with fumigation by cyanide.<sup>2204</sup>

Application was made in 1964 for a part-time nursing appointment to assist the doctor with venereal disease examinations. Assistance had previously been given by a staff member with a nursing certificate but that person was shortly to leave the institution.<sup>2205</sup>

<sup>2199</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p8.

<sup>2200</sup> Annual Report 1982, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p5.

<sup>2201</sup> Annual Report 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2202</sup> Annual Report 1983, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2203</sup> Memo, KJ Flint DCWO to Director-General, 12/2/65, Allendale Complaints 31417.

<sup>2204</sup> Memo, KJ Flint, DCWO to Superintendent 27/4/64, Allendale Health 31419.

<sup>2205</sup> Mome, KJ Flint, DCWO to Superintendent, 20/11/64, Allendale Health 31419.

The DCWO in 1966, said that between 20-25% of girls at Allendale suffered from venereal disease.<sup>2206</sup> The same year, in internal correspondence, the DCWO said that all girls, apart from a very few care and protection cases, were tested for venereal disease on admission.<sup>2207</sup>

Two female police officers were charged under the Health Act, when a girl they were escorting from Allendale to Arohata for Borstal Training on the overnight train escaped their custody. The girl had venereal disease and the officers were charged with allowing a person infected with an infectious or communicable disease into a public place. The DCWO requested a legislative amendment.<sup>2208</sup>

In 1967, the doctor working at Allendale requested routine internal examinations to test for venereal disease of all girls 12 and over at all institutions.<sup>2209</sup> This was after the doctor found a number of girls had tested negative for venereal disease at other institutions but were in fact infected and had not been properly tested. Yet in 1981, not all girls were given swab tests for venereal disease.<sup>2210</sup> All girls were, however, counselled on the reasons for having the test.<sup>2211</sup>

In 1968, Auckland Hospital advised that the department purchase a small incubator for VD swabs, given the incidence of acute gonorrhoea among admissions to Allendale.<sup>2212</sup>

Compulsory venereal disease tests ended at Allendale in 1978 on the appointment of a new principal.<sup>2213</sup> There was concern in 1979 about the methods used by the female doctor, who used a full examination (full gynaecological check plus VD swabs) and who charged high fees.<sup>2214</sup> Medical procedures were set out in a 1980 memo.<sup>2215</sup>

Head Office policy in 1982 was for examinations with consent only, and to allow residents with VD to handle food after medical evidence that cross-infection risks were negligible.<sup>2216</sup> By 1981, all girls were counselled on the need for medical examinations and VD tests, but not all girls were given swab tests for VD.<sup>2217</sup>

The Auckland Committee on Racism and Discrimination (ACORD) also alleged that girls at Auckland homes were refused tampons and were issued sanitary pads one at a time on request and had no disposal mechanisms for them.<sup>2218</sup> However, the local MP who visited Allendale several occasions and talked to the girls, felt that ACORD "over extends its criticism beyond credibility".<sup>2219</sup>

<sup>2206</sup> 'Girls must sleep in corridors' *Herald* 30/9/66, Allendale Profile 31417.

<sup>2207</sup> Teleprinter message, CW A/K to CWHO, 3/3/66, Allendale Health F5000003629234.

<sup>2208</sup> KJ Flint, DCWO to Superintendent, 3/3/66, Allendale Health 31419.

<sup>2209</sup> Extract from report of Merv Hayes, May/June 1967, Allendale Profile 31417, p1.

<sup>2210</sup> Annual Report 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p5.

<sup>2211</sup> Annual Report 1982, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2212</sup> DEM Taylor Clinical Bacteriologist to Dr MacDougall, 2.8.68. Allendale Health 31419.

<sup>2213</sup> Human Rights Commission, 1982, Report of the Human Rights Commission on representations by the Auckland Committee on Racism and Discrimination: children and young persons homes administered by the Department of Social Welfare, p18.

<sup>2214</sup> Memo, A Frazer to Director-General, 28/3/79, Allendale Health, Archives 31436.

<sup>2215</sup> Medical Procedure 1980, Allendale Health F5000002185731.

<sup>2216</sup> Excerpt from Head Office policy, unreferenced, Nov 1982, Allendale Health F5000002386580.

<sup>2217</sup> Annual Report 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2218</sup> Child Abuse in Welfare Homes, Auckland Committee on Racism and Discrimination, February 1982, Allendale Health F5000002185731.

<sup>2219</sup> Letter, Tirikatene-Sullivan, MP to J Hough, Superintendent, Allendale 4/8/82, Allendale Complaints F5000002185731.

A 1967 inspection of Allendale Girls' Home found that the removal of shower curtains in order to ensure girls were washing themselves properly did not afford girls proper privacy.<sup>2220</sup>

The institution made use of psychiatric and psychological services although the availability of specialist assistance varied at different times. In 1980, the services of two psychologists were available and assessments were carried out on all girls.<sup>2221</sup> The psychologists also took a weekly social skills group at Allendale.<sup>2222</sup> Links included contact with the psychiatric ward at Auckland Hospital (Ward 12), including with a nurse who had previously worked at Kingslea.<sup>2223</sup>

## Psychiatric hospital placement

The files suggest ongoing close links with the psychiatric ward at Auckland hospital, although there is no mention of specific discharge from Allendale to any psychiatric facility.

In 1978 it was noted that a number of girls at Allendale had a psychiatric background and that compared with earlier years, the institution was coping with a growing number of difficult and disturbed children.<sup>2224</sup> It appears that most issues were addressed by regular onsite visits from psychologists.

Privacy Act s 29(1)(a) Affairs of another

## Staffing

There was concern about the ineffective leadership of [REDACTED] in [REDACTED] and the resulting loss of control over girls at Allendale. The Police had complained about this to the DCWO. The DCWO, Mr Flint had been called out when two girls barricaded themselves in a room.

A visit by an Inspector of the Auckland District Office in April and May of 1963 reported girls under 15 openly smoking. He concluded that there was an insufficient work programme for the girls; that the girls were pandered to with an over-emphasis on counselling; and that staff spent too much time in the staff room and not enough time with the girls. [REDACTED] was also singled out for removal, being described as "an extremely weak link".<sup>2225</sup> In regard to [REDACTED] it was concluded that she was trying to apply long-stay methods to what was a short-stay institution, and that this was inappropriate.<sup>2226</sup>

There was a staffing crisis in 1970, when the Assistant Principal and Sub-Matron left and the Principal and Matron resigned. The DWCO recommended the institution be closed rather than run under-staffed.<sup>2227</sup> This suggestion was rejected.

<sup>2220</sup> Extract from report of Merv Hayes, May/June 1967, Allendale Reports 31417.

<sup>2221</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p5

<sup>2222</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p5.

<sup>2223</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p5.

<sup>2224</sup> Annual Report 1978, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2225</sup> [REDACTED]

<sup>2226</sup> [REDACTED]

<sup>2227</sup> Memo, KJ Flint (DCWO) to Superintendent 26/6/70, CW 6/32/- Allendale Profile 31417.

The 1978 Annual Report notes that the staff:resident ratio was lower at Allendale than at any other institution but that, apart from when staff were required to staff secure, this did not present problems.<sup>2228</sup> In one incident, two staff were re-assigned to secure, leaving one staff member on the open side of the institution. That staff member had to care for 15 girls and was assaulted on one occasion.<sup>2229</sup>

For the last 9 months of 1978, Allendale operated at capacity.<sup>2230</sup> In 1979, the Principal resigned, with this loss being reportedly greatly felt by the girls.<sup>2231</sup> By the end of 1979, the pressure on staff was taking its toll in increased sick leave, although the maximum number in care during that year was 24, down from 30 in previous years.<sup>2232</sup> The amount of sick leave taken by staff remained a problem in 1980.<sup>2233</sup>

By 1981 there were 17 staff plus 2 teachers.<sup>2235</sup>

In 1980, the Principal and Assistant Principal Supervised case workers (6 and 5 workers respectively). General staff meetings were held on Mondays, RSW meetings on Thursdays and SDGS had monthly meetings. Case workers met fortnightly with Supervisors and at other times when problems arose.<sup>2236</sup> These practices, as outlined in Annual Reports, were verified by Inspections.<sup>2237</sup> All staff were allocated responsibility for working with at least one girl; including the cook and gardener.<sup>2238</sup> Each girl's case was reviewed monthly.<sup>2239</sup> The girls met weekly with the Principal and Assistant Principal and this provided a useful forum for the airing of grievances.<sup>2240</sup> Communication between staff and residents were mostly informal due to the small size of Allendale and a 1980 Inspection Report noted the close co-operative attitude between girls and staff and feelings of loyalty to each other and to the institution. The inspectors were impressed with the concern and care shown by staff towards the girls.<sup>2241</sup>

Caseloads in 1981 were 1 – 4 girls per staff member.<sup>2242</sup>

Double night cover was provided from 19xx in an attempt to lessen absconding. Night staff did most of the typing for the institution as well as assisting with other tasks such as preparing vegetables.<sup>2243</sup> Re-grading of night attendants in 1981 was unpopular with night staff, who saw it as a demotion and who were also unhappy with having to work one day shift every two weeks (known as the 15<sup>th</sup> shift). A 1981 Inspection Report noted that, as happened in other institutions, the night attendants reported sick for this day shift.<sup>2244</sup>

<sup>2228</sup> Annual Report 1978, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2229</sup> Annual Report 1978, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2230</sup> Annual Report 1978, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2231</sup> Annual Report 1979, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2232</sup> Annual Report 1979, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2233</sup> Annual Report 1980, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2235</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p1.

<sup>2236</sup> Annual Report 1980, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2237</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2238</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p5.

<sup>2239</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p5.

<sup>2240</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p2.

<sup>2241</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p2, 5.

<sup>2242</sup> Annual Report 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2243</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p6.

<sup>2244</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p6.

In the early 1980s, many existing staff had worked at Allendale for many years and the institution benefited from their experience and maturity and the stable staffing situation. Staff worked extra hours providing additional activities and programmes for the girls.<sup>2245</sup>

Throughout the late 1970s and early 1980s there were a number of Principals, and it was noted that "with these changes come individual variations in leadership styles, casework philosophy and administrative techniques."<sup>2246</sup>

By the early 1980s staff had attended training sessions at Bollard over a period of 5 weeks, for 1 ½ hours a week, as well as training session at Taranaki House. On-site training in supervision and report writing also took place.<sup>2247</sup> The staff training programme was further developed in 1983.<sup>2248</sup> In 1985 training sessions included courses on identity, sexual abuse and institutional racism.<sup>2249</sup>

The Residential Workers Manual was held at the residence but not the Social Workers Manual. Copies of relevant legislation were held, but the Public Service Regulations and State Services Act were not held. Desk files were being updated.<sup>2250</sup>

The position of Assistant Principal was vacant from May-July in 1981.<sup>2251</sup> During 1984 there were a number of staff off work with serious illness, mostly covered by relieving staff.<sup>2252</sup> 1985 was another year of staffing shortages, assisted by relief cover being available at short notice.<sup>2253</sup>

## Complaints

A father complained about his daughter's treatment at Allendale in 1965. His allegations that his daughter was served 5-day old bread and that he was unable to get a proper visiting permit were both found to have substance. Publicity about these incidents appeared in the *Sunday News* of 10 October 1965. It was hoped that the validity of the complaints would be lost in any general discrediting of the father, who admitted giving his daughter 10 shillings and telling her to write to him if she had any complaints about the home. The news reporter had also received information from an un-named former staff member, who alleged that a number of practices occurred. For example: the use of cells for 3-4 days of solitary confinement; lack of privacy in showers; confiscation of pyjamas even where a girl had not been involved in absconding; compulsory one-hour afternoon rest period in silence with no reading permitted. The DCWO noted that all of these practices took place, and that each was acceptable and "deliberately and soundly based".<sup>2254</sup>

A mother complained in 1970 about the risk her daughter was at due to repeat absconding, alleging that the department had not discharged its obligation to care for her in allowing her to run away. The mother alleged that her daughter had become sexually active while absconding and wanted to know if the department would pay to

<sup>2245</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p9.

<sup>2246</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p1

<sup>2247</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p1

<sup>2248</sup> Annual Report 1983, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2249</sup> Annual Report 1985, Allendale Reports F5000002386581.

<sup>2250</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p3.

<sup>2251</sup> Annual Report 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731

<sup>2252</sup> Annual Report 1984, Allendale Reports F5000002386581, p4.

<sup>2253</sup> Annual Report 1985, Allendale Reports F5000002386581.

<sup>2254</sup> Memo, KJ Flint, DCWO to Superintendent, 14/10/65, Allendale Complaints F5000003629234.

raise any child that was the result of her daughter becoming pregnant. She also noted the very high absconding rates at Allendale, calling them shocking and creating a great deal of worry for her when she was notified of her daughter's absence.<sup>2255</sup>

A [REDACTED] teacher who had taught part-time at Allendale for 7 weeks, complained about practices at Allendale after she voluntarily ceased employment. Her complaint sparked a Ministerial inquiry and covered, among other points, long periods of time in secure, the exclusion of some 14 year olds from school and bad staff attitudes.<sup>2256</sup> The Director's response was that [REDACTED] worked separate to the main institution and had little appreciation of how the home was run and that she had also made a number of factually incorrect statements.<sup>2257</sup>

## Schooling

Allendale did not start out with a school on site, although by the mid-1960s the need for one, or even for a part-time teacher, was apparent.<sup>2258</sup> Without a school, girls were kept busy with domestic and household duties and it is possible that some girls attended local schools, although it was not recorded. A 1967 report noted that "there is a limit to the number of times that household duties can be carried out and there is certainly a limit to the interest and value of these tasks".<sup>2259</sup>

A school room as built at Allendale during 1967. By 1976 submissions were being made for another class room and teacher.<sup>2260</sup> In 1978 the second class room was completed.<sup>2261</sup>

According to a description written in about 1980, Mataora Special School had 2 full-time teachers as well as 5 part-time specialist teachers who together made up 3/5ths of a full time teacher. The age range of residents at that time was 10-14. Girls ranged from above average to normal intelligence, as well as girls classed as mildly retarded or emotionally disturbed. The normal roll consisted of between 20-25 girls and their average length of stay was 2-3 terms.

The core curriculum was taught in large groups, with recreational and vocational subjects taught in smaller groups. The school aimed to operate like other schools in the community and the same standards of behaviour and attention to work were applied. In addition, remedial work was carried out on an individual basis. The aim was to lift student's achievement levels to those that would be acceptable in mainstream classrooms.<sup>2262</sup> At the time this report was written, girls were expected to pay for damage to or loss of school equipment out of their pocket money.

The school attempted to function as a bridging institution for return to the community; offering a credible programme that progressed girls' education while offering alternative and individually-tailored education based on recognising achievement.

<sup>2255</sup> Letter, [REDACTED] to Head Office, 4/10/70, Allendale Complaints 31417.

<sup>2256</sup> [REDACTED] to Minister of Social Welfare, 11/4/73, Allendale Secure 31417.

<sup>2257</sup> ECP Director to Director-General 18/5/73 Allendale Secure 31417.

<sup>2258</sup> Inspection Report, 23/8/66, Allendale Profile 31417.

<sup>2259</sup> Inspection Report, Mr Hayes, May/June 1967. Allendale, Profile 31417.

<sup>2260</sup> Memo, KJ Woods, Principal, to the Director, Auckland 1/9/76, Allendale Reports, 31417.

<sup>2261</sup> Annual Report 1978, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2262</sup> Mataora School description, undated, circa 1980 1/14/3, Allendale Profile F5000002388571.



Aspects of transition education attempted to introduce girls to work and/or unemployment issues.

Widespread behavioural problems within the school at Allendale in 1979 resulted in residential staff being placed in the classroom to maintain control.<sup>2263</sup> By 1980, cooperation between the school and the residence was described as non-existent, but much improved liaison and a sound schooling programme were back in place by the end of that year.

All girls in the residence attended school and had detailed programmes that linked school and residential care.<sup>2264</sup> In 1980, 4 girls attended "outside school" and in 1981 12 girls did so.<sup>2265</sup> In 1981 close links were maintained with 9 local schools with girls placed in local schools as part of pre-discharge planning to assist integration into the community.<sup>2266</sup> The Allendale school programme at this time involved a structured programme of basic school subjects in the morning, with leisure and personal skills taught in the afternoon.<sup>2267</sup>

As poor school attendance often prompted admission to Allendale, the school programme was integrated into care, with the self discipline required to improve achievement at school reinforced by residential staff.<sup>2268</sup>

The school closed in 1984 after the resignation of the Head Teacher<sup>2269</sup> and reopened in 1985 when a new teacher was appointed.<sup>2270</sup>

## Absconding

In response to high absconding rates during the early-60s, night staff were appointed at Allendale in December 1963. Although more effective at the Auckland Boys' Home, the appointment of night staff at Allendale had only a small effect on absconding rates, which were around 150 per year in 1963 and 1964.<sup>2271</sup> Allendale was an open institution – a reporter writing in 1966 commented that "there is virtually nothing to prevent the girls from walking down the winding drive and out of the front gate to freedom. Detainment depends a great deal on trust".<sup>2272</sup>

It was noted that girls were more likely than boys to abscond in groups.<sup>2273</sup> For example, the entire population of 30 girls absconded in a single incident from Allendale in 1978.<sup>2274</sup>

A second night staff member was appointed in 1976 to again address high absconding rates.<sup>2275</sup>

<sup>2263</sup> Annual Report 1979, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2264</sup> Annual Report 1980, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2265</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p1; Annual Report 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2266</sup> Annual Report 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2267</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p7.

<sup>2268</sup> Annual Report 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2269</sup> Annual Report 1984, Allendale Reports F5000002386581, p4.

<sup>2270</sup> Annual Report 1985, Allendale Reports F5000002386581, p3.

<sup>2271</sup> Memo, Absconding Record at Boys' Home and Girls' Home, KJ Flint, DCWO, to Superintendent, 16/5/66, Allendale Profile 31417.

<sup>2272</sup> Girls must sleep in corridors' *Herald* 30/9/66, Allendale Profile 31417

<sup>2273</sup> 'Girls' Home Frequently Crowded' *Auckland Star* 29/9/66. Allendale Profile 31417.

<sup>2274</sup> Annual Report 1978, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

Figures supplied to Head Office showed a high number of abscondings in 1979 (66), dropping to around 20 in both 1980 and 1981, and rising again to 41 for both 1983 and 1983.<sup>2276</sup>

The Annual Report notes 25 abscondings in 1981, which was an increase on previous years.<sup>2277</sup> The absconding pattern shifted from that of the 1980s where larger group abscondings were more common. During 1981, girls were more likely to abscond alone or in pairs. They were also more likely to ring the residence and ask to be returned. This trend, combined with further phone calls from old girls' families or neighbours, meant less involvement by the police in returning absconders.<sup>2278</sup> The pattern was thought to be due to the implementation of the extended care programme, where case workers also visited the home to enlist parent support and also to provide support to parents.<sup>2279</sup>

A total of 15 girls absconded in 1984, most more than once. Of these, 8 abscondings took place when girls were on leave.<sup>2280</sup>

## Secure care

Allendale was essentially an open institution, with high steel mesh fences on one side and at the back of the property being described as "a small obstacle to an active girl".<sup>2281</sup>

However, there were three "isolation rooms" set apart from the main accommodation. These were made of concrete, with steel doors and observation panels.<sup>2282</sup> These secure rooms existed from the time Allendale opened.

The secure facilities were used to isolate "temporarily intractable" girls from the main group so that the group's training could continue. They were also used for the short-term reception of girls who were at risk of absconding.<sup>2283</sup>

In 1961, girls in secure were provided with reading material and were allowed to exercise in the afternoons under supervision with other residents. Meals were the same as those provided in the open wing. Girls bathed every morning. Details of behaviour in secure, including the use of wire tension springs from mattresses as self propelled projectiles, or to scratch obscenities on walls or glass or pick locks was given in 1961 in response to questions from the Superintendent.<sup>2284</sup> At this time a complaint was made about a girl being held in secure for 3 weeks. The length of her detention was explained by Court proceedings, a delay when the girl's mother died, and the need for secure care given that she had absconded 6 times in 3 weeks.<sup>2285</sup>

<sup>2275</sup> Memo, KJ Woods, Principal, to Director, Auckland, 1/9/76, Allendale Reports 31417.

<sup>2276</sup> Analysis of Absconding 1979-83, Appendix II, Allendale Incidents, F5000002186500.

<sup>2277</sup> Annual Report 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2278</sup> Annual Report 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2279</sup> Annual Report 1982, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p3.

<sup>2280</sup> Annual Report 1984, Allendale Reports F5000002386581.

<sup>2281</sup> 'Girls must sleep in corridors' *Herald* 30/9/66, Allendale Profile 31417.

<sup>2282</sup> 'Girls must sleep in corridors' *Herald* 30/9/66, Allendale Profile 31417.

<sup>2283</sup> Letter EC Puddick, Director to Director-General 18/5/73, Allendale Secure 31417.

<sup>2284</sup> Correspondence, DCWO Auckland, Superintendent and Principal Allendale, 13/4/61 and 19.4.61 Allendale Secure 31417.

<sup>2285</sup> Correspondence, DCWO Auckland, Superintendent and Principal Allendale, 13/4/61 and 19.4.61 Allendale Secure 31417.

In 1973, the Allendale Girls' Home's policy was to use secure care for the benefit of the child concerned, who needed removal from the group, in the interests of their progress. It was stated that secure was not to be used as a punishment.<sup>2286</sup>

Secure facilities were upgraded in 1976.<sup>2287</sup>

In 1978, there were no dedicated secure staff, leading to shortages when staff were deployed to secure.<sup>2288</sup> However, at this time secure was only used when there was no alternative. It was also used as a short "time-out" facility<sup>2289</sup> and to take temporary secure care overflows from Bollard.<sup>2290</sup> During 1980, this overflow function was the main use of secure.<sup>2291</sup> Around this time, an inspection report found use of Allendale secure by Bollard as "occasional" with time out periods for Allendale residents of about 1 hour the predominant use.<sup>2292</sup> However, statistics supplied showed the average length of stay to be around 2 days from 1979-1983.<sup>2293</sup>

In 1980, there was still no dedicated secure staff.<sup>2294</sup> In 1981, the Principal approved all secure admissions.<sup>2295</sup> An inspection report found guidelines were available to all staff and records kept, although more detail could have been provided, for example of the reason for admission.<sup>2296</sup>

By the early 1980s, the 3 secure rooms at Allendale were described as being "dreary and cheerless with limited natural light and no view".<sup>2297</sup> They were hot and stuffy in summer and cold in winter.<sup>2298</sup> Girls ate in their rooms unless sufficient staff permitted communal eating. Rooms did not have toilets and at night girls had the choice of using a bucket in their room or ringing a bell for night attendants.<sup>2299</sup> Exercise was provided for 2 ½ hours daily instead of the regulated minimum of 1 hour a day.<sup>2300</sup> An inspection report found that record-keeping and other procedures were adequate but that upgrading would be necessary if the rooms were continued to be used so that girls would not be deprived of sensory stimulation.<sup>2301</sup> The unit was upgraded in 1983.<sup>2302</sup>

Secure admissions were primarily for acts of verbal or physical aggression or for abscondings.<sup>2303</sup> The average length of stay was 2 days, 4 hours in 1982 and in 1984<sup>2304</sup>, rising to 2 days, 20 hours in 1985.<sup>2305</sup>

<sup>2286</sup> Lallu, H (1979) *The use of secure units in Social Welfare Department Institutions*, unpublished Masters thesis, Victoria University of Wellington, 45.

<sup>2287</sup> Annual Report 1976, Allendale Reports 31417.

<sup>2288</sup> Annual Report 1978, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2289</sup> Annual Report 1978, Allendale Reports F5000002185731; Lallu, H (1979) *The use of secure units in Social Welfare Department Institutions*, unpublished Masters thesis, Victoria University of Wellington.

<sup>2290</sup> Annual Report 1979, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2291</sup> Annual Report 1980, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2292</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p4.

<sup>2293</sup> Analysis of Secure Care, Appendix 1, Allendale Secure, F5000002186500.

<sup>2294</sup> Annual Report 1980, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2295</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p4.

<sup>2296</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p4.

<sup>2297</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p2.

<sup>2298</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p2.

<sup>2299</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p4: <http://www.oldfriends.co.nz>, accessed 20/10/06, Allendale Profile

<sup>2300</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p4.

<sup>2301</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p2,4.

<sup>2302</sup> Annual Report 1983, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2303</sup> See, for example, Annual Report 1982, Allendale Reports F5000002185731; of 131 admissions, 57 for verbal or physical aggression, 36 for absconding.

A visitor's report in 1982 suggested the frequent use of secure as a short-term 'time-out' facility be reviewed. The report found high usage and suggested staff be trained in alternative methods of discipline.<sup>2306</sup> The same report suggested changes including the replacement of a painted over window pane with clear glass, additional activities, communal eating and clearer recording of the use of secure as a time-out facility. It was also noted that as of 31 August 1982, toilet buckets were no longer to be left in rooms overnight. The secure unit was unheated at this time.

One persistent absconder affected by glue sniffing stayed for 21 days in secure in 1983.<sup>2307</sup> During that year, a number of girls were housed in Allendale secure while alterations were undertaken at Bollard secure. Twelve girls also stayed at Allendale secure during their settling in period before transfer to Te Atatu Group Home.<sup>2308</sup>

By 1988, departmental policy was not to place returned absconders in secure automatically as it was often inappropriate.<sup>2309</sup>

## Discipline

Discipline was described as firm in the mid-1960s although there is little on file about methods employed.<sup>2310</sup> The removal of privileges operated as a form of discipline.

National guidelines issued in 1982 required records to be kept of all disciplinary practices and noted that administrative directives were being formulated.<sup>2311</sup>

No other information relating to discipline was found on file.

## Physical punishment

Apart from the evidence of a woman who was housemaster at Allendale in 1965 of a girl who was dragged by the hair to secure care<sup>2312</sup> nothing was found on file about the use of physical punishment at Allendale.

No corporal punishment was administered at Allendale Girls' Home in 1981 and therefore no punishment register kept.<sup>2313</sup> Head Office national directions in November 1982 required the application of corporal punishment to be recorded.<sup>2314</sup>

<sup>2304</sup> Annual Report 1982, Allendale Reports F5000002185731. Annual Report 1984, Allendale Reports F5000002386581.

<sup>2305</sup> Annual Report 1985, Allendale Reports F5000002386581, p3.

<sup>2306</sup> Visit to Allendale, 8/9/82, Allendale Secure F5000002185731.

<sup>2307</sup> Annual Report 1983, Allendale Reports F5000002386581.

<sup>2308</sup> Annual Report 1983, Allendale Reports F5000002386581.

<sup>2309</sup> Circular Memo 1988/106, 19/8/88, Allendale Secure F5000002388055.

<sup>2310</sup> 'Girls must sleep in corridors' *Herald* 30/9/66, Allendale Profile 31417.

<sup>2311</sup> BM Manchester for Director-General, November 1982, Allendale Discipline/Punishment F5000002386580.

<sup>2312</sup> Auckland Committee on Racism and Discrimination (1979) *Social Welfare Children's Homes*, p 21.

<sup>2313</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p3.

<sup>2314</sup> BM Manchester for Director-General, November 1982, Allendale Discipline/Punishment F5000002386580.

## Drugs, alcohol and tattoos

Alcohol, smoking and heavy make-up were banned at Allendale in the mid-1960s.<sup>2315</sup>

In a reported incident in March 1980, a girl was given 10mg of valium to calm her down. She was in secure when the medication was administered, and after a period of agitation she "sat on the bed and stared blankly towards the door."<sup>2316</sup>

A 1980 Inspection Report noted that tattoos were closely watched for and dealt with immediately. Treatment from a plastic surgeon at Auckland Hospital was available.<sup>2317</sup> The inspection found health records well maintained. At this time the doctor visited twice weekly and dental care was well provided for.<sup>2318</sup>

There were 8 admissions to secure at Allendale Girls' Home in 1984 for "sniffing, drugs, etc."<sup>2319</sup>

## Smoking

Girls under 15 were found to be openly smoking at Allendale in 1963.<sup>2320</sup> Smoking was banned at Allendale in 1966.<sup>2321</sup>

National policy in 1988 was to enforce the law prohibiting smoking for those under 16 and for principals to exercise their discretion in permitting smoking for 16 and 17 year olds, including any restrictions. In general smoking was to be discouraged because it was a health hazard. Where permitted it should not take place in bedrooms, be confined to small areas and be supervised. Where prohibited staff should not smoke in front of residents.<sup>2322</sup>

## Contact with field social workers

No information was found on file in relation to contact with field social workers until 1976.

In 1976, the Principal noted that 50% of girls returned to Allendale, and commented that better links with Field Social Workers may address the issue of poor placements and inadequate follow up once a girl was in a placement.<sup>2323</sup>

<sup>2315</sup> 'Girls must sleep in corridors' *Herald* 30/9/66, Allendale Profile 31417.

<sup>2316</sup> Letter, LA Hussey, Matron Allendale to Regional Manager, Social Work and Residential Services 29/3/80, Allendale Incidents, F5000002388571.

<sup>2317</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p8.

<sup>2318</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p8.

<sup>2319</sup> Annual Report 1984, Allendale Reports F5000002386581, p3.

<sup>2320</sup> Report (author unknown), April/May 1963, Allendale Profile 31417.

<sup>2321</sup> 'Girls must sleep in corridors' *Herald* 30/9/66, Allendale Profile 31417.

<sup>2322</sup> Circular Memo 1988/106, 29/7/88, Allendale Drug Use F5000002388055.

<sup>2323</sup> Memo, KJ Woods, Principal, to Director, Auckland, 1/9/76, Allendale Reports 31417.

In 1978, the Principal suggested that the larger districts appoint a liaison officer to visit or communicate weekly with Allendale.<sup>2324</sup> Regionalisation had improved liaison by the end of 1979.<sup>2325</sup> At Allendale, this was a positive development, although it weakened communication with Bollard, resulting in a drop in the flow of admissions from Bollard to Allendale.<sup>2326</sup>

Relations and liaison with districts was described as good in an Inspection Report of 1981, although Field Social Workers were sometimes tardy in supplying background information.<sup>2327</sup> In 1982, links were said to be good, with two Field Social Workers attending a camp of girls from Allendale.<sup>2328</sup>

## Contact with community

As well as contact with families, and with local schools, Allendale had a number of links with the local community. In 1981 groups coming into Allendale included the Mayoress Committee, Maori Women's Welfare League, a local church group and the Auckland Drama Society. On site classes in puppetry and jazzercise were also available. An off site programme also ran at a number of places including John Waititi Marae. In 1982 there were weekly sports events with Marcellin College.<sup>2329</sup>

## Visiting Committee

From 1980 - 1982, there was no contact at all with the Visiting Committee.<sup>2330</sup> Contact was re-established in mid-1983 when a new committee was appointed and began to visit regularly.<sup>2331</sup> In 1984, regular visits were made, but two of the three members resigned at the end of the year due to other commitments.<sup>2332</sup> In 1985, only one of the two appointments made turned up at the residence.<sup>2333</sup>

In 1986 and 1987 the Chairperson of the Visiting Committee visited once a month, but trouble was still experienced in getting the third member to attend.<sup>2334</sup> The Annual Report of the Visiting Committee in 1987 expressed concern at the decision to close Allendale in 1988, and noted the hard work of staff and their concern for the welfare of girls at the Home.<sup>2335</sup>

<sup>2324</sup> Annual Report 1978 Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2325</sup> Annual Report 1979, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2326</sup> Annual Report 1979, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2327</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p6.

<sup>2328</sup> Annual Report 1982, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2329</sup> Annual Report 1982, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p4.

<sup>2330</sup> Annual Report 1980, Allendale Reports F5000002185731; Annual Report 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p 6; Annual Report 1982, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2331</sup> Annual Report 1983, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2332</sup> Annual Report 1984, Allendale Reports F5000002386581, p8.

<sup>2333</sup> Annual Report 1985, Allendale Reports F5000002386581, p8.

<sup>2334</sup> Visiting Committees, Annual Reports, 1986, Allendale Reports F5000006661405; Visiting Committees, Annual Reports, 1987, Allendale Reports F5000006661405.

<sup>2335</sup> Report, Visiting Committee, 30/6/87, Allendale Reports, F5000006661405.

## Contact with families

Girls were encouraged to spend weekends at home.<sup>2336</sup> After the first month at Allendale, home leave was fortnightly.<sup>2337</sup> In 1985 there was day home leave initially, followed by overnight leave 3 weeks later and weekend leave 3 weekly provided there were no problems.<sup>2338</sup>

Caseworkers incorporated home visits into their practice in 1982.<sup>2339</sup>

## Preparation for discharge and after-care arrangements

The Principal noted a number of concerns with inadequate discharge arrangements in 1976, noting a high rate of returning girls and suggesting better liaison with districts, particularly in follow up care.<sup>2340</sup>

A pre-discharge team was formed in 1985 under the supervision of the Principal.<sup>2341</sup>

<sup>2336</sup> Inspection Report, circa 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731, p5.

<sup>2337</sup> Annual Report 1981, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2338</sup> Annual Report 1985, Allendale Reports F5000002386581.

<sup>2339</sup> Annual Report 1982, Allendale Reports F5000002185731.

<sup>2340</sup> Memo, KJ Woods, Principal to Director, Auckland, 1/9/76 Allendale Reports 31417.

<sup>2341</sup> Annual Report 1985, Allendale Reports F5000002386581.

Chapter

8

# Miramar Girls' Home

## Physical Description

Miramar Girls' Home was a district home that provided short- to medium-term care and assessment for girls on remand or in need of shelter from the Lower North Island.<sup>2342</sup>

Located at 41 Camperdown Road, Miramar, Wellington in a former hotel built in 1907, Miramar was a two-storied building with "fairly spacious grounds" that included a mini-gymnasium, a small Para swimming pool<sup>2343</sup> and a games room<sup>2344</sup>.

An opening date for the institution could not be found, but there is mention of a receiving home for girls in Wellington in the early-1950s.<sup>2345</sup> In 1973, Miramar (then called Wellington Girls' Home)<sup>2346</sup> had a capacity of 32 open beds, 4 secure and 2 semi-secure rooms.<sup>2347</sup> From the early 1980s, the number of open beds increased to 36.<sup>2348</sup> In common with other department institutions, except for the secure unit, the Home was "wide open with no locked doors."<sup>2349</sup>

The secure unit was described in a 1981 newspaper article as consisting of small "austere" grey rooms with a window, a bed, basin, toilet, piped music from an intercom system<sup>2350</sup> and a blackboard in each room.<sup>2351</sup> The secure unit also

<sup>2342</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 6.

<sup>2343</sup> "The girls say Miramar home is a good place", Eastern Suburbs News 1/6/83, Miramar Profile F5000002186504. Photos of the interior and exterior of the building were provided in a pamphlet given to resident's parents. See Pamphlet Miramar Girls' Home, undated, author unknown, Miramar Profile F5000001594224.

<sup>2344</sup> Code of Practice, A.J Morrison to the Director, Wellington 10/4/85, Miramar Profile F5000002186503.

<sup>2345</sup> See, for example, Annual Report to Parliament, Department of Education, Child Welfare Division, Appendix to the Journals, 1952 – C-G vol II. This profile focuses on the period that the Home was called Miramar Girls' Home.

<sup>2346</sup> Miramar was also referred to as Strathmore Girls' Home. There was another Strathmore residence located in Christchurch. See "Four walls almost send girl 'loony'" Christchurch Star 26/4/78, Miramar Secure F50000032995.

<sup>2347</sup> O.T Ryan, Principal memo to contributing districts 12/7/73, Miramar Profile F5000001594224.

<sup>2348</sup> Institutional Statistics 1984 Report, M.P Doolan, Director Residential Services 4/1184, Miramar Admissions F5000002186501, Appendix C.

<sup>2349</sup> O.T Ryan, Principal memo to contributing districts 12/7/73, Miramar Profile F5000001594224.

<sup>2350</sup> "A homestead for mind clearing", The Dominion 20/2/81, Miramar Profile F5000003771104.

<sup>2351</sup> "The girls say Miramar home is a good place", Eastern Suburbs News 1/6/83, Miramar Profile F5000002186504.



consisted of a shower, bathroom and spartanly furnished dayroom<sup>2352</sup> with easy chairs and magazines.<sup>2353</sup>

A hostel for older girls was in operation in Wellington since at least 1954,<sup>2354</sup> The hostel was located on the second floor of the building in a space that was previously staff quarters.<sup>2355</sup> The hostel provided 6 beds for girls working outside the Home or attending local schools.<sup>2356</sup> In 1984 the hostel was closed and the facility was used as a "privilege area".<sup>2357</sup>

Miramar had its own two-teacher school (Aurora School) next to the main residential building<sup>2358</sup> with two classrooms of "modern design".<sup>2359</sup> The school was described as well maintained in 1984, and was undergoing a number of alterations including work towards a school library.<sup>2360</sup>

The main building was repainted and in the process of being internally decorated in 1981.<sup>2361</sup> Approval was given in 1982 to build an outside room in order to expand the activities programme.<sup>2362</sup> The Principal noted in 1982 that Miramar was endeavouring to set aside an "admission bedroom" for night admissions.<sup>2363</sup>

A 1983 newspaper article described the home as being "like a friendly hostel", with "no bars, no barbed wire; not even a gate across the entrance".<sup>2364</sup> The reporter noted bedrooms had "a couple of neat beds and some pictures on the wall just like any girl's bedroom anywhere in New Zealand".<sup>2365</sup> A 1981 article noted that some residents shared rooms.<sup>2366</sup>

In 1983 the Visiting Committee described Miramar differently, stating the physical environment was "oppressive" and residents did "not have enough space in both the physical and mental concept".<sup>2367</sup> They noted a lack of recreation and "time out" facilities, and suggested the addition of a prefab or similar.<sup>2368</sup> A new prefab was added in 1985<sup>2369</sup> to provide more space and allow better supervision for evening programmes.<sup>2370</sup>

<sup>2352</sup> "A homestead for mind clearing", The Dominion 20/2/81, Miramar Profile F5000003771104.

<sup>2353</sup> "The girls say Miramar home is a good place", Eastern Suburbs News 1/6/83, Miramar Profile F5000002186504.

<sup>2354</sup> Annual Report to Parliament, Department of Education, Child Welfare Division, Appendix to the Journals, 1954 – C-H12 vol II; Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 8.

<sup>2355</sup> D.J Manley, Assistant Principal and A.J Morrison, Principal to Director, Wellington 14/5/84 Miramar Profile F5000002186500.

<sup>2356</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 8.

<sup>2357</sup> Annual Report 1984 Miramar Reports F5000002186503, p 2.

<sup>2358</sup> Code of Practice, A.J Morrison to the Director, Wellington 10/4/85, Miramar Profile F5000002186503.

<sup>2359</sup> "The girls say Miramar home is a good place", Eastern Suburbs News 1/6/83, Miramar Profile F5000002186504.

<sup>2360</sup> Annual Report 1984 Aurora School Report, Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 4.

<sup>2361</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2362</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 9.

<sup>2363</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 9.

<sup>2364</sup> "The girls say Miramar home is a good place", Eastern Suburbs News 1/6/83, Miramar Profile F5000002186504.

<sup>2365</sup> "The girls say Miramar home is a good place", Eastern Suburbs News 1/6/83, Miramar Profile F5000002186504.

<sup>2366</sup> "A homestead for mind clearing", The Dominion 20/2/81, Miramar Profile F5000003771104.

<sup>2367</sup> Letter from P.F Boshier, Chairman of the Visiting Committee, to V. Young, Minister of Social Welfare 23/11/83, Miramar Girls' Home Visiting Committee F5000005659655.

<sup>2368</sup> Letter from P.F Boshier, Chairman of the Visiting Committee, to V. Young, Minister of Social Welfare 23/11/83, Miramar Girls' Home Visiting Committee F5000005659655.

<sup>2369</sup> Annual Report 1985 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2370</sup> Annual Report 1984 Miramar Reports F5000002186503, p 2.

Funding for a gymnasium complex was requested in 1983<sup>2371</sup> but the request was denied due to site restrictions and the "limited life" of the Girls' Home building.<sup>2372</sup> In 1983 a car and van were acquired for the Home.<sup>2373</sup>

In 1984, issues with surveillance and security on the property were raised and a number of problematic "blind spots" in the grounds were identified, in particular the rear of the secure unit which was out of sight from the main building.<sup>2374</sup> An upgrade of the security, surveillance and monitoring system was approved in May 1984.<sup>2375</sup>

In 1986 a restructure of the Home was proposed, as the average roll was low, ranging from 20-25 girls compared to the maximum capacity of 36 beds (plus 4 secure). The floor plans of the existing facility were included in the proposal.<sup>2376</sup>

The number of beds was gradually reduced from January 1988<sup>2377</sup> before the scheduled closure of the Home at the end of March 1989.<sup>2378</sup>

## Resident profile

The Girls' Home provided for the reception and short-term care of 12-16 year olds who were in the custody of the Department and for whom a community living situation was impractical.<sup>2379</sup>

The main contributing districts were Wellington, Porirua and Lower Hutt<sup>2380</sup> although girls were admitted from Wairoa, New Plymouth, Palmerston North, Hastings, and Napier, and as far south as Blenheim and Nelson.<sup>2381</sup>

In 1983 the Visiting Committee commented that a number of problems at Miramar resulted from the mix of Youth Justice and Care and Protection girls at the Home, and suggested that dividing girls according to their status would make the job of the staff easier.<sup>2382</sup>

<sup>2371</sup> Memo from A.J Morrison, Principal to the Director, Wellington 3/5/83, Miramar Profile F5000002186504.

<sup>2372</sup> Memo from G.A Grainger for the Director-General to the Director, Wellington 16/9/83, Miramar Profile F5000002186504.

<sup>2373</sup> Report by D.H Greenwood, Social Welfare Cadet to Principal, Miramar 17/2/83, Miramar Reports F5000002186504, p 5.

<sup>2374</sup> D.J Manley, Assistant Principal and A.J Morrison, Principal to Director, Wellington 14/5/84 Miramar Profile F5000002186500. For more details see Miramar Secure section..

<sup>2375</sup> Memo M.P Doolan, for the Director-General to the Director, Wellington 29/5/84, Miramar Profile F5000002186500.

<sup>2376</sup> Memo from D. Waaka, Senior Residential Social Worker, Miramar Girls' Home 13/10/1986, Miramar Profile F5000006089634.

<sup>2377</sup> Wellington Girls' Home 1988/89 Management Plan, Miramar Profile F5000001594224.

<sup>2378</sup> Letter from Mr P Swain for the Assistant Director-General to Mr G McCrae 14/11/88, Miramar Reports.

<sup>2379</sup> Wellington Girls' Home Role and Functions, undated, author unknown, Miramar Profile

F5000002368864.

<sup>2380</sup> Miramar Girls' Home admission statistics, author unknown, circa February 1979, Miramar Admissions F5000003771104.

<sup>2381</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 2.

<sup>2382</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report to March 1983, Dept of Education file, Miramar Reports, p 6.

It was noted that at the start of 1984 the Girls' Home had been full, and social workers were concerned that Miramar was at times unable to admit young people requiring short-term institutional accommodation, and some girls between 14 and 16 years had been declined admission.<sup>2383</sup> In response, the Principal commented some admissions had been "delayed" because the institution was full, "resisted" due to lack of planning for the admission, or "found to be totally inappropriate" due to reasons such as age, serious psychiatric conditions and involvement in serious offending.<sup>2384</sup>

In 1985 the Visiting Committee noted most residents were there for Care and Protection reasons, and comparatively few were in the Home because of criminal offending.<sup>2385</sup>

By 1986 Miramar was often operating at less than full capacity. Although Miramar had capacity for 40 residents, there were between 20 and 25 girls on the roll.<sup>2386</sup>

## Length of stay

In 1972 the average length of stay was 35 days, with few girls staying beyond three months.<sup>2387</sup> The next available figures indicate that average stay rose to 57 days in 1977<sup>2388</sup> and then decreased in the late 1970s. In 1981 it was noted some girls stayed past the average 3 months due to special needs and delays in finding placements in work training programmes.<sup>2389</sup>

By 1982 the average length of stay had risen to just over 60 days.<sup>2390</sup> This increase was attributed to the extension of programmes in which girls were placed in flatting or semi-flatting situations and continuing to be supported by the Home.<sup>2391</sup>

The length of stay in 1984 decreased to an average of 50 days<sup>2392</sup> which was partially attributed to the closure of the Hostel.<sup>2393</sup> Delays were experienced in discharges to long-term institutions, especially during the Christmas holidays.<sup>2394</sup> In a 1984 it was noted that the Girls' Home had a consistently longer average stay

<sup>2383</sup> Memo from J.R Cody, Social Work Advisor to Director, Wanganui and Wellington Principals, circa 18/5/84, Miramar Admissions F5000002186500.

<sup>2384</sup> Memo from J.R Cody, Social Work Advisor to Director, Wanganui and Wellington Principals, circa 18/5/84, Miramar Admissions F5000002186500.

<sup>2385</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report 1985, Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 5.

<sup>2386</sup> Memo from D. Waaka, Senior Residential Social Worker, Miramar Girls' Home 13/10/1986, Miramar Profile F5000006089634.

<sup>2387</sup> O.T Ryan, Principal memo to contributing districts 12/7/73, Miramar Profile F5000001594224.

<sup>2388</sup> Miramar Girls' Home admission statistics, author unknown, circa February 1979, Miramar Admissions F5000003771104.

<sup>2389</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2390</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 7.

<sup>2391</sup> Memo, J.A Blair for the Director General to Director, Wellington 5/08/83 Miramar Reports, F5000001615646. Appendices containing figures on absconding and length of stay are missing from this report.

<sup>2392</sup> Annual Report 1984 Miramar Reports F5000002186503, Appendix C.

<sup>2393</sup> Annual Report 1984 Miramar Reports F5000002186503, p 3.

<sup>2394</sup> Annual Report 1984 Miramar Reports F5000002186503, p 3.

compared to other national institutions.<sup>2395</sup> In 1985 the average length of stay had further decreased to 40 days.<sup>2396</sup>

### Admissions and occupancy

Figures from 1976 to 1982 indicate that admissions gradually decreased from 244 admissions in 1976<sup>2397</sup> to a low of 152 admissions in 1982<sup>2398</sup>. In 1985 however, 226 girls were admitted to Miramar which was considered high.<sup>2399</sup> The Principal commented that the changes in the Child and Young Person's Act could "only necessitate further admissions".<sup>2400</sup>

Admissions were reduced from January 1988 in preparation for the closure of the Home.<sup>2401</sup>

Occupancy figures provided from 1979 to 1985 indicate that the average daily number of occupied beds gradually increased, from 15 in 1979<sup>2402</sup> to a peak of 21 in 1982<sup>2403</sup>. Daily occupancy rates then appeared to stabilise to an average of 18 occupied beds per year.<sup>2404</sup> Nominal roll figures were also provided and followed a similar pattern. The two figures differed slightly as the nominal roll accounted for girls on home leave, attending Aurora School from home, and those who had left the residence but continued to receive support.<sup>2405</sup>

## Programmes and care

### Admission procedures and policy

In 1973 it was noted that residents spent at least two weeks in the Home before being admitted to the school, during which time medical examinations and "other necessary assessments" were made, as well as basic work training.<sup>2406</sup>

According to a 1981 newspaper article, on admission girls were spoken to at length about why they were at the Girls' Home and what they could expect while living there. Rules about pocket money, clothes, and smoking were discussed, as well as the two basic rules "stay and be good".<sup>2407</sup> Girls were also provided with an

<sup>2395</sup> Institutional Statistics 1984 Report, M.P Doolan, Director Residential Services 4/1184, Miramar Admissions F5000002186501.

<sup>2396</sup> Annual Report 1985 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2397</sup> Miramar Girls' Home admission statistics, author unknown, circa February 1979, Miramar Admissions F5000003771104.

<sup>2398</sup> Annual Report 1983 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, Appendix A. See also Admissions to D.S.W Institutions 1976-1983, Miramar Admissions F5000002186500.

<sup>2399</sup> Annual Report 1985 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2400</sup> Annual Report 1985 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2401</sup> A Whitmore, Principal to District Directors 24/12/87, Miramar Admissions F5000005659654.

<sup>2402</sup> Admissions, Absondings, Nominal Roll and Occupied Beds figures for all institutions, undated, author unknown, Miramar Admissions F5000002388341.

<sup>2403</sup> Admissions to DSW Institutions 1976-1983, author unknown, undated, Miramar Admissions F5000002186500.

<sup>2404</sup> Annual Report 1984 Miramar Reports F5000002186503, Appendix B.

<sup>2405</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 7. For the Department's definition of occupancy and nominal usage rates see Institutional Statistics 1984 Report, M.P Doolan, Director Residential Services 4/1184, Miramar Admissions F5000002186501.

<sup>2406</sup> O.T Ryan, Principal memo to contributing districts 12/7/73, Miramar Profile F5000001594224.

<sup>2407</sup> "A homestead for mind clearing", The Dominion 20/2/81, Miramar Profile F5000003771104.

introductory booklet setting out their rights and the rules of the institution.<sup>2408</sup> According to a 1983 prospectus, the aim on admission was to "provide [a girl with] a warm and relaxed atmosphere which will enable her to settle into the residence" which included informing girls of who their Residential Social Worker would be, and placing each resident "under the wing of a caring peer".<sup>2409</sup>

In 1983, the Visiting Committee were concerned about Police bringing girls to the Home under "questionable authority" and with insufficient background information.<sup>2410</sup> This complaint was acted on by the Minister and the situation was noted to have improved.<sup>2411</sup>

A document (circa 1980s) set out the admission, liaison and discharge procedures at Miramar.<sup>2412</sup> A 1988 memorandum further outlined procedures for planned and unplanned admissions, both of which were to involve a case conference and ongoing progress reports.<sup>2413</sup> There was an expectation that field social work staff would ensure that residents were adequately clothed on admission.

### Programmes and casework

The institution provided a short-term readjustment programme to return girls in their care to the community or long-term care.<sup>2414</sup>

According to a 1981 report, casework was under the overall control of the Assistant Principal<sup>2415</sup> and residential social workers were grouped into 3 social work teams, with formal and informal supervision periods scheduled for each team.<sup>2416</sup> Casework, recreation, social development and work experience were shared between the school and residence in a 'team approach'.<sup>2417</sup>

In 1982 an objective of the Girls' Home was to provide assessment of girls' social, emotional, educational and vocational needs, to establish a treatment programme and to review programme effectiveness regularly.<sup>2418</sup> Programmes included group care and individual treatment<sup>2419</sup> and aimed to completely involve the resident.<sup>2420</sup>

A visiting social welfare cadet noted in 1983 that case work was taken very seriously at Miramar.<sup>2421</sup> Personal plans were made for each resident and discussed in case conferences with social workers, parents and the residential social worker. It was noted however, that often girls felt they had not been listened to and had little say in their future, which was partially attributed to conflict or tension in case conferences. The cadet further observed that any negative views of case work from residents

<sup>2408</sup> Information booklet for new admissions, date and author unknown, Miramar Profile F5000001594224.

<sup>2409</sup> Miramar Prospectus 1983 Section C Objective 1, author unknown, Miramar Reports F5000002186504.

<sup>2410</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report to March 1983, Dept of Education file, Miramar Reports, p 5.

<sup>2411</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report to March 1983, Dept of Education file, Miramar Reports, p 5.

<sup>2412</sup> Miramar Girls' Home Admission, Liaison and Discharge Procedures, undated, author unknown, Miramar Admissions F5000003771104.

<sup>2413</sup> L Hartley, Senior Social Worker to Assistant Director Social Services 1/11/88, Miramar Admissions F5000005659654.

<sup>2414</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 1.

<sup>2415</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 2.

<sup>2416</sup> A.J Morrison, Principal to Director, Wellington 27/6/84, Miramar Staffing F5000002186500.

<sup>2417</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 2.

<sup>2418</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2419</sup> Miramar Prospectus 1983 Aims and Objectives, author unknown, Miramar Reports F5000002186504.

<sup>2420</sup> Miramar Prospectus 1983 Aurora School Objectives, author unknown, Miramar Reports F5000002186504.

<sup>2421</sup> Report by D.H Greenwood, Social Welfare Cadet to Principal, Miramar 17/2/83, Miramar Reports F5000002186504, p 3.

resulted from misunderstandings about their personal plan, which could happen when the residential social worker was away or had a heavy case load.<sup>2422</sup>

In 1987 the Principal proposed a shift from extended care to a model of short-term, time limited, task-centred care, and it was noted that casework would not be provided for short term placements.<sup>2423</sup> The paper also set out Miramar's commitment to a bi-cultural perspective.<sup>2424</sup>

A 1988 memorandum set out the expected casework procedures for district staff, which included a formal case discussion taking place within 7 days of admission, and the assignment of a casework team to the resident within 24 hours. Residents were assigned a team of 4 social workers, with one assuming the primary role.<sup>2425</sup>

In 1987 the Principal stated that programmes aimed to "foster independence" in residents, and programmes provided for both Youth Justice and Care and Protection residents were outlined.<sup>2426</sup> At this time programmes included an educational programme, sex and health education, home economics/home management, a pre-employment and work exploration programme and leisure time activities.<sup>2427</sup> A cultural enrichment programme was also provided and involved a variety of cultural groups, including Taha Maori.<sup>2428</sup>

In 1988 it was noted that in addition to 3 programmes - cultural development and awareness, life and social skills, and work skills and experience - an educational assessment and individual teaching programme provided additional assistance to girls deficient in basic educational skills.<sup>2429</sup>

Girls received weekly pocket money which was paid into a personal account for them, and the amount varied according to age.<sup>2430</sup> Residents had to put in a request to their residential social worker if they wished to spend their pocket money.<sup>2431</sup> Girls on weekend or day leave from the Home were given money for all return fares and part of their pocket money for spending.<sup>2432</sup>

## Recreation

In 1973 residents took part in a number of recreational activities outside of the home, such as swimming, educational visits, local softball and netball competitions. The Home provided a trampoline, table tennis, radiogram, snooker table, go-cart, etc, and other activities included basic dress-making.<sup>2433</sup> "Fee for service" personnel were employed to teach programmes.<sup>2434</sup>

<sup>2422</sup> Report by D.H Greenwood, Social Welfare Cadet to Principal, Miramar 17/2/83, Miramar Reports F5000002186504, p 3.

<sup>2423</sup> Discussion paper, A Whitmore, Principal 15/6/87, Miramar Admissions F5000003771098.

<sup>2424</sup> Discussion paper, A Whitmore, Principal 15/6/87, Miramar Admissions F5000003771098.

<sup>2425</sup> L Hartley, Senior Social Worker to District Office social work staff 5/2/88. Miramar Admissions F5000001594224.

<sup>2426</sup> Discussion paper, A Whitmore, Principal 15/6/87, Miramar Admissions, F5000003771098.

<sup>2427</sup> Discussion paper, A Whitmore, Principal 15/6/87, Miramar Admissions F5000003771098.

<sup>2428</sup> Discussion paper, A Whitmore, Principal 15/6/87, Miramar Admissions F5000003771098.

<sup>2429</sup> L Hartley, Senior Social Worker to District Office social work staff 5/2/88. Miramar Admissions F5000001594224.

<sup>2430</sup> V Whittaker, Senior Residential Social Worker to Principal and Assistant Principal 20/11/86, Miramar Complaints S/92 MSD.

<sup>2431</sup> Information booklet for new admissions, date and author unknown, Miramar Profile F5000001594224.

<sup>2432</sup> V Whittaker, Senior Residential Social Worker to Principal and Assistant Principal 20/11/86, Miramar Complaints S/92 MSD.

<sup>2433</sup> O.T Ryan, Principal memo to contributing districts 12/7/73, Miramar Profile F5000001594224.

<sup>2434</sup> See Annual Reports 1981, 1982, 1984, 1986, Miramar Reports.

Leisure and recreation activities offered in 1981 included visits to Marae, camping, sports and cultural pursuits, swimming, hiking, listening to music, dancing, watching TV.<sup>2435</sup> Girls also received training in sewing, art and craft.<sup>2436</sup> In 1982 a special needs programme was approved for a resident with special needs.<sup>2437</sup> In 1983 Maori classes were also offered.<sup>2438</sup> Special activities such as attending courses in the community were made available "as and when the need arises."<sup>2439</sup> Discos were also regularly held.<sup>2440</sup>

In 1983 a visitor remarked that the living conditions and recreational opportunities at Miramar were very good.<sup>2441</sup>

An adventure camp was held in 1983<sup>2442</sup> and "successful" camps were held again in 1984 and 1985.<sup>2443</sup> Camps were considered an important part of the programme to prepare girls to return to the community.<sup>2444</sup> School staff also assisted at camps.<sup>2445</sup> In 1985 the camp programme was under review due to staffing pressures.<sup>2446</sup>

## Work and training

It was reported in 1981 that older residents – who had left school but did not have jobs – helped out with laundry, sewing and other chores while the younger girls went to school.<sup>2447</sup> Residents helped in the preparation of meals<sup>2448</sup> and other domestic tasks such as washing their clothes.<sup>2449</sup>

It appeared that work was used at times as a punishment for absconding.<sup>2450</sup> In 1983 a visitor noted that a work programme was used in conjunction with secure care.<sup>2451</sup>

According to a Principal's report in 1973, girls were occasionally given the opportunity to work outside the Home, but this was usually limited to a short trial period prior to placement.<sup>2452</sup>

<sup>2435</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2436</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2437</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 9.

<sup>2438</sup> Report by D.H Greenwood, Social Welfare Cadet to Principal, Miramar 17/2/83, Miramar Reports F5000002186504, p 3.

<sup>2439</sup> A.J Morrison to the Director, Wellington 10/4/85, Miramar Profile F5000002186503.

<sup>2440</sup> See Contact with Community section.

<sup>2441</sup> Report by D.H Greenwood, Social Welfare Cadet to Principal 17/2/83, Miramar Reports F5000002186504, p 3.

<sup>2442</sup> Annual Report 1983 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2443</sup> Annual Report 1984 Miramar Reports F5000002186503, p 2.

<sup>2444</sup> Annual Report 1985 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2445</sup> Annual Report 1984 Aurora School Report, Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2446</sup> D. Waaka, Senior Residential Social Worker to Principal 2/11/85, Miramar Profile F5000002186503.

<sup>2447</sup> "A homestead for mind clearing", *The Dominion* 20/2/81, Miramar Profile F5000003771104.

<sup>2448</sup> Miramar Prospectus 1983 Section C-D, author unknown, Miramar Reports F5000002186504.

<sup>2449</sup> "The girls say Miramar home is a good place", *Eastern Suburbs News* 1/6/83, Miramar Profile F5000002186504.

<sup>2450</sup> A.J Morrison, Principal to Director and J.A Blair, Senior Institutions Officer, Wellington 7/12/83 Miramar Reports, F5000001615646.

<sup>2451</sup> Report by D.H Greenwood, Social Welfare Cadet to Principal 17/2/83, Miramar Reports F5000002186504, p 3.

<sup>2452</sup> O.T Ryan, Principal memo to contributing districts 12/7/73, Miramar Profile F5000001594224.

A prospectus for Miramar stated one of the aims of the Home was to give clients access to basic employment knowledge, work skills and work experience in order to obtain a level of independence.<sup>2453</sup>

In 1981 a visiting psychologist undertook specialised group work, a feature of which was vocational training.<sup>2454</sup> In 1982 the vocational programme was revised and three stages were identified. The first stage involved training on seeking employment and interview preparation.<sup>2455</sup> In the second stage residents entered the work programme, and an individualised programme was created for the resident. Once in the work programme, board payments were deducted from the resident's wages, and a standard amount of pocket money was set, which was periodically reviewed. Working girls had first priority of entry into the Hostel.<sup>2456</sup>

In the third stage of the vocational programme, residents who were over 16 and from the Wellington area could move into a flatting situation, subject to the approval of the work training supervisor and field social worker. Responsibility for the resident was to be handed over from the work training supervisor to the field social worker after three weeks, at which point the resident was removed from the Miramar roll.<sup>2457</sup>

The Principal reported in 1982 that a vocation skills programme had been successful – at one stage nine girls were employed in the factory next to the residence.<sup>2458</sup> In the same year a visitor to Miramar commented on the positive direction of vocational training.<sup>2459</sup> According to the visitor, "the fact that many girls will not go back to school but will have to go out to find jobs with little qualification has realistically been faced".<sup>2460</sup>

A pre-employment and "work exploration programme" continued to be offered at Miramar in 1987.<sup>2461</sup>

The Hostel assisted in the extension of the work training programme and aimed to provide independence for working girls.<sup>2462</sup> Despite the fact that the hostel was reported to have been "successful" in 1982 and 1983,<sup>2463</sup> the unit was closed in 1984 due to administrative difficulties, a decrease in job opportunities and delays in placing girls in suitable accommodation.<sup>2464</sup>

<sup>2453</sup> Miramar Prospectus 1983 Section B Objective 5, author unknown, Miramar Reports F5000002186504

<sup>2454</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2455</sup> Vocational Programme memo, D. Manley, Assistant Principal to Principal 14/10/80 revised 31/7/82. Miramar Education file F5000003771104.

<sup>2456</sup> Vocational Programme memo, D. Manley, Assistant Principal to Principal 14/10/80 revised 31/7/82. Miramar Education file F5000003771104.

<sup>2457</sup> Vocational Programme memo, D. Manley, Assistant Principal to Principal 14/10/80 revised 31/7/82. Miramar Education file F5000003771104.

<sup>2458</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 9.

<sup>2459</sup> Report by D.H Greenwood, Social Welfare Cadet to Principal, Miramar 17/2/83, Miramar Reports F5000002186504, p 5.

<sup>2460</sup> Report by D.H Greenwood, Social Welfare Cadet to Principal, Miramar 17/2/83, Miramar Reports F5000002186504, p 5.

<sup>2461</sup> Discussion paper, A Whitmore, Principal 15/6/87, Miramar Admissions F5000003771098.

<sup>2462</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 8-9.

<sup>2463</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 8. See also Annual Report 1983 Miramar Reports F5000001615646.

<sup>2464</sup> Annual Report 1984 Miramar Reports F5000002186503, p 2.



## Resident-to-resident issues

No information relating to specific incidents between residents was found.

## Health and medication

### Medical

The Principal remarked in 1981 that medical and health were a high priority within the overall programme. Some difficulties were experienced in the dental care area because often girls leave before planned treatment was completed.<sup>2465</sup>

An information booklet given to girls on admission advised that they would have a full medical examination shortly after their arrival, to ascertain whether medical help was required.<sup>2466</sup> It was reported in 1981 that staff suggested to older girls on admission that they visit the venereal disease clinic for a check.<sup>2467</sup>

In 1982 two doctors from the Health Department visited the Home to assist residents "in the all important task of understanding themselves".<sup>2468</sup> In the same year, the Visiting Committee investigated medical procedures at Miramar (in response to issues highlighted in the 1982 Human Rights Commission Report) and found no reason for criticism.<sup>2469</sup>

According to a 1983 prospectus, an objective of staff was "to promote the wellbeing of each girl, by quality health care and education" and "to ensure that each resident is in general physical health and that any emotional and mental needs and stresses are provided for by professional guidance".<sup>2470</sup>

It was also noted professional dental care in the community was available and a general practitioner was on call 24 hours. Initial examinations for any physical or mental health problems were to be carried out by a GP, who could then refer residents to a specialist. The document also stated that no resident was subject to compulsory medical examination and residents were to be prepared for any examination by counselling. Prescribed medication was given out by resident medical personnel.<sup>2471</sup>

It was noted in 1983 by a visiting Social Welfare cadet that the girls were well fed and encouraged to keep a high level of personal hygiene.<sup>2472</sup>

<sup>2465</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2466</sup> Information booklet for new admissions, date and author unknown, Miramar Profile F5000001594224.

<sup>2467</sup> "A homestead for mind clearing", The Dominion 20/2/81, Miramar Profile F5000003771104.

<sup>2468</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 10.

<sup>2469</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report to March 1983, Dept of Education file, Miramar Reports, p 4.

<sup>2470</sup> Miramar Prospectus 1983 Section D Objective 4, author unknown, Miramar Reports F5000002186504.

<sup>2471</sup> Miramar Prospectus 1983 Section D Objective 4, author unknown, Miramar Reports F5000002186504.

<sup>2472</sup> Report by D.H Greenwood, Social Welfare Cadet to Principal, Miramar 17/2/83, Miramar Reports F5000002186504, p 3.

In 1985 a doctor visited the Girls' Home twice a week to ensure that residents were medically fit, and psychiatric referrals were available if needed.<sup>2473</sup> In 1986, all girls on admission were medically examined by the Home's doctor, and where necessary, appointments were made to attend the women's clinic at Wellington Hospital.<sup>2474</sup> The staff member commented that "only a small percentage" of girls admitted had venereal disease and "all medical precautions were taken".<sup>2475</sup>

In 1984 a weekly health programme was run on topics such as sex education, drugs, body care, growth and development etc.<sup>2476</sup> A sex and health education programme was still in operation at Miramar in 1987.<sup>2477</sup> The objective of this programme was "to provide young women with basic information about personal health, hygiene, sexual identity, sexual behaviour, and how to access a variety of health care services".<sup>2478</sup>

## Psychological services/counselling

According to a 1973 memo from the Principal, a psychologist visited the home weekly but "only sees one girl" and if assessment was necessary, there "may be a delay of some weeks".<sup>2479</sup> A doctor provided weekly psychiatric assessment and ongoing counselling if needed, and it was noted that all behaviour modification was supervised by the doctor.<sup>2480</sup>

In 1977 a Senior Social Worker emphasised the importance of providing relevant information when girls were admitted, especially those likely to be referred to a psychologist or psychiatrist.<sup>2481</sup> The memo stated that lack of information about psychological or psychiatric referrals in the past had resulted in the work of specialists at the Home being "duplicated".<sup>2482</sup>

The Principal reported in 1982 that a psychologist from the Education Department assisted at the school, and undertook staff training as well as clinical duties.<sup>2483</sup> In the same year a visitor to Miramar confirmed that psychological assessment was available if needed.<sup>2484</sup>

The Visiting Committee noted in 1983 that while some psychological assessment was available, there was not as much as the Committee would have liked.<sup>2485</sup> A part-time assistant psychologist was employed in 1983.<sup>2486</sup> In 1984 a regional

<sup>2473</sup> A.J Morrison to the Director, Wellington 10/4/85, Miramar Profile F5000002186503.

<sup>2474</sup> V Whittaker, Senior Residential Social Worker to Principal and Assistant Principal 20/11/86, Miramar Complaints S/92 MSD.

<sup>2475</sup> V Whittaker, Senior Residential Social Worker to Principal and Assistant Principal 20/11/86, Miramar Complaints S/92 MSD.

<sup>2476</sup> Annual Report 1984 Aurora School Report, Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2477</sup> Discussion paper, A Whitmore, Principal 15/6/87, Miramar Admissions, F5000003771098.

<sup>2478</sup> Discussion paper, A Whitmore, Principal 15/6/87, Miramar Admissions F5000003771098.

<sup>2479</sup> O.T Ryan, Principal memo to contributing districts 12/7/73, Miramar Profile F5000001594224.

<sup>2480</sup> O.T Ryan, Principal memo to contributing districts 12/7/73, Miramar Profile F5000001594224.

<sup>2481</sup> Memo R.G Letham, Senior Social Worker to Contributing Districts 23/8/77, Miramar Staffing F5000001594224.

<sup>2482</sup> Memo R.G Letham, Senior Social Worker to Contributing Districts 23/8/77, Miramar Staffing F5000001594224.

<sup>2483</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 10.

<sup>2484</sup> Report by D.H Greenwood, Social Welfare Cadet to Principal, Miramar 17/2/83, Miramar Reports F5000002186504, p 2.

<sup>2485</sup> P.F Boshier, Chairman of the Visiting Committee to V. Young, Minister of Social Welfare 23/11/83, Visiting Committee F5000005659655.

<sup>2486</sup> Annual Report 1983 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 4.

psychologist was also appointed.<sup>2487</sup> It was noted in 1985 that the educational psychologist spent one day a week at the school and the regional psychologist was regularly in attendance.<sup>2488</sup> A counsellor was also added to the specialist staff in 1985.<sup>2489</sup>

In 1983 the Principal commented that any "disturbed children" at Miramar had received the appropriate specialised psychological or psychiatric help required. A particular case was noted in which a resident had been taken to Kimberley Hospital, although she was later considered inappropriately placed in the hospital.<sup>2490</sup>

A 1984 report from Aurora school noted that teachers were having some input into the instigation of psychological referrals, although follow-up discussion between institution staff and teachers tended to be informal and haphazard and "usually occurs over lunch".<sup>2491</sup>

## Psychiatric hospital placement

A former social worker working in the Wellington region during 1960s and 1970s recalled that a lot of girls were in Porirua Hospital. She believed many of the girls were from Miramar, and felt that the manager of the Home may have had a role in sending them. It was also noted that concern was expressed by CWOs regarding the type of treatment (EEGs and ECT) given there.<sup>2492</sup>

## Staffing

### Relationship between staff and residents

According to a Miramar prospectus, an aim of the institution was to encourage warm and supportive interaction between residents and staff, to create a "relaxed and homely resident environment".<sup>2493</sup> It was expected that staff members be seen by residents as "mother – father figures".<sup>2494</sup>

A 1981 newspaper article quoted a resident who said "the staff are good to us. Sometimes they're too good. They let us go on outings if they trust us. Last week we went to the movies and I was the only one who came back".<sup>2495</sup>

A social welfare cadet visiting in 1982 noted that the major function of staff was to offer residents counselling, support, motivation and a "realistic view of their

<sup>2487</sup> Annual Report 1984 Miramar Reports F5000002186503, p 3.

<sup>2488</sup> Annual Report 1985 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2489</sup> A.J Morrison to the Director, Wellington 10/4/85, Miramar Profile F5000002186503.

<sup>2490</sup> A.J Morrison, Principal to Chief Medical Officer, Head Office 11/4/83, Miramar Health F5000002186504.

<sup>2491</sup> Annual Report 1984 Aurora School Report, Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 6.

<sup>2492</sup> Telephone conversation with [REDACTED] 30/6/06, Miramar Staffing.

<sup>2493</sup> Miramar Prospectus 1983 Aurora School Objectives, author unknown, Miramar Reports F5000002186504.

<sup>2494</sup> Miramar Prospectus 1983 Aurora School Objectives, author unknown, Miramar Reports F5000002186504.

<sup>2495</sup> "A homestead for mind clearing", The Dominion 20/2/81, Miramar Profile F5000003771104.

situation".<sup>2496</sup> He observed that respect had been established towards staff and their relationships with residents were generally healthy, although staff were criticised for not listening to residents enough in some cases. In a report to the Principal, the cadet also voiced concern about an inconsistency of policy across staff shifts and a lack of communication between staff, which resulted in residents becoming confused regarding the rules of the institution.<sup>2497</sup>

The 1983 Annual Report commented that staff and residents held a "successful" end-of-year dinner together, in which staff served residents in a formal setting.<sup>2498</sup> The dinner was also held successfully in 1984.<sup>2499</sup>

### Staff to resident incidents

In 1984 the Visiting Committee put forward a suggestion to extend their role into mediating complaints between residents and staff, as they believed the decisions about complaints were made at "an unnecessarily high level".<sup>2500</sup> It appears the Committee wished to address the degree of distrust that had resulted from a past incident in which their involvement in the complaints process had had negative consequences.<sup>2501</sup> In response to the suggestion, the Principal noted that while the Committee may hear about complaints between staff and residents, the Department guidelines would be followed for all discipline matters.<sup>2502</sup> The District Director further noted that he was the first to deal with complaints by girls against staff members, and added that complaints by staff against girls were not frequent, and usually involved matters which were "largely part of the normal process of discipline and control within the institution".<sup>2503</sup> The Director noted in the case of a staff member laying a formal complaint it may become a Police matter.<sup>2504</sup>

In February [REDACTED] a resident [REDACTED] attempted to strangle a supervisor.<sup>2505</sup> A doctor's report noted that the staff member had subsequently suffered an anxiety state that prevented her returning to work.<sup>2506</sup> A residential social worker requested that the resident's "deprivation" be taken into account before the staff member proceeded with any action.<sup>2507</sup> It is unclear if legal action was taken by the staff member. The Acting Principal noted that a number of actions and communications regarding the resident and the decision to hold her in secure had preceded the incident.<sup>2508</sup>

<sup>2496</sup> Report by D.H Greenwood, Social Welfare Cadet to Principal 17/2/83, Miramar Reports F5000002186504, p 1.

<sup>2497</sup> Report by D.H Greenwood, Social Welfare Cadet to Principal 17/2/83, Miramar Reports F5000002186504, p 3.

<sup>2498</sup> Annual Report 1983 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 4.

<sup>2499</sup> Annual Report 1984 Miramar Reports F5000002186503, p 2.

<sup>2500</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report June 1984, Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 11.

<sup>2501</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report June 1984, Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 11.

<sup>2502</sup> A.J Morrison, Principal to Director, Wellington 6/7/84, Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 2.

<sup>2503</sup> J. Lambie, District Director to Director-General 12/7/84, Visiting Committee F5000005659655.

<sup>2504</sup> J. Lambie, District Director to Director-General 12/7/84, Visiting Committee F5000005659655.

<sup>2505</sup> Report P.J O'Sullivan, Supervisor [REDACTED] Miramar Incidents F [REDACTED]

<sup>2506</sup> T.B Cork, Visiting Medical Officer, to M. Doolan, Director of Residential Services [REDACTED], Miramar incidents F5000002186501.

<sup>2507</sup> J. O'Kane, Relieving ARSW to D.J Manley, Acting Principal, [REDACTED] Miramar Girls' Home Incidents F5000002186501.

<sup>2508</sup> Handwritten note from D.J Manley, Acting Principal on memo from J. O'Kane, Relieving ARSW. [REDACTED] Miramar Girls' Home Incidents F5000002186501. For more details see D.J Manley, Assistant Principal for the Principal to Director, Wellington [REDACTED] Miramar incidents F5000002186501. See also Miramar Secure section.

In March 1986, a Social Worker complained about the care of a particular resident, and the problems she and the resident had experienced in her interaction with Girls' Home staff. It was noted that for a period the resident had no residential caseworker, had insufficient clothing, and no contact had been made with field social workers. It was reported that resident, who had been in secure care a number of times, "didn't mind being in secure as she felt safer there than upstairs" in the residential area.<sup>2509</sup> It was also claimed that the placement of the resident at the institution was "racist". The Principal commented the resident was a "major disturbance" and should have been placed at Kingslea. The resident was eventually taken out of the Home as it was believed she had become a "scapegoat".<sup>2510</sup> A memo from the District office in response to the allegations acknowledged general management problems and remarked that there appeared to be "some inconsistencies" with planning".<sup>2511</sup>

In 1988 a social worker expressed concern about events leading to the transferral of two residents from Miramar to Weymouth.<sup>2512</sup> One resident absconded while at Miramar, and before being placed in the secure unit on her return, it was alleged that she had been required to strip instead of being frisked. She was later given sedatives after attempting to self-harm, and before travelling to Weymouth.<sup>2513</sup> According to the social worker, similar events appeared to have happened to a second resident, and the circumstances surrounding the use of sedatives and stripping were questioned.<sup>2514</sup>

## Management

There were five staff vacancies in 1981, and periods between appointments varied from 1-6 months.<sup>2515</sup> In 1981 the Principal remarked that staff and management at Miramar "lacked the expertise necessary to compile files and carry out clerical functions adequately".<sup>2516</sup> This appeared to be remedied by the employment of part-time clerical support in 1982.<sup>2517</sup> This position was made fulltime in 1984.<sup>2518</sup>

In 1982, supervisor Miss Tucker retired after 25 years at the Girls' Home.<sup>2519</sup> The same year Miramar was criticised by a Head Office inspector for failing to follow planning procedures. The inspector was concerned about the amount of work for individual staff work in the form of planning and casework, and noted staff felt they worked in isolation and that this meant "the best interests of the child were not being met". The inspector also commented on the "incredible" lack of recorded information, and requested Department planning policy be implemented.<sup>2520</sup>

<sup>2509</sup> P. Crowley, Social Worker to Director, Porirua 12/3/86, Miramar Contact F5000003771099. For more details see Miramar Staffing and Contact with Field Social Workers sections.

<sup>2510</sup> P. Crowley, Social Worker to Director, Porirua 12/3/86, Miramar Contact F5000003771099.

<sup>2511</sup> Memo B. Hay, Assistant Director Social Work 1/4/86, Miramar Contact F5000003771099.

<sup>2512</sup> K. Lyness, Social Worker to the Assistant Director, Social Services 23/2/88. Miramar Incidents F5000005659654.

<sup>2513</sup> K. Lyness, Social Worker to the Assistant Director, Social Services 23/2/88. Miramar Incidents F5000005659654.

<sup>2514</sup> K. Lyness, Social Worker to the Assistant Director, Social Services 23/2/88. Miramar Incidents F5000005659654.

<sup>2515</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2516</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 4.

<sup>2517</sup> Annual Reports 1982 and 1983 Miramar Reports F5000001615646.

<sup>2518</sup> Annual Report 1984 Miramar Reports F5000002186503, p 1.

<sup>2519</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 6.

<sup>2520</sup> A.E Corcoran, for Director-General to District Directors and the Principal, Miramar Girls' Home 25/11/82, Miramar Staffing F5000003771104.

A visiting social welfare cadet in 1982 noted that procedure was dictated by the residential social workers manual, but staff had a degree of flexibility and could initiate changes to improve efficiency, which was praised by inspectors to the home.<sup>2521</sup> The visitor observed that staff carried out their jobs "with a realistic and positive frame of mind" for the benefit of the residents.<sup>2522</sup>

In 1983 the Visiting Committee commented on the impact of the 1982 Human Rights Commission Report on staff morale.<sup>2523</sup> The Committee reported that the criticisms in this document were not relevant to Miramar and this was conveyed to staff.<sup>2524</sup> In May 1983 the Director-General acknowledged the publicity following the Human Rights Commission and Archbishop Johnston reports six month prior. In response to these reports, the Director-General made reference to broad institutional changes that intended to ease the work of staff and improve the service.<sup>2525</sup>

Staffing remained stable until 1985, when the number of admissions reached a "zenith", and the Principal officially requested "a more realistic number of staff" to cope with greater numbers of residents.<sup>2526</sup> According to a Code of Practice document detailing the management structure at Miramar, in 1985 the Girls' Home employed 14 residential staff, 2 night attendants and 6 domestic staff.<sup>2527</sup>

In 1985 staff proposed strike action over the lack of additional staffing resources. In August 1985 the Visiting Committee released a press statement linking the strain on staff to greater admission numbers and increased use of the secure unit, which had been "used to quite some extent". The Committee commented that staff themselves had not placed the welfare of girls at risk, but there was "an urgent case for the review of resources."<sup>2528</sup>

By the end of August 1985, the Home was facing staffing "crisis". According to the Principal, staff work loads had become "almost unbearable" due to significant increases in casework responsibilities.<sup>2529</sup> Senior residential staff also noted the difficulties experienced by staff moving from a "custodial regimental approach" to a social work model.<sup>2530</sup> According to staff, it had been "the norm" for some time for the staff/client supervision ratio to be 1 staff member to 20+ girls on occasions. It was requested that 2 additional residential social work staff be appointed in each shift.<sup>2531</sup>

In September 1985, the Visiting Committee reiterated their concerns about the stress levels of Miramar staff to both the District Director<sup>2532</sup> and the Minister.<sup>2533</sup> The Committee commented that "intolerable strain" at the Girls Home had resulted

<sup>2521</sup> Report by D.H Greenwood, Social Welfare Cadet to Principal, Miramar 17/2/83, Miramar Reports F5000002186504, p 3.

<sup>2522</sup> Report by D.H Greenwood, Social Welfare Cadet to Principal, Miramar Girls' Home 17 February 1983, Miramar Reports F5000002186504, p 5.

<sup>2523</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report to March 1983, Dept of Education file, Miramar Reports, p 4.

<sup>2524</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report to March 1983, Dept of Education file, Miramar Reports, p 4.

<sup>2525</sup> J.W Grant, Director-General to A. Morrison, Principal 16.5.83 Miramar Reports F5000002186504.

<sup>2526</sup> Annual Report 1985 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 4.

<sup>2527</sup> A.J Morrison to Director, Wellington 10/4/85, Miramar Profile F5000002186503.

<sup>2528</sup> Press Statement by Visiting Committee, circa August 1985, Miramar Staffing F5000002186503.

<sup>2529</sup> A.J Morrison, Principal to Director, Wellington 28/9/85, Miramar Staffing F5000002186503.

<sup>2530</sup> D. Waaka, Senior Residential Social Worker to Principal 2/11/85, Miramar Profile F5000002186503.

<sup>2531</sup> D. Waaka, Senior Residential Social Worker to Principal 2/11/85, Miramar Profile F5000002186503.

<sup>2532</sup> P.F Boshier, Chairman Miramar Visiting Committee to J. Lambie, Director, Wellington 25/9/85, Miramar Staffing F5000002186503.

<sup>2533</sup> Report from Visiting Committee, Miramar Girls' Home to Minister 31/10/85, Miramar Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 4.

in resignations and staff taking recuperation leave. The Committee directly attributed this to the requirement to remand young women into secure care, which was seen to have had "increasing severity and effect on staffing resources".<sup>2534</sup> No information was found regarding the outcome of the staffing issue.

Changes to casework and programmes in February 1988 divided social workers into 3 shift teams and 3 casework teams. It was noted that from 6.45am and 10pm every day, residents had someone they could approach.<sup>2535</sup>

In 1987 social workers in the region expressed their concern over the appointment of a male social worker into a senior practitioner position at the Girls' Home. The description of role and the appropriateness of a male working with sexually abused young women were questioned.<sup>2536</sup> The Regional Director later defended the decision and informed regional staff of the appointment of another male into a senior position at the Girls' Home.<sup>2537</sup>

According to the 1987/1988 management plan for the closure of the Home, staff were to be systematically reduced over 6 monthly periods from January 1988 to March 1989.<sup>2538</sup> In March 1988, due to industrial action staff availability was restricted to emergency work only.<sup>2539</sup>

### Staff training

In 1981 it was noted that staff supervision, casework supervision, staff training and team meetings were carried out regularly, and all available training courses for staff had been utilised.<sup>2540</sup> However, lack of release time for staff training was an ongoing difficulty.

In a response to a query from Head Office in 1983 regarding staff training,<sup>2541</sup> the Principal reported that in-house training sessions and team meetings were held weekly, and every effort was made for staff to attend external training courses although the time constraints and other factors made this difficult. The Principal noted that DSW courses relevant to the work at the Home were decreasing, and it was "difficult" to be included in Social Work courses.<sup>2542</sup> This issue was also raised by the Visiting Committee in 1984, who noted that residential social workers were "often under great time pressure" and it appeared that training had not always been "readily available".<sup>2543</sup>

In 1985, a senior residential staff member stated that staff training was "nonexistent" and any training that was available did "very little to enhance or provide skills

<sup>2534</sup> Report from Visiting Committee, Miramar Girls' Home to Minister 31/10/85, Miramar Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 4. See also J. Lambie, Director Wellington, to M. Doolan, Head Office 3/10/85, Miramar Staffing F5000005659655.

<sup>2535</sup> L. Hartley, Senior Social Worker to District Office social work staff 5/2/88. Miramar Admissions F5000001594224.

<sup>2536</sup> Liz Kinley, Meredith Osmond and Lynn Blake-Palmer, Senior Social Workers to Assistant Director Social Worker, Porirua 19/8/87, Miramar Staffing F5000003771100.

<sup>2537</sup> R.H Wood, Regional Director 18/9/87, Miramar Staffing F5000003771098.

<sup>2538</sup> Wellington Girls' Home 1988/89 Management Plan, Miramar Profile F5000001594224.

<sup>2539</sup> D. Manley, Assistant Principal 4/3/88, Miramar Profile F5000006089634.

<sup>2540</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2541</sup> J.A Blair, for the Director General to Director, Wellington 5/08/83 Miramar Reports, F5000001615646.

<sup>2542</sup> A.J Morrison, Principal to Director and J.A Blair, Senior Institutions Officer, Wellington 7/12/83 Miramar Reports, F5000001615646, see also Annual Report 1983 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 2.

<sup>2543</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report June 1984, Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 5.

training or social work evaluation".<sup>2544</sup> It was noted that while a training scheme existed, it was constantly interrupted by client needs.<sup>2545</sup>

Despite time pressures, staff did sporadically attend external training courses and undertake university study.<sup>2546</sup> The residence also continued to assist in regional training and other agencies.<sup>2547</sup> In 1986 it was noted that Miramar had been closed for one week to facilitate a staff training workshop.<sup>2548</sup>

According to the management plan for the closure of the Girls' Home, staff retraining was scheduled to take place in 1988.<sup>2549</sup> A bi-cultural policy was also identified in this plan, in which a member of the Maori community was to be invited to become a member of the management team. A marae visit and an interchange with staff of a Kohanga Reo were planned for early 1988.<sup>2550</sup>

## Schooling

In 1973 Aurora school had 2 teachers, and a "basically remedial programme".<sup>2551</sup>

In 1981, it was noted that the school programme had been hampered by the departure of the Assistant Teacher, who was relieved by 2 untrained teachers until a trained teacher was employed.<sup>2552</sup> An individualised programme was in operation, with close co-operation from residential social workers.<sup>2553</sup>

In 1982, the Principal commented that the schooling needs of the girls needed to be met in "a more positive way". A team of psychologists were used to establish a "base line" which the school could work from.<sup>2554</sup>

According to the 1983 Annual Report, the philosophy of the school was to provide a warm, supportive environment in which to effect an attitudinal change to education and to authority figures, and to enhance social interaction skills. In this report the school was described as an autonomous resource, working towards the successful placement of each student.<sup>2555</sup> Objectives of the school included devising individual study programmes of a "nonfail character" while offering challenges and encouraging progress.<sup>2556</sup> Another objective of the school was to provide remedial work, as well as teaching and resources relevant to entering the work force.<sup>2557</sup>

<sup>2544</sup> D. Waaka, Senior Residential Social Worker to Principal 2/11/85, Miramar Profile F5000002186503.

<sup>2545</sup> D. Waaka, Senior Residential Social Worker to Principal 2/11/85, Miramar Profile F5000002186503.

<sup>2546</sup> Annual Report 1984 Miramar Reports F5000002186503, p 1. See also Annual Report 1985 Miramar Reports F5 000001615646.

<sup>2547</sup> Annual Report 1984 Miramar Reports F5000002186503, p 1.

<sup>2548</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Reports 1986, Miramar Profile, F5000006661405.

<sup>2549</sup> Wellington Girls' Home 1988/89 Management Plan, Miramar Profile F5000001594224.

<sup>2550</sup> Wellington Girls' Home 1988/89 Management Plan, Miramar Profile F5000001594224.

<sup>2551</sup> O.T Ryan, Principal memo to contributing districts 12/7/73, Miramar Profile F5000001594224.

<sup>2552</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 2.

<sup>2553</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 2.

<sup>2554</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 8.

<sup>2555</sup> Annual Report 1983 Aurora School Report, Miramar Reports F5000001615646, Annexure

<sup>2556</sup> Miramar Prospectus 1983 Aurora School Objectives, author unknown, Miramar Reports F5000002186504.

<sup>2557</sup> Miramar Prospectus 1983 Aurora School Objectives, author unknown, Miramar Reports F5000002186504.



A new Senior Teacher was employed in 1983<sup>2558</sup> along with an additional teacher and part-time teaching assistant.<sup>2559</sup> The school developed a "team teaching" approach in which teachers took turns to teach a subject while the other teacher gave individual attention to students.<sup>2560</sup> Each student was interviewed on admission to develop an individualised programme, which was considered to be effective.<sup>2561</sup> A visitor to the school noted that teachers and residential social workers made an effort to work together.<sup>2562</sup>

The individualised system continued in 1983 and allowed students to choose their areas of study, and learn about time management, with positive results.<sup>2563</sup> In 1984 the school was divided into two classrooms and the daily routine comprised of both individual and group work.<sup>2564</sup>

Later documents also highlight the practice of individual assessment and the involvement of the student in their education.<sup>2565</sup> Following assessment, the resident might attend Aurora school or a community school. If the resident was over 15, the school was "invited to offer a suitable programme", or she sought work experience in the community.<sup>2566</sup>

Activities offered at the school included outings, PE, school magazine, visitors from the community, cooking and elective options such as business administration, drama,<sup>2567</sup> typing, music and art. A weekly health programme was also offered.<sup>2568</sup>

A leaving certificate was designed in 1983 to acknowledge student's achievements, and report forms were designed to record student's progress and to aid future educational placement.<sup>2569</sup> In 1984 a comprehensive pre-employment skills programme was developed but failed to be successfully implemented due to a "lack of communication and/or understanding".<sup>2570</sup>

In 1983<sup>2571</sup> and 1984<sup>2572</sup>, the average stay at the school was 35 days, and students ranged from form 2 to form 5. In 1983 the majority of girls leaving the school were placed in either mainstream education or long term institutions, while others went into work experience, Correspondence School, activity centres.<sup>2573</sup>

It was noted in 1986 that if a resident's parents were unable to afford a school uniform, it was to be provided by the Social Welfare Department.<sup>2574</sup>

<sup>2558</sup> Annual Report 1983 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 2.

<sup>2559</sup> Annual Report 1983 Aurora School Report, Miramar Reports F5000001615646, Annexure.

<sup>2560</sup> Report by D.H Greenwood, Social Welfare Cadet to Principal 17/2/83, Miramar Reports F5000002186504, p 5.

<sup>2561</sup> Annual Report 1983 Aurora School Report, Miramar Reports F5000001615646, Annexure.

<sup>2562</sup> Report by D.H Greenwood, Social Welfare Cadet to Principal 17/2/83, Miramar Reports F5000002186504, p 5.

<sup>2563</sup> Annual Report 1983 Aurora School Report, Miramar Reports F5000001615646, Annexure.

<sup>2564</sup> Annual Report 1984 Aurora School Report, Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 2.

<sup>2565</sup> A.J Morrison to the Director, Wellington 10/4/85, Miramar Profile F5000002186503. See also Discussion paper, A Whitmore, Principal 15/6/87, Miramar Admissions F5000003771098.

<sup>2566</sup> A.J Morrison to the Director, Wellington 10/4/85, Miramar Profile F5000002186503.

<sup>2567</sup> Annual Report 1983 Aurora School Report, Miramar Reports F5000001615646, Annexure.

<sup>2568</sup> Annual Report 1984 Aurora School Report, Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2569</sup> Annual Report 1983 Aurora School Report, Miramar Reports F5000001615646, Annexure. See also Annual Report 1984 Aurora School Report, Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2570</sup> Annual Report 1984 Aurora School Report, Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 4.

<sup>2571</sup> Annual Report 1983 Aurora School Report, Miramar Reports F5000001615646, Annexure.

<sup>2572</sup> Annual Report 1984 Aurora School Report, Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 1.

<sup>2573</sup> Annual Report 1983 Aurora School Report, Miramar Reports F5000001615646, Annexure.

<sup>2574</sup> V Whittaker, Senior Residential Social Worker to Principal and Assistant Principal 20/11/86, Miramar Complaints S/92 MSD.

## Staffing and attendance rates

In 1983, the Visiting Committee remarked that the shared administration of the school by the Department of Education and Department of Social Welfare was "not entirely satisfactory". The Department of Education was criticised for lack of regard for the "sensitive needs" of the Home, and the slow appointment of teachers to the school.<sup>2575</sup> In a later report, the Committee recommended the school be brought under the control of the DSW as residents were seen to have "very special needs" which were partly educational and partly psychological. The Committee noted that teachers spent considerable time assisting girls in areas that fell outside their training as teachers. The Committee also recommended greater integration of the school curriculum into the Home.<sup>2576</sup>

In July 1983 an inspector recommended that the teacher-pupil ratio at Aurora School be set at 1:9; therefore 18 girls could be accommodated at that time.<sup>2577</sup> The Principal noted that due to high numbers of eligible pupils, several residents were being denied schooling, and requested that a part time teacher be employed when the ratio was exceeded.<sup>2578</sup> In August 1983 the Assistant Director of Social Work expressed concern regarding two residents not receiving schooling, and suggested the provision of additional teaching staff.<sup>2579</sup> The 1983 Annual Report stated approximately 15% of residents eligible to attend school did not.<sup>2580</sup> This trend continued in 1984.<sup>2581</sup>

In 1983<sup>2582</sup> and 1984 these concerns were reiterated by the Visiting Committee who commented that absconding partly resulted from girls being unable to attend school.<sup>2583</sup> It was noted that the pupil/teacher ratio meant some residents – including a number under 15 years – did not attend school, and spent their days "merely filling in time" and doing "menial chores around the Home", a situation they described as "unsatisfactory" and "disgraceful".<sup>2584</sup>

From 1983 to 1985 the Girls' Home and Aurora School campaigned for additional teachers. Over this time, correspondence and meetings between Miramar, the Visiting Committee, the Department of Education and Department of Social Welfare failed to resolve the issue.<sup>2585</sup> In October 1984, Head Office outlined the reasons additional funding was refused, and remarked that the school was appropriately

<sup>2575</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report to March 1983, Dept of Education, Miramar Reports, p 5.

<sup>2576</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report 1985, Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 6.

<sup>2577</sup> A.J Morrison, Principal to Director, Wellington 29/7/83. Miramar Education F5000002186504.

<sup>2578</sup> A.J Morrison, Principal to Director, Wellington 29/7/83. Miramar Education F5000002186504.

<sup>2579</sup> P. B Dickens, Assistant Director (SW) to Director, Wellington 19/8/83. Miramar Education F5000002186504.

<sup>2580</sup> Annual Report 1983 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, Appendix E.

<sup>2581</sup> A.J Morrison, Principal to Director, Wellington 13/6/84, Miramar Education F5000002186500.

<sup>2582</sup> V. Young, Minister of Social Welfare to P.F Boshier, Chairman of the Visiting Committee 20/10/83, Miramar Visiting Committee, F5000005659655.

<sup>2583</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report June 1984, Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 8.

<sup>2584</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report June 1984, Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 9.

<sup>2585</sup> See A.J Morrison, Principal to Director, Wellington 13/6/84, Miramar Education F5000002186500; J.A. Blair, for the Director General to the Director, Wellington, 21/2/84 Miramar Reports. F5000002186500; J.A. Blair for the Director-General to Director Wellington 12/9/84 Miramar Reports F5000002186500; B.M Manchester, for Director-General to Director, Wellington 24/8/84 and M.P Doolan for Director-General to Director, Wellington 29/6/84, Miramar Education F5000002186500; A.J Morrison, Principal to Director, Wellington 29/8/84, Miramar Education F5000002186500.

staffed compared to other national institutions, and given its average occupancy rates.<sup>2586</sup>

In the third term of 1984 a teaching assistant was employed, allowing 24 additional girls to attend,<sup>2587</sup> although the teacher to student ratio remained at 1:12 despite efforts to formalise a 1:9 ratio.<sup>2588</sup> In 1985, the Visiting Committee noted that a "satisfactory compromise" had been reached. A ratio of 1:12 was adopted and a full time teacher aid was employed.<sup>2589</sup> The Committee reported that while occasionally girls were "hanging around in the Home" during the day unable to attend school, the situation was much improved.<sup>2590</sup>

It was noted that the Senior Teacher was excluded (except by invitation or request) to senior staff meetings in the latter part of 1984 due to time pressures,<sup>2591</sup> although weekly meetings with senior staff were subsequently set up.<sup>2592</sup> The Senior Teacher expressed frustration that teachers were not sufficiently involved in case planning and case conference meetings regarding the placement of students, due to minimal teacher release time.<sup>2593</sup>

In 1985, the Principal commended the service of the teachers of Aurora and noted that the teachers had developed a comprehensive School Scheme.<sup>2594</sup> Both teachers left at the end of 1985.<sup>2595</sup> Little information about the school programme was found after 1985.

## Absconding

The number of absconding incidents gradually decreased over the early 1980s from a high of 166 incidents in 1979 to a low of 68 in 1982.<sup>2596</sup> 1984 saw an increase in abscondings<sup>2597</sup> and a Department report the same year noted that Miramar was considered to have a high absconding rate.<sup>2598</sup> In 1985 absconding incidents increased to a high of 196 incidents.<sup>2599</sup>

Annual Reports from the Girls' Home included detailed analyses of absconding figures.<sup>2600</sup> According to the Principal's 1981 report, absconding rates at the institution were considered high, and this was attributed to a high number of

<sup>2586</sup> Report to the Minister of Social Welfare from J.W Grant, Director-General 3/10/84, Miramar Education F5000002186500.

<sup>2587</sup> Annual Report 1984 Miramar Reports F5000002186503, p 2.

<sup>2588</sup> Annual Report 1984 Aurora School Report, Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2589</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report June 1985, Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 3.

<sup>2590</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report June 1985, Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 3.

<sup>2591</sup> Annual Report 1984 Aurora School Report, Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2592</sup> Annual Report 1984 Aurora School Report, Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 6.

<sup>2593</sup> Annual Report 1984 Aurora School Report, Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 5.

<sup>2594</sup> Annual Report 1985 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2595</sup> Annual Report 1985 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2596</sup> Admissions, Abscondings, Nominal Roll and Occupied Beds figures for all institutions, undated, author unknown, Miramar Admissions F5000002388341. See also Analysis of abscondings 1979-1983, DSW institutions, undated, author unknown. Miramar Incidents F5000002186500.

<sup>2597</sup> Annual Report 1984 Miramar Reports F5000002186503, Appendix B.

<sup>2598</sup> Institutional Statistics 1984 Report, M.P Doolan, Director Residential Services 4/1184, Miramar Admissions F5000002186501.

<sup>2599</sup> Annual Report 1985 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2600</sup> See Annual Reports from 1981, 1982, 1983, 1984. Miramar Reports F5000001615646.

admissions with a history of absconding.<sup>2601</sup> It was noted in 1981 that a third of girls who absconded did so whilst in the community, and in many cases incidents involved girls who ran away more than once.<sup>2602</sup>

In 1982 the Principal noted that better communication between the Home and districts, a decrease in residents inclined to run away<sup>2603</sup>, and the introduction of a different programme for absconders had seen a decrease in abscondings.<sup>2604</sup> The programme involved designating a number of days "free of absconding" and girls who absconded during that period were placed on a work programme, releasing other residents from some of their daily chores.<sup>2605</sup> An informal "contractual system" was also identified in 1982 as a means of encouraging residents not to abscond.<sup>2606</sup>

In 1983, an article in the local newspaper noted that the Home had two main rules – "be good, and stay".<sup>2607</sup> The article reported a number of reasons for absconding including homesickness, missing a boyfriend, or fighting with other residents.<sup>2608</sup> An earlier article noted another reason for absconding was girls under 15 wanting to smoke.<sup>2609</sup>

In 1983, the Visiting Committee asserted that abscondings were a direct consequence of unrest caused by delays in placement, and provided examples of residents who had experienced "unacceptably long" delays.<sup>2610</sup> In the Committee's 1984 report, the Department was accused of being "dilatory" in arranging transfers.<sup>2611</sup> The District Director noted that delays were "a perennial problem" resulting from a number of factors.<sup>2612</sup>

In 1984 the Visiting Committee questioned the categorisation of all absences as "abscondments", stating that the different status of residents meant that some girls were "very much influenced by others".<sup>2613</sup> The Committee also questioned the "tendency to place far too much attention on the statistics of and consequential discipline of absconders".<sup>2614</sup> They remarked that some girls were "true absconders" and should have been placed in secure, although noted that secure was

<sup>2601</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 2.

<sup>2602</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 2.

<sup>2603</sup> A.J Morrison, Principal to Director and J.A Blair, Senior Institutions Officer, Wellington 7/12/83 Miramar Reports, F5000001615646.

<sup>2604</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 7.

<sup>2605</sup> A.J Morrison, Principal to Director and J.A Blair, Senior Institutions Officer, Wellington 7/12/83 Miramar Reports, F5000001615646.

<sup>2606</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 8. For more information on the "contract system" see Miramar Secure section.

<sup>2607</sup> "The girls say Miramar home is a good place", Eastern Suburbs News 1/6/83, Miramar Profile F5000002186504.

<sup>2608</sup> "The girls say Miramar home is a good place", Eastern Suburbs News 1/6/83, Miramar Profile F5000002186504.

<sup>2609</sup> "A homestead for mind clearing", The Dominion 20/2/81, Miramar Profile F5000003771104.

<sup>2610</sup> P.F Boshier, Chairman of the Visiting Committee to V. Young, Minister of Social Welfare 23/11/83, Visiting Committee F5000005659655.

<sup>2611</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report June 1984, Miramar Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 5.

<sup>2612</sup> J. Lambie, District Director to Director-General 12/7/84, Miramar Visiting Committee F5000005659655. See also response from the Principal to the District Director 6/7/84, Miramar Visiting Committee F5000005659655.

<sup>2613</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report June 1984, Miramar Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 5. The Report noted that "abscondment" was the official term used by the Department for "an unauthorised absence from a Home and when such absence is of more than two hours duration".

<sup>2614</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report June 1984, Miramar Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 5.

used "sparingly".<sup>2615</sup> In 1985 the Committee were advised that the matter was being discussed with Principals,<sup>2616</sup> although it is unclear if any changes were made as a result.

In 1986, senior staff noted that when girls absconded it was standard procedure to notify Wellington Police who distributed the information to all districts.<sup>2617</sup>

## Secure care

According to an undated document outlining the role and functions of the Girls' Home, one function was to "provide for the secure custody for young people and children in exceptional circumstances, where such custody is recommended by a court, or is necessary for the safe custody, control and well-being of the child or young person".<sup>2618</sup>

In 1973, the Principal stated it was likely new admissions would spend the first few days in security, and the length of stay would depend on the girls' behaviour and progress.<sup>2619</sup>

From 1979 to 1983 the number of secure admissions at Miramar decreased from 393 admissions in 1979 to 148 admissions in 1983. The average length of stay in secure remained around 2 days from 1979 to 1982, decreasing to 1.4 days in 1983.<sup>2620</sup>

According to the 1981 Annual Report "approximately 50% of all girls are admitted to the House" possibly implying that the remaining 50% were admitted to secure. It was also noted girls who remained in secure on admission were considered by social workers or Police to be likely to abscond.<sup>2621</sup>

In a 1981 newspaper article, a resident noted that the secure unit was somewhere she could "sleep in peace". According to the article, the Principal disliked "the necessity" of the secure wing and kept its use to a minimum. The reporter noted that the secure rooms were "empty more often than they are occupied".<sup>2622</sup> A similar newspaper article published in 1983 quoted a resident saying "we have a secure block and a time-out room....that's where you go when you just come in, or when you've run away".<sup>2623</sup>

<sup>2615</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report June 1984, Miramar Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 5. For responses to this issue from the District Director and Principal, see J. Lambie, District Director to Director-General 12/7/84, Miramar Visiting Committee F5000005659655. A.J Morrison, Principal to Director, Wellington 6/7/84, Miramar Visiting Committee F5000005659655.

<sup>2616</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report June 1985, Miramar Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p2.

<sup>2617</sup> V Whittaker, Senior Residential Social Worker to Principal and Assistant Principal 20/11/86, Miramar Complaints, S/92 MSD.

<sup>2618</sup> Wellington Girls' Home – Role and Functions, undated, author unknown, Miramar Profile F5000002368864.

<sup>2619</sup> O.T Ryan, Principal memo to contributing districts 12/7/73, Miramar Profile F5000001594224.

<sup>2620</sup> Analysis of Secure Care Appendix, undated, author unknown, Miramar Secure F5000002186500.

<sup>2621</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 2.

<sup>2622</sup> "A homestead for mind clearing", The Dominion 20/2/81, Miramar Profile F5000003771104.

<sup>2623</sup> "The girls say Miramar home is a good place", Eastern Suburbs News 1/6/83, Miramar Profile F5000002186504.

According to 1982 guidelines "close custody" was used only for cases of "proven need for the purposes of containment, observation and treatment".<sup>2624</sup> In the same year it was reported that 30% of new admissions were put into secure. A decrease in the length of time spent in secure in 1982 was attributed to staffing and the development of individualised programmes.<sup>2625</sup> The Principal later clarified that no resident was "automatically admitted" into secure and there were "very strict procedures" for admitting a girl to secure.<sup>2626</sup>

In 1982 Girls' Home management noted that secure care was not useful in all absconding cases.<sup>2627</sup> Instead a "contractual system" was used to obtain the resident's cooperation on their admission to the Home.<sup>2628</sup> In response to enquiries from Head Office,<sup>2629</sup> the verbal contract was explained as residents giving assurance they would "stay and be good".<sup>2630</sup> This was intended to encourage residents to take responsibility for their actions.<sup>2631</sup> If residents refused to agree to this system, it was considered by the staff that they had chosen to "lock themselves up" and they were placed in secure.<sup>2632</sup>

In 1983 the Visiting Committee noted the "temptation" for staff to place the resident – especially if they arrived in the evening – in secure at least until the following morning to "play safe", especially if little background information had been provided by Police.<sup>2633</sup> Visiting Committee reports noted that they checked the secure unit at Miramar regularly.<sup>2634</sup> In 1984, the Committee's "close observation" of secure indicated that it was "used sparingly" to isolate girls for up to 3 days who were "in clear need of isolation".<sup>2635</sup>

In their March 1983 report, the Visiting Committee made reference to the Johnson Report that stated usage of the secure unit should be "absolutely minimal". While the Committee saw no problem with holding remandees in secure, they questioned the appropriateness of placing Wards of State in secure, as they were considered to be in a similar position to girls in a foster home, or in their own home.<sup>2636</sup> The Committee observed that while use of secure was exercised with "great prudence" they suggested firm guidelines be set around the use of secure.<sup>2637</sup> These guidelines were subsequently developed by Miramar management in April 1983.<sup>2638</sup> Similar documents outlining policies around the use of secure were published in 1983<sup>2639</sup> and 1984.<sup>2640</sup> The later internal document set out rules around admission procedures, length of stay, smoking, schooling, visitors, recreation, work etc in the secure unit.<sup>2641</sup>

<sup>2624</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 4.

<sup>2625</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 8.

<sup>2626</sup> A.J Morrison, Principal to Director and J.A Blair, Senior Institutions Officer, Wellington 7/12/83 Miramar Reports, F5000001615646.

<sup>2627</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 8.

<sup>2628</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 8.

<sup>2629</sup> J.A Blair, for the Director General to Director, Wellington 5/08/83 Miramar Reports, F5000001615646.

<sup>2630</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 8.

<sup>2631</sup> A.J Morrison, Principal to Director and J.A Blair, Senior Institutions Officer, Wellington 7/12/83 Miramar Reports, F5000001615646.

<sup>2632</sup> A.J Morrison, Principal to Director and J.A Blair, Senior Institutions Officer, Wellington 7/12/83 Miramar Reports, F5000001615646.

<sup>2633</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report to March 1983, Dept of Education, Miramar Reports, p 5.

<sup>2634</sup> Department summary of Visiting Committee Annual Reports 1986, Miramar Profile, F50000006661405.

<sup>2635</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report June 1984, Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 5.

<sup>2636</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report to March 1983, Dept of Education, Miramar Reports, p 7.

<sup>2637</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report to March 1983, Dept of Education, Miramar Reports, p 8.

<sup>2638</sup> A.J Morrison, Principal 27/4/83, Miramar Secure F5000002186504.

<sup>2639</sup> Miramar Prospectus 1983 Section C Objective 4, author unknown, Miramar Reports F5000002186504.

<sup>2640</sup> Miramar Girls' Home Secure Care, author unknown, 16/1/84, Miramar Reports F5000002186500.

<sup>2641</sup> Miramar Girls' Home Secure Care, author unknown, 16/1/84, Miramar Reports F5000002186500.

According to a 1983 prospectus Miramar deplored "the use of confinement as a remedy for behaviour modification".<sup>2642</sup> However, a visiting social welfare cadet commented that while the secure unit was "little used", it was sometimes used as a form of punishment for securing a girl who had absconded. According to the visitor, the length of time in secure was stipulated by the senior on duty, and reviewed every 24 hours, and a work programme was used in conjunction with secure care. The visitor also remarked that the public had a negative and misinformed perception of the secure unit, which had led to misunderstanding as "proven" by newspaper reports in 1982.<sup>2643</sup>

In 1984 surveillance "blind spots" around the secure unit were identified. Although 2 female night staff supervised the residential sleeping area and the security wing, it was considered unsafe for staff to check outside due to the isolated nature of the grounds. A security upgrade was recommended to "further deter break-ins" (no details of any incidences given).<sup>2644</sup> This was approved in May 1984.<sup>2645</sup> It was also noted that Police were frequently in the area, and were notified in the event of prowlers, unwelcome guests and any suspicious vehicles.<sup>2646</sup>

In 1985, the Visiting Committee remarked that the secure unit had received "consistent use" in previous months, although the Committee clarified that this did not mean residents were "confined in the secure unit on a solitary basis for any period of time". They commented that it was not always clear whether girls had been admitted to the secure unit as punishment, or whether this had been done as a protective measure for the girls involved, other residents or staff.<sup>2647</sup>

In 1985 the Visiting Committee expressed concern regarding the legal requirement to hold remandees in secure care, as it was noted that remanding girls in secure had already strained staffing resources.<sup>2648</sup> The Wellington Director agreed that the withdrawal of discretion from Principals to hold young people in secure facilities was an issue.<sup>2649</sup> The Committee later raised the matter with the Minister and noted that a Miramar resident charged with property offences had been held in secure for 2-3 weeks because of "Judge's notation", while other residents appearing on serious violence charges were held in the open house.<sup>2650</sup>

In February 1986, a resident assaulted a staff member after being held in secure for 16 days. The incident was reported as an attempt by the resident to leave the secure unit.<sup>2651</sup>

<sup>2642</sup> Miramar Prospectus 1983 Section C Objective 3, author unknown, Miramar Reports F5000002186504.

<sup>2643</sup> Report by D.H Greenwood, Social Welfare Cadet to Principal 17/2/83, Miramar Reports F5000002186504, p 5.

<sup>2644</sup> D.J Manley, Assistant Principal and A.J Morrison, Principal to Director, Wellington 14/5/84 Miramar Profile F5000002186500.

<sup>2645</sup> Memo M.P Doolan, for the Director-General to the Director, Wellington 29/5/84, Miramar Profile F5000002186500. For more information about the security issue see Physical Description section.

<sup>2646</sup> D.J Manley, Assistant Principal and A.J Morrison, Principal to Director, Wellington 14/5/84 Miramar Profile F5000002186500.

<sup>2647</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report 1985, Miramar Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 5.

<sup>2648</sup> Visiting Committee Report to Minister 31/10/85, Miramar Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 4. For more information on staffing issues over this period see Staffing section.

<sup>2649</sup> J. Lambie, Director Wellington, to M. Doolan, Head Office 3/10/85, Miramar Visiting Committee F5000005659655.

<sup>2650</sup> Visiting Committee Report to Minister 31/10/85, Miramar Visiting Committee, F5000005659655, p 3.

<sup>2651</sup> J. O'Kane, Relieving ARSW to D.J Manley, Acting Principal, 13/2/86, Miramar Girls' Home Incidents F5000002186501.

## Discipline

According to a Girls' Home prospectus, the general approach to discipline involved positive reinforcement, counselling and discipline appropriate to the situation. Specific objectives included not degrading, humiliating or reprimanding residents in front of their peers, encouraging residents to share their problems with staff and using praise.<sup>2652</sup>

Reference was made to a "time out" room in the home in a 1981 newspaper article, in which it was offered as means for preventing absconding.<sup>2653</sup> Girls were offered the time out room, which had no lock, as a place to "stop and think".<sup>2654</sup> In 1982, the use of time out was identified as the preferred method of dealing with distress or behaviour difficulties, rather than admission to secure,<sup>2655</sup> although the Principal later noted that time out was not a substitute for secure.<sup>2656</sup> Suggested time out activities included using the "time out room", going for a walk, having a cup of tea, jumping on the trampoline etc.<sup>2657</sup>

In a 1983 report, a visiting social welfare cadet remarked that discipline was "not always obvious but always present"<sup>2658</sup> and generally took the form of talking to the girl and establishing a reason for her behaviour, sometimes followed by extra work as punishment.<sup>2659</sup>

In November 1986 a complaint made by a resident's parents resulted in a Ministerial inquiry.<sup>2660</sup> A number of issues were raised in correspondence from the resident's parents (unsighted) relating to discipline policies in operation at the Girls' Home. In response, a senior staff member stated that swearing and using informal names for staff were not acceptable at Miramar, and bullying or physical abuse by residents or staff was not condoned. It was also noted that verbal arguments occurred at times, but were monitored by staff to prevent unnecessary physical confrontation, although sometimes it was "in the girl's best interest for very little staff intervention" and that "experienced staff know when it is appropriate to intervene".<sup>2661</sup> In response to the criticism regarding a lack of discipline levelled at the Girls' Home, the Principal agreed that some staff were "overly permissive" and presented as "poor role models".<sup>2662</sup>

<sup>2652</sup> Miramar Prospectus 1983 Section C Objective 3, author unknown, Miramar Reports F5000002186504.

<sup>2653</sup> "A homestead for mind clearing", The Dominion 20/2/81, Miramar Profile F5000003771104.

<sup>2654</sup> "A homestead for mind clearing", The Dominion 20/2/81, Miramar Profile F5000003771104.

<sup>2655</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 9.

<sup>2656</sup> A.J Morrison, Principal to Director and J.A Blair, Senior Institutions Officer, Wellington 7/12/83 Miramar Reports, F5000001615646.

<sup>2657</sup> A.J Morrison, Principal to Director and J.A Blair, Senior Institutions Officer, Wellington 7/12/83 Miramar Reports, F5000001615646.

<sup>2658</sup> Report by D.H Greenwood, Social Welfare Cadet to Principal, Miramar 17/2/83, Miramar Reports F5000002186504, p 2.

<sup>2659</sup> Report by D.H Greenwood, Social Welfare Cadet to Principal, Miramar 17/2/83, Miramar Reports F5000002186504, p 3.

<sup>2660</sup> V Whittaker, Senior Residential Social Worker to Principal and Assistant Principal 20/11/86, Miramar Complaints S/92 MSD.

<sup>2661</sup> V Whittaker, Senior Residential Social Worker to Principal and Assistant Principal 20/11/86, Miramar Complaints S/92 MSD.

<sup>2662</sup> A Whitmore, Principal to Regional Director, Lower Hutt 11/12/86, Miramar Complaints S/92 MSD.



## Physical Punishment

No specific reference was made to physical punishment, except for the use of extra work as punishment (see Miramar Discipline section, above).

## Drugs, alcohol and tattoos

In a 1981 newspaper article the Principal stated drug and alcohol problems at Miramar were "not as bad as you'd expect" although occasionally there were incidences of "petrol sniffing or pills" by a minority of older girls.<sup>2663</sup>

In 1984 the Visiting Committee was concerned that that some girls who had absconded had returned "uncontrollably" under the influence of drugs and/or glue, and the behaviour of some girls towards staff was seen to be "unacceptable".<sup>2664</sup>

In June 1984, the Principal reported that there were no recorded incidents of glue sniffing/solvent abuse at the home.<sup>2665</sup> He observed that 60% of admissions for April 1984 were known to have been involved in glue sniffing/solvent abuse, and difficulties occasionally arose when residents returned after weekend leave, and attempted to bring sniffing materials into the Home. According to the Principal, staff vigilance and custody of likely materials minimized sniffing opportunities, and staff training programmes included sessions on the topic of glue sniffing/solvent abuse.<sup>2666</sup>

## Smoking

According to guidelines set out in the 1983 prospectus, smoking was allowed in clearly defined areas and at designated times for girls over 15.<sup>2667</sup> The enforcement of this rule was observed by a social welfare cadet the same year.<sup>2668</sup>

An undated information booklet given to residents on admission stated girls over 15 "may be allowed to smoke". Those under 15 were not allowed to smoke and it was considered to be "a very serious rule".<sup>2669</sup>

<sup>2663</sup> "A homestead for mind clearing", The Dominion 20/2/81, Miramar Profile F5000003771104.

<sup>2664</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report June 1984, Miramar Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 5. For Principal's response see A.J Morrison, Principal to Director, Wellington 6/7/84, Miramar Visiting Committee F5000005659655.

<sup>2665</sup> A. Morrison, Principal to Director, Wellington 21/6/84, Miramar Drugs/Smoking F5000002186500.

<sup>2666</sup> IA. Morrison, Principal to Director, Wellington 21/6/84, Miramar Drugs/Smoking F5000002186500.

<sup>2667</sup> Miramar Prospectus 1983 Section B Objective 3, author unknown, Miramar Reports F5000002186504.

<sup>2668</sup> Report by D.H Greenwood, Social Welfare Cadet to Principal, Miramar 17/2/83, Miramar Reports F5000002186504, p 3.

<sup>2669</sup> Information booklet for new admissions, date and author unknown, Miramar Profile F5000001594224.

In a 1986 memorandum, it was stated that under normal circumstances, staff must request written approval by parents or guardians for any child under the age of 15 years to smoke at Miramar. Smoking was regarded as a privilege, and could be revoked by senior staff as punishment if residents committed misdemeanours.<sup>2670</sup> Girls could purchase cigarettes using their weekly pocket money.<sup>2671</sup>

## Contact with field social workers

In 1977 a memorandum was sent to Districts advising on the documentation that needed to be supplied to the Girls' Home when a girl was admitted. This included medical, psychological and psychiatric reports, Court reports, school reports and incident reports.<sup>2672</sup>

In 1981, the Principal stated that residential social workers combined with field social workers in a "team approach" to residents' casework, and it was noted social workers visited the girls as regularly as possible.<sup>2673</sup> The 1981 Annual Report also commented that the residence received their first visit from Head Office, which resulted in a confidential report covering their social work activities.<sup>2674</sup>

In 1982 the Wellington District office relinquished its liaison role, and a system of direct liaison was implemented between contributing districts and the Girls' Home.<sup>2675</sup> In 1983 a senior social worker commended the new system for reducing delays in admissions.<sup>2676</sup>

In 1983 the Principal expressed concern regarding the lack of involvement from field social workers and the difficulty of identifying the person with the "primary responsibility for casework".<sup>2677</sup> It was noted that residential social workers were undertaking much of the casework<sup>2678</sup> and needed to remind field social workers about a number of administrative responsibilities such as arranging family conferences.<sup>2679</sup> The Principal remarked that girls who were readmitted often commented on the lack of contact with their social worker.<sup>2680</sup> A response from the

<sup>2670</sup> V Whittaker, Senior Residential Social Worker to Principal and Assistant Principal 20/11/86, Miramar Complaints, S/92 MSD. See also A Whitmore, Principal to Regional Director, Lower Hutt 11/12/86, Miramar Complaints S/92 MSD.

<sup>2671</sup> V Whittaker, Senior Residential Social Worker to Principal and Assistant Principal 20/11/86, Miramar Complaints, S/92 MSD.

<sup>2672</sup> R.G Letham, Senior Social Worker to Contributing Districts 23/8/77, Miramar Admissions F5000001594224.

<sup>2673</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2674</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2675</sup> Circular memo from J. Lambie, Director, Wellington to the Director, Hastings 25/8/82, Miramar Profile F5000001594224.

<sup>2676</sup> P. Mauga, Senior Social Worker to Director, Porirua 21/2/83, Miramar Admissions F5000003771104.

<sup>2677</sup> A.J Morrison, Principal to Director, Wellington 8/7/83, Miramar Contact with Field Social Workers F5000002186504.

<sup>2678</sup> A.J Morrison, Principal to Director, Wellington 8/7/83, Miramar Contact with Field Social Workers F5000002186504.

<sup>2679</sup> Annual Report 1983 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2680</sup> A.J Morrison, Principal to Director, Wellington 8/7/83, Miramar Contact with Field Social Workers F5000002186504.

Head Office noted that the difficulties had been aired with the social workers, and it was anticipated the service would be improved.<sup>2681</sup>

In 1984 the Visiting Committee remarked that delays in transferring residents could in part result from time pressures on field social workers, and noted they had many comments from girls that they had "simply not seen their field social workers for a long long time".<sup>2682</sup> Districts were also criticised for not communicating important details about residents, for example results of court hearings or changes in status.<sup>2683</sup>

In 1984 field social workers expressed concern that Miramar was at times unable to admit young people needing short-term institutional accommodation. It was noted that residential social workers wished to avoid the institution being used as a "stop gap measure", which at times created difficulties for field staff.<sup>2684</sup>

In March 1986, a Social Worker complained about the lack of specialist residential care resources in the Wellington area, the standard of care for young persons, and the liaison between institutions and field social workers. The complaint involved a particular case in which the social worker alleged staff were "working against" her and her client, and problems in communication between the field social worker and residential staff were highlighted.<sup>2685</sup>

A 1986 memo from a senior staff member noted that if any resident was to take overnight leave away from the institution, it was "normal policy" to inform the field social worker.<sup>2686</sup>

## Contact with community

There appeared to be a reasonable amount of contact with the community at Miramar, especially in the area of recreational and vocational activities. In 1981 the Principal remarked that community involvement was expanding in activities such as Marae visits, fund-raising and community work.<sup>2687</sup> In 1982 it was noted that a large number of sports, social events and cultural trips continued to involve the community.<sup>2688</sup> External trainees, cadets, nurses, police and teachers also visited the Home for training purposes.<sup>2689</sup>

The Girls' Home used recreation facilities in the community, and in 1983 the Principal requested funding for a new gymnasium complex, noting that the

<sup>2681</sup> J.A. Blair for the Director-General to Director Wellington 12/9/84. Miramar Reports F5000002186500.

<sup>2682</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report June 1984, Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 6.

<sup>2683</sup> Annual Report 1985 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2684</sup> J.R. Cody, Social Work Advisor to Director, Wanganui and Wellington Principals, circa 18/5/84, Miramar Admissions F5000002186500.

<sup>2685</sup> P. Crowley, Social Worker to Director, Porirua 12/3/86, Miramar Contact with Field Social Workers F5000003771099. For more details see Staffing – staff to resident incidents, above.

<sup>2686</sup> V. Whittaker, Senior Residential Social Worker to Principal and Assistant Principal 20/11/86, Miramar Complaints, S/92 MSD.

<sup>2687</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2688</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 9.

<sup>2689</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 6.

community were keen to assist in funding a gymnasium.<sup>2690</sup> This request was later denied.<sup>2691</sup>

According to a 1983 prospectus regular socialising was provided in the form of discos within the residence and community.<sup>2692</sup> In 1985 several discos were held and boys from Kohitere took part.<sup>2693</sup> A senior staff member remarked in 1986 that it was "normal practise" to invite Epuni Boys Home to attend the discos held at Miramar, which was considered to be "in accordance with Social Welfare policy".<sup>2694</sup>

In 1983 a fashion parade was held at the home with clothes provided by community retail outlets, with residents as models.<sup>2695</sup> In the same year, an end-of-year concert was held for the first time in which girls performed to staff, residents, teachers and community members.<sup>2696</sup> This was repeated successfully in 1984.<sup>2697</sup>

In 1983 Aurora School commented that contact with mainstream schools improved in 1983, and monthly meetings with Epuni Boy's Home School were set up to provide an exchange of ideas and information.<sup>2698</sup> These meetings continued, although in a more "erratic and ill-planned" way in 1984.<sup>2699</sup>

In 1985 the Minister visited the Girls' Home, and it was noted that the programme of the visit was arranged and carried out by the girls with minimum staff intervention. The Minister also invited the girls to visit her at the Beehive.<sup>2700</sup>

In August 1987 staff invited community organisations to a hui at the Girls' Home to request their assistance in the development of community orientated, multicultural programmes at Miramar.<sup>2701</sup>

## Media/publicity

In September 1982 a Human Rights Commission Report was released, sparking widespread debate regarding social welfare institutions.<sup>2702</sup> Despite the "the media criticism" the Principal noted that the Dominion and Evening Post newspapers wrote about the Girls' Home in a positive manner. The Visiting committee also assisted the Home in a radio broadcast during the publicity surround the Human Rights Report.<sup>2703</sup>

In 1983 the Eastern Suburbs News featured an article on the residence.<sup>2704</sup> It was noted in the article that the Principal had invited those involved in community affairs

<sup>2690</sup> A.J Morrison, Principal to Director, Wellington 3/5/83, Miramar Profile F5000002186504.

<sup>2691</sup> Memo from G.A Grainger for the Director-General to the Director, Wellington 16/9/83, Miramar Profile F5000002186504.

<sup>2692</sup> Miramar Prospectus 1983 Section B Objective 4, author unknown, Miramar Reports F5000002186504.

<sup>2693</sup> Annual Report 1985 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2694</sup> V Whittaker, Senior Residential Social Worker to Principal and Assistant Principal 20/11/86, Miramar Complaints, S/92 MSD.

<sup>2695</sup> Miramar Prospectus 1983 Section D Objective 3, author unknown, Miramar Reports F5000002186504.

<sup>2696</sup> Annual Report 1983 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2697</sup> Annual Report 1984 Miramar Reports F5000002186503, p 2.

<sup>2698</sup> Annual Report 1983 Aurora School Report, Miramar Reports F5000001615646, Annexure.

<sup>2699</sup> Annual Report 1984 Aurora School Report, Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 5.

<sup>2700</sup> Annual Report 1985 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2701</sup> Memorandum from D Waaka, for the Principal 26/8/87, Miramar Education F5000003771098.

<sup>2702</sup> This report led to the Johnson Report and the passing of the Children and Young Person's Amendment Act 1982. Visiting Committee Report to Minister of Social Welfare 31/3/1983, Miramar Reports, Department of Education file.

<sup>2703</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 10.

<sup>2704</sup> Annual Report 1983 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 4.

to hold their liaison meeting at the Girls' Home, and were invited to look around the residence after the meeting.<sup>2705</sup> The same year the Evening Post published residents' poems as well as an article on the school.<sup>2706</sup>

## Visiting committees

An undated document summarising the guidelines for Visiting Committee members stated that the Committee was required to visit the residence at least once every three months.<sup>2707</sup>

In 1981 a new Visiting Committee was appointed.<sup>2708</sup> The Principal commended the Committee in 1982 for their support, and remarked that the Committee met regularly as a group, attended a monthly formal meeting with the Principal, and informally visit the Girls' Home as a group or individually.<sup>2709</sup> It was noted that the Girls' Home was "one institution where the Visiting Committee are involved in the Home and their input is very beneficial".<sup>2710</sup>

In 1983 the Visiting Committee continued to meet regularly and visit the Home as a group and as well as numerous individual visits. The Chairman of the Committee also met with the Principal on several occasions. Information recorded by the Visiting Committee on their visits included the number of girls held in secure and their length of stay, the number of abscondments and the apparent reason for them and any issues raised by the Principal. At this time, the Committee commented that they had spent time "fixing boundaries" to avoid becoming too familiar with staff, so as to not compromise the interest of the residents.<sup>2711</sup>

In 1983 the Visiting Committee asserted that the Girls' Home "bore little resemblance to the criticisms" made in the 1982 Human Rights Commission Report and issued a statement praising the Principal and staff. In a meeting convened with staff the Committee made it clear they had no criticism of the Home, and it was thought this contributed "in some way to maintaining morale".<sup>2712</sup> Despite this, the Committee noted general criticism in the 1982 Report, and subsequently spoke to residents about medical procedures, sanitary conditions, admission procedures, secure unit usage, discipline and race and culture.<sup>2713</sup>

In 1983 the Principal commented that matters the Visiting Committee saw as important were "taken up with the appropriate authority". He made special mention of the Committee's efforts to emphasise the need for all residents to receive education whilst in the Home.<sup>2714</sup> In 1984 the Committee reported positively on their contact with management at Miramar, and noted at times they were involved in

<sup>2705</sup> "The girls say Miramar home is a good place", Eastern Suburbs News 1/6/83, Miramar Profile F5000002186504.

<sup>2706</sup> Reported in the Annual Report 1983 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 4. Actual article and published poems not included in documentation.

<sup>2707</sup> Visiting Committee Guidelines for Members, undated, author unknown, Miramar Girls' Home Visiting Committee F5000005659655.

<sup>2708</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2709</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 7.

<sup>2710</sup> See handwritten note, author unknown, Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 7.

<sup>2711</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report to March 1983, Dept of Education file, Miramar Reports, p 2-3.

<sup>2712</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report to March 1983, Dept of Education file, Miramar Reports, p 4.

<sup>2713</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report to March 1983, Dept of Education file, Miramar Reports, p 5.

<sup>2714</sup> Annual Report 1983 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 2.

discussions regarding admissions and secure care. The report added that "most times" agreement was reached.<sup>2715</sup>

In 1983 the Visiting Committee had a policy that each new admission would be contacted by a Committee member<sup>2716</sup> and were given a weekly list of new residents by the Home. Given the short-term nature of the Home, the Committee attempted to make contact with as many residents as possible, although the time commitments of Committee members made this difficult.<sup>2717</sup> In 1984 it was noted that the roster served more as a weekly guide to movements at the Home (including abscondings) and acted as a way of keeping up weekly contact without having to visit.<sup>2718</sup>

The Committee felt there should be a document setting out the rights of residents and providing information on the role of the Visiting Committee.<sup>2719</sup> While it was noted that a large information card was present in the foyer of the Home, few residents (except for those contacted by Committee members) knew about the Committee.<sup>2720</sup> This was an ongoing issue and despite repeatedly requesting the Department to produce such a handout<sup>2721</sup>, in 1985 material had still not been produced.<sup>2722</sup>

In 1984 the Visiting Committee continued to visit the Home regularly, although visits by individual Committee members were seen to be more effective than group visits.<sup>2723</sup> The Committee later asserted that they concentrated on the idea of "overall care" rather than "looking at physical day to day conditions in the institution" which could only be undertaken in "a relatively superficial fashion".<sup>2724</sup> During this time the Visiting Committee was reduced to two people<sup>2725</sup> although according to the Principal this did not curtail the involvement of the remaining two members.<sup>2726</sup>

In 1985 the Visiting Committee were reappointed until the "new arrangements" were brought into force.<sup>2727</sup> The Principal remarked that the Committee were "most helpful".<sup>2728</sup> In 1985 the Committee again met regularly and made regular formal and individual visits to the Home.<sup>2729</sup>

<sup>2715</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report June 1984, Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 3-4.

<sup>2716</sup> V. Young, Minister of Social Welfare to P.F Boshier, Chairman of the Visiting Committee 20/10/83, Miramar Girls' Home Visiting Committee, F5000005659655.

<sup>2717</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report June 1984, Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 4. See also letter from P.F Boshier, Chairman of the Visiting Committee, to V. Young, Minister of Social Welfare 23/11/83, Miramar Girls' Home Visiting Committee F5000005659655.

<sup>2718</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report June 1984, Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 4.

<sup>2719</sup> V. Young, Minister of Social Welfare to P.F Boshier, Chairman of the Visiting Committee 20/10/83, Miramar Girls' Home Visiting Committee, F5000005659655.

<sup>2720</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report June 1984, Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 7.

<sup>2721</sup> P.F Boshier to the Principal, Miramar Girls' Home 27/11/85, Miramar Girls' Home Visiting Committee F5000005659655.

<sup>2722</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report June 1985, Visiting Committee F5000005659655.

<sup>2723</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report June 1984, Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 1.

<sup>2724</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report 1985, Visiting Committee F5000005659655, p 7.

<sup>2725</sup> Annual Report 1984 Miramar Reports F5000002186503, p 2. See also Visiting Committee Annual Report June 1985, Miramar Girls' Home Visiting Committee, F5000005659655.

<sup>2726</sup> Annual Report 1984 Miramar Reports F5000002186503, p 2.

<sup>2727</sup> Annual Report 1985 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3. See also D. Hutchinson, for Director-General to Director, Wellington 19/12/85 Miramar Girls' Home Visiting Committee, F5000005659655.

<sup>2728</sup> Annual Report 1985 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2729</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report June 1985, Miramar Girls' Home Visiting Committee, F5000005659655.

In 1986 it was reported that the Visiting Committee's activities included checking the secure unit regularly. It appears the role of the Committee at this time had shifted to responding to difficulties rather than conducting formalised visits.<sup>2730</sup>

No report was received from the Committee in 1987.<sup>2731</sup>

## Contact with families

According to a 1983 prospectus, an objective of staff at Miramar was to "maintain and improve a girl's contact with her family and significant others".<sup>2732</sup> The prospectus stated that girls were to be allowed to make and receive telephone calls from family, and by prearranged discussions with the social worker in the case of friends/relatives.<sup>2733</sup>

A 1973 memorandum advised that visits to Miramar were restricted to immediate family, and where possible, limited to an hour and a half on Sunday nights, although alternative arrangements could be made. It was noted that families from outlying districts could visit "when it suits" as long as the Girls' Home was forewarned, and families would "probably be allowed to take their daughter out for the day". Only under exceptional circumstances would non-family members be allowed to visit.<sup>2734</sup> According to the 1981 Annual Report, visitors were "as frequent as can be arranged".<sup>2735</sup> A 1983 prospectus stated that visits from parents, family and approved relatives or friends were welcome, although presents of money or cigarettes were not acceptable.<sup>2736</sup> A booklet given to new admissions informed them that it was usual for the Police or the DSW to notify their parents or guardians that they had arrived at the Home.<sup>2737</sup>

Girls from outlying districts could return home for a visit only after spending 6-8 weeks at Miramar. Visits home were dependent on the girl's behaviour, and their ability to travel alone. It was noted that the girls should have the chance to see their social worker while visiting their home.<sup>2738</sup>

Information given to girls on arrival at the Home encouraged residents to write letters to their parents and residents were able to receive letters from their parents/guardians or friends.<sup>2739</sup> A 1983 prospectus stipulated that mail was to be opened by the client themselves, or under supervision if staff suspected contraband. Mail was to be screened if staff had been advised that the person sending mail could have detrimental effect on the resident.<sup>2740</sup>

In 1986 a resident's parents complained about the care of their daughter, and the lack of information they received from her caseworker at Miramar.<sup>2741</sup> In a response

<sup>2730</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Reports 1986, Miramar Profile, F5000006661405.

<sup>2731</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Reports 1987, Miramar Profile, F5000006661404.

<sup>2732</sup> Miramar Prospectus 1983, Section A, author unknown, Miramar Reports F5000002186504.

<sup>2733</sup> Miramar Prospectus 1983, Section B Objective 3, author unknown, Miramar Reports F5000002186504.

<sup>2734</sup> O.T Ryan, Principal memo to contributing districts 12/7/73, Miramar Profile F5000001594224.

<sup>2735</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2736</sup> Miramar Prospectus 1983, Section B Objective 3, author unknown, Miramar Reports F5000002186504.

<sup>2737</sup> Information booklet for new admissions, date and author unknown, Miramar Profile F5000001594224.

<sup>2738</sup> O.T Ryan, Principal memo to contributing districts 12/7/73, Miramar Profile F5000001594224.

<sup>2739</sup> Information booklet for new admissions, date and author unknown, Miramar Profile F5000001594224.

<sup>2740</sup> Miramar Prospectus 1983, Section B Objective 3, author unknown, Miramar Reports F5000002186504.

<sup>2741</sup> A Whitmore, Principal to Regional Director, Lower Hutt 11/12/86, Miramar Complaints S/92 MSD.

to the complaint, senior staff noted that it was Miramar policy for residential social workers to approach the parent or guardian of new admissions to see if contact could be maintained.<sup>2742</sup> It was also noted that while it was not policy to take a girl to her home or home of relations while on an outing, it may happen if the girl is near her home and requests to staff to visit.<sup>2743</sup>

### Family conferences

According to the 1981 Annual Report family conferences had become a feature at the Girls' Home.<sup>2744</sup> In 1982 family conferences were noted to have enhanced casework and provided an opportunity to speak with all parties concerned. When convenient, residential social workers were involved in the conferences<sup>2745</sup> and at times teachers also contributed.<sup>2746</sup>

In 1983 the Principal commented on the difficulty of getting social workers to arrange family conferences, and proposed that a specific day be set aside for family conferences, in order to assist staff and residential social workers who sometimes had to attend conferences in their own time. It was also noted that in some cases, the caseworker and resident travelled to their home district to attend a family conference.<sup>2747</sup>

A 1988 memorandum set out casework policies at the Girls' Home, and mentioned that staff at Miramar believed most of the residents were "acting out their family's distress". According to this memo, residential staff therefore preferred to work with the resident's whole family, which also necessitated a close liaison with the district social workers.<sup>2748</sup>

## Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements

An updated information booklet given to girls on their arrival explained the possible places they may be placed on discharge, such as a foster home, family home, boarding, a flat, Weymouth, Kingslea, a group home, or a borstal.<sup>2749</sup> According to 1979 statistics, placements for residents ranged from long-term care to boarding schools to reception centres or returning home.<sup>2750</sup>

According to a 1983 prospectus, the objective for discharge was to "steer our clients towards security, independence and maturity" by a team work approach involving family, the social worker, the school, professional aid and community resources.<sup>2751</sup> In 1981 pre-placement programmes included "programming girls" on home leave,

<sup>2742</sup> V Whittaker, Senior Residential Social Worker to Principal and Assistant Principal 20/11/86, Miramar Complaints S/92 MSD.

<sup>2743</sup> V Whittaker, Senior Residential Social Worker to Principal and Assistant Principal 20/11/86, Miramar Complaints S/92 MSD.

<sup>2744</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2745</sup> Annual Report 1982 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 7.

<sup>2746</sup> Annual Report 1983 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 2.

<sup>2747</sup> Annual Report 1983 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2748</sup> L Hartley, Senior Social Worker to District Office social work staff 5/2/88. Miramar Admissions F5000001594224.

<sup>2749</sup> Information booklet for new admissions, date and author unknown, Miramar Profile F5000001594224.

<sup>2750</sup> Miramar Girls' Home admission statistics, author unknown, Feb 1979, Miramar Admissions F5000003771104

<sup>2751</sup> Miramar Prospectus 1983 Section C Objective 2, author unknown, Miramar Reports F5000002186504.



outings with relations or friends, and preparing girls for placement.<sup>2752</sup> Extended supervision – often in the form of extended work programmes – were offered to girls who had left the institution before passing them over completely to the field social worker.<sup>2753</sup>

A document outlining the admission, liaison and discharge procedures (circa 1980's) stated that discharges were to be arranged between the Principal or Assistant Principal and the liaison person in the contributing district.<sup>2754</sup>

After a 1983 meeting between Head Office, District staff and Girls' Home staff to discuss delays in transfers and areas of responsibility after discharge, it was decided that field social workers would continue to take responsibility for the girl upon discharge, although residential social workers could provide assistance.<sup>2755</sup> However, in April 1983 the role of residential social workers was again questioned after a particular case in which an ex-resident continued to receive support from a RSW but was not assigned a district case worker. Concern was expressed over the lack of documentation and planning in this case.<sup>2756</sup> While it was noted that ongoing contact with RSW's could be beneficial and Girls' Home staff were commended for their level of commitment, it was stated the responsibility for non-residents lay with the district social worker.<sup>2757</sup>

The issue was again raised by the Visiting Committee in October 1983, who commented that delays in transferring girls to other institutions added to management problems at Miramar.<sup>2758</sup> It appears this issue remained unresolved.<sup>2759</sup>

<sup>2752</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2753</sup> Annual Report 1981 Miramar Reports F5000001615646, p 3.

<sup>2754</sup> Miramar Girls' Home Admission, Liaison and Discharge Procedures, undated, author unknown, Miramar Admissions F5000003771104.

<sup>2755</sup> Meeting Minutes of 21/3/83, M.C Ashdown, Secretary, Miramar Contact F5000002186504.

<sup>2756</sup> P.B Dickens, Assistant Director Social Work to Director, Wellington 19/4/83, Miramar Contact F5000002186504.

<sup>2757</sup> P.B Dickens, Assistant Director Social Work to Director, Wellington 19/4/83, Miramar Contact F5000002186504.

<sup>2758</sup> V. Young, Minister of Social Welfare to P.F Boshier, Chairman of the Visiting Committee 20/10/83, Miramar Girls' Home Visiting Committee, F5000005659655.

<sup>2759</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Report June 1985, Visiting Committee F5000005659655.

